



G. C.

~~13-4~~ Prim. Theol Sem.

Green Library

COLLECTION OF PURITAN AND  
ENGLISH THEOLOGICAL LITERATURE



LIBRARY OF THE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY  
PRINCETON, NEW JERSEY

500  
9152

The new book is  
active and productive  
as the merit of the work  
and the operation of  
Spirits of the  
a active cause.





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2013

<http://archive.org/details/justif00owen>



THE  
DOCTRINE  
OF  
Justification by Faith

Through the  
IMPUTATION  
OF THE  
Righteousness of Christ,  
EXPLAINED, CONFIRMED, & VINDICATED.

---

By JOHN OWEN, D. D.

---

*Search the Scriptures, Joh. 5. 39.*

---

LONDON,

Printed for R. Boulter, at the *Turks-head* over against the  
*Royal-Exchange* in *Corn-hill*, 1677.

Handwritten text at the top of the page, possibly a title or header.

Handwritten text in the upper middle section.

Handwritten text in the middle section.

Handwritten text in the lower middle section.

Handwritten text in the lower section.

Handwritten text at the bottom of the page.

TO THE  
R E A D E R.

**I** Shall not need to detain the Reader with an Account of the nature and moment of that Doctrin which is the entire subject of the ensuing Discourse. For although sundry Persons, even among our selves, have various Apprehensions concerning it, yet that the knowledge of the Truth therein is of the highest Importance unto the Souls of men, is on all hands agreed unto. Nor indeed is it possible that any man who knows himself to be a sinner, and obnoxious thereon to the Judgment of God, but he must desire to have some knowledge of it, as that alone whereby the way of delivery from the evil state and condition wherein he finds himself, is revealed. There are I confess, multitudes in the World, who although they cannot avoid some general Convictions of sin, as also of the Consequents of it; yet do fortifie their minds against a practical Admission of such Conclusions, as in a just consideration of things do necessarily and unavoidably ensue thereon. Such Persons wilfully deluding themselves with vain hopes and imaginations, do never once seriously enquire by what way or means they may obtain peace with God and Acceptance before him, which in comparison of the present enjoyment of the pleasures of sin, they value not at all. And it is in vain to recommend the Doctrin of Justification unto them, who neither desire nor endeavour to be justified. But where any Persons are really made sensible of their Apostasie from God, of the evil of their natures and lives, with the dreadful consequences that attend thereon in the wrath of God and eternal punishment due unto sin, they cannot well judge themselves more concerned in any thing, than in the knowledge of that divine way whereby they may be delivered from this condition. And the minds of such Persons stand in no need of Arguments to satisfie them in the Importance of this Doctrin; their own concernment in it is sufficient to that purpose. And I shall assure them, that in the handling of it from first to last, I have

## To the Reader.

had no other design, but only to enquire diligently into the divine Revelation of that way, and those means with the causes of them, whereby the Conscience of a distressed sinner may attain assured peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. I lay more weight on the steady Direction of one Soul in this enquiry, than in disappointing the Objections of twenty wrangling or fiery Disputers. The Question therefore unto this purpose being stated, as the Reader will find in the beginning of our Discourse, although it were necessary to spend some time in the Explication of the Doctrine it self, and the terms wherein it is usually taught, yet the main weight of the whole lies in the Interpretation of Scripture Testimonies, with the Application of them unto the experience of them who do believe, and the state of them who seek after Salvation by Jesus Christ. There are therefore some few things that I would desire the Reader to take notice of, that he may receive benefit by the ensuing Discourse; at least, if it be not his own fault, be freed from prejudices against it, or a vain opposition unto it.

I. Although there are at present various contests about the Doctrine of Justification, and many Books published in the way of controversy about it; yet this Discourse was written with no design to contend with or contradict any of what sort or opinion soever. Some few passages which seem of that tendency, are indeed occasionally inserted. But they are such as every candid Reader will judge to have been necessary. I have ascribed no Opinion unto any particular Person, much less wrested the words of any, reflected on their Persons, censured their Abilities, taken advantages of presumed prejudices against them, represented their Opinions in the deformed Reflections of strained Consequences, fancied intended notions which their words do not express, nor candidly interpreted give any countenance unto, or endeavoured the vain pleasure of seeming success in opposition unto them, which with the like effects of weakness of mind and disorder of affections, are the animating principles of many late controversial Writings. To declare and vindicate the Truth unto the Instruction and Edification of such as love it in sincerity, to extricate  
their

## To the Reader.

their minds from those difficulties in this particular Instance, which some endeavour to cast on all Gospel mysteries, to direct the Consciences of them that enquire after abiding Peace with God, and to establish the minds of them that do believe, are the things I have aimed at. And an Endeavour unto this end, considering all circumstances, that station which God hath been pleased graciously to give me in the Church, hath made necessary unto me.

2. I have written nothing but what I believe to be true, and useful unto the promotion of Gospel Obedience. The Reader may not here expect an extraction of other mens notions, or a collection and improvement of their Arguments, either by artificial Reasonings, or ornament of Style and Language, but a naked enquiry into the nature of the things treated on, as revealed in the Scripture, and as evidencing themselves in their power and efficacy on the minds of them that do believe. It is the practical direction of the Consciences of men in their application unto God by Jesus Christ for deliverance from the Curse due unto the Apostate state, and Peace with him, with the influence of the way thereof into universal Gospel Obedience, that is alone to be designed in the handling of this Doctrine. And therefore unto him that would treat of it in a due manner, it is required that he weigh every thing he asserts in his own mind and experience, and not dare to propose that unto others which he doth not abide by himself, in the most intimate recesses of his mind, under his nearest approaches unto God, in his surprisals with Dangers, in deep Afflictions, in his preparations for death, and most humble Contemplations of the infinite distance between God and him. Other Notions and Disputations about the Doctrine of Justification not seasoned with these ingredients, however condited unto the palate of some by skill and language, are insipid and useles, immediately degenerating into an unprofitable strife of words.

3. I know that the Doctrine here pleaded for, is charged by many with an unfriendly aspect towards the necessity of personal Holiness, Good Works, and all Gospel Obedience in general, yea  
utterly

## To the Reader.

utterly to take it away. So it was at the first clear Revelation of it by the Apostle Paul, as he frequently declares. But it is sufficiently evinced by him to be the chief principle of, and motive unto all that Obedience which is accepted with God through Jesus Christ, as we shall manifest afterwards. However it is acknowledged that the objective Grace of the Gospel in the Doctrine of it, is liable to abuse, where there is nothing of the subjective Grace of it in the Hearts of men; and the ways of its influence into the Life of God, are uncouth unto the Reasonings of carnal minds. So was it charged by the Papists at the first Reformation, and continueth yet so to be. Yet as it gave the first occasion unto the Reformation it self, so was it that whereby the Souls of men being set at liberty from their bondage unto innumerable superstitious fears and observances, utterly inconsistent with true Gospel Obedience, and directed into the ways of Peace with God through Jesus Christ, were made fruitful in real Holiness, and to abound in all those blessed effects of the Life of God which were never found among their Adversaries. The same charge was afterwards renewed by the Socinians, and continueth still to be managed by them. But I suppose wise and impartial men will not lay much weight on their Accusations, until they have manifested the efficacy of their contrary persuasion by better effects and fruits than yet they have done. What sort of men they were who first coined that systeme of Religion which they adhere unto, one who knew them well enough, and sufficiently enclined unto their Antitrinitarian Opinions, declares in one of the Queries that he proposed unto Socinus himself and his followers. If this saith he, be the truth which you contend for, whence comes it to pass that it is declared only by persons, nulla pietatis commendatione, nullo laudato prioris vitæ exemplo commendatos; imo ut plerumq; videmus, per vagabundos, & contentionum zeli carnalis plenos homines, alios ex castris, aulis, ganeis, prolatam esse. Scrupuli ab excellenti viro propositi, inter oper. Socin. The fiercest charge of such men against any Doctrines they oppose as inconsistent with the necessary motives unto Godliness, are a Recommendation

## To the Reader.

commendation of it unto the minds of considerative men. And there cannot be a more effectual Engine plied for the ruine of Religion, then for men to declame against the Doctrine of Justification by Faith alone, and other Truths concerning the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, as those which overthrow the necessity of moral Duties, Good Works, and Gospel Obedience, whilst under the conduct of the Opinions which they embrace in opposition unto them, they give not the least evidence of the power of the Truth, or Grace of the Gospel upon their own hearts, or in their lives. Whereas therefore the whole Gospel is the Truth which is after Godlineſs, declaring and exhibiting that Grace of God which teacheth us to deny all ungodlineſs and worldly lusts, and that we should live soberly and righteouſly and godly in this world; we being fallen into those times wherein under great and fierce contests about notions, opinions, and practices in Religion, there is an horrible decay in true Gospel Purity and Holineſs of life amongst the generality of men, I shall readily grant, that keeping a due regard unto the only standard of Truth, a secondary Trial of Doctrines proposed and contended for, may and ought to be made by the ways, lives, walkings, and conversations of them by whom they are received and professed. And although it is acknowledged that the Doctrine pleaded in the ensuing discourse be liable to be abused, yea turned into licentiousness by men of corrupt minds through the prevalency of vitious Habits in them (as is the whole Doctrine of the Grace of God by Jesus Christ) and although the way and means of its efficacy and influence into universal Obedience unto God in Righteouſness and true Holineſs, be not discernable without some beam of spiritual Light, nor will give an experience of their power unto the minds of men utterly destitute of a principle of spiritual Life; yet if it cannot preserve its station in the Church by this Rule, of its useful tendency unto the promotion of Godlineſs, and its necessity thereunto, in all them by whom it is really believed and received in its proper light and power, and that in the experience of former and present times, I shall be content that it be exploded.

4. Finding that not a few have esteemed it compliant with their Interest, to publish exceptions against some few leaves, which in the handling of a subject of another nature I occasionally wrote many years ago on this Subject, I am not without Apprehensions, that either the same persons or others of alike temper and principles may attempt an opposition unto what is here expressly tendered thereon. On supposition of such an Attempt, I shall in one word let the Authors of it know, wherein alone I shall be concerned. For if they shall make it their business to cavil at Expressions, to wrest my words, wire draw inferences and conclusions from them not expressly owned by me, to revile my person, to catch at advantages in any occasional passages, or other unessential parts of the Discourse, labouring for an Appearance of success and reputation to themselves thereby, without a due attendance unto Christian moderation, candor and ingenuity, I shall take no more notice of what they say or write, then I would do of the greatest impertinencies that can be reported in this world. The same I say concerning oppositions of the like nature unto any other writings of mine; a work which as I hear, some are at present engaged in. I have somewhat else to do than to cast away any part of the small remainder of my Life in that kind of controversial Writings which good men bewail, and wise men deride. Whereas therefore the principal design of this Discourse, is to state the Doctrine of Justification from the Scripture, and to confirm it by the Testimonies thereof, I shall not esteem it spoken against, unless our Exposition of Scripture Testimonies, and the Application of them unto the present Argument be disproved by just Rules of Interpretation, and another sense of them be evinced. All other things which I conceive necessary to be spoken unto, in order unto the right understanding and due improvement of the Truth pleaded for, are comprised and declared in the ensuing general Discourses to that purpose; These few things I thought meet to mind the Reader of.

# Considerations previous unto the Explanation of the Doctrine of Justification.

## §. 1.

**T**He General Nature of Justification. State of the Person to be justified antecedently thereunto. Rom.4. 5. Chap. 3. 19. Chap.1. 32. Gal.3.10. Joh.3. 18, 36. Gal. 3. 22. The sole Inquiry on that state. Whether it be any thing that is our own inherently, or what is only imputed unto us, that we are to trust unto for our Acceptance with God. The sum of this Inquiry. The proper ends of Teaching and Learning the Doctrine of Justification. Things to be avoided therein. Pag. 1.

## §. 2.

A due consideration of God, the Judge of all, necessary unto the right stating and apprehension of the Doctrine of Justification, Rom.8. 33. Isa.43. 25. 45. 23. Psal. 145. 2. Rom. 3. 20. What thoughts will be ingenerated hereby in the minds of Men. Ifai.33. 14. Mic.6. 7. Isa.6.5. The Plea of Job against his friends, and before God not the same. Job 40. 3, 4; 5. Chap. 42. 4, 5, 6. Directions for visiting the sick given of old. Testimonies of Jerome and Ambrose. Sense of Men in their Prayers. Dan.9. 7, 18. Psal.143.2. 130. 3, 4. Paraphrase of Austine on that place. Prayer of Pelagius. Publick Liturgies. Pag.8.

## §. 3.

A due sense of our Apostasie from God, the Depravation of our Nature thereby, with the power and guilt of Sin, the holiness of Law, necessary unto a right understanding of the Doctrine of Justification. Method of the Apostle to this purpose, Romans 1,2,3,4. Chap. Grounds of the antient and present Pelagianism, in the denial of these things. Instances thereof. Boasting of Perfection

*fection from the same Ground. Knowledge of Sin and Grace mutually promote each other. Pag. 18.*

§. 4.

*Opposition between Works and Grace, as unto Justification. Method of the Apostle in the Epistle to the Romans to manifest this opposition. A Scheme of others, contrary thereunto. Testimonies witnessing this opposition. Judgment to be made on them. Distinctions whereby they are evaded. The useflessness of them. Resolution of the case in hand by Bellarmine. Luk. 17. 10. Dan. 9. 18. Pag. 24.*

§. 5.

*A Commutation as unto Sin and Righteousness, by Imputation between Christ and Believers, represented in the Scripture. The Ordinance of the Scape Goat. Levit. 16. 21, 22. The nature of Expiatory Sacrifices. Levit. 4. 29. Expiation of an uncertain Murderer. Deut. 21. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. The Commutation intended, proved, and vindicated. Isa. 53. 5, 6. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Rom. 8. 3, 4. Gal. 3. 13, 14. 1 Pet. 1. 24. Deut. 21. 23. Testimonies of Justin Martyr, Gregory Nissen, Austine, Chrysostome, Bernard, Taulerus, Pighius, to that purpose. The proper actings of Faith with respect thereunto. Rom. 5. 11. Matth. 11. 28. Psa. 38. 4. Gen. 4. 13. Isa. 53. 11. Gal. 3. 1. Isa. 45. 22. Joh. 3. 14, 15. A bold Calumny answered. Pag. 38, 39.*

§. 6.

*Introduction of Grace by Jesus Christ into the whole of our Relation unto God, and its respect unto all the parts of our Obedience. No Mystery of Grace in the Covenant of Works. All Religion originally commensurate unto Reason. No notions of Natural Light concerning the Introduction of the Mediation of Christ, and Mystery of Grace into our Relation to God. Eph. 1. 17, 18, 19. Reason as corrupted can have no notions of Religion, but what are derived from its primitive state. Hence the Mysteries of the Gospel esteemed folly. Reason as corrupted, re-*  
*pugnant*

*pugnant unto the Mystery of Grace. Accommodation of Spiritual Mysteries unto Corrupt Reason, wherefore acceptable unto many. Reasons of it. Two parts of corrupted Natures repugnancy unto the Mystery of the Gospel. (1.) That which would reduce it unto the private Reason of Men. Thence the Trinity denied. And the Incarnation of the Son of God. Without which the Doctrine of Justification cannot stand. Rule of the Socinians in the Interpretation of the Scripture. (2.) Want of a due comprehension of the Harmony that is between all the parts of the Mystery of Grace. This Harmony proved. Compared with the Harmony in the Works of Nature. To be studied. But is learned only of them who are taught of God; and in experience. Evil events of the want of a due comprehension hereof. Instances of them. All applied unto the Doctrine of Justification. Pag. 53.*

§. 7.

*General prejudices against the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. (1.) That it is not in Terms found in the Scripture, answered. (2.) That nothing is said of it in the writings of the Evangelists, answered. Joh. 20. 30, 31. Nature of Christs Personal Ministry. Revelations by the holy Spirit immediately from Christ. Design of the writings of the Evangelists. (3.) Differences among Protestants themselves about this Doctrine, answered. Sense of the Antients herein. What is of real Difference among Protestants, considered. Pag. 69.*

§. 8.

*Influence of the Doctrine of Justification into the first Reformation. Advantages unto the World by that Reformation. State of the Consciences of Men under the Papacy, with respect unto Justification before God. Alterations made therein by the Light of this Doctrine, though not received. Alterations in the Pagan unbelieving World, by the Introduction of Christianity. Design and success of the first Reformer herein. Attempts for Reconciliation with the Papists in this Doctrine, and their*

success. *Remainders of the Ignorance of the Truth in the Roman Church. Unavoidable consequences of the corruption of this Doctrine.* Pag. 83.

## CHAP. I.

**J**ustification by Faith generally acknowledged. The meaning of it perverted. The nature and use of Faith in Justification proposed to consideration. Distinctions about it, waved. A two-fold Faith of the Gospel expressed in the Scripture. Faith that is not justifying. Acts 8. 13. Joh. 2. 23, 24. Luk. 8. 13. Matth. 22. 28. Historical Faith, whence it is so called, and the nature of it. Degrees of Assent in it. Justification not ascribed unto any Degree of it. A Calumny obviated. The causes of true saving Faith. Conviction of Sin previous unto it. The nature of legal Conviction, and its Effects. Arguments to prove it antecedent unto Faith. Without the consideration of it, the true nature of Faith not to be understood. The Order and Relation of the Law and Gospel. Rom. 1. 17. Instance of Adam. Effects of Conviction, internal; Displeasancy and sorrow. Fear of punishment. Desire of Deliverance. External; Abstinence from Sin. Performance of Duties; Reformation of Life. Not conditions of Justification; not Formal Dispositions unto it; not Moral Preparations for it. The Order of God in Justification. The proper object of justifying Faith. Not all Divine Verity equally; proved by sundry Arguments. The pardon of our own sins, whether the first object of Faith. The Lord Christ in the Work of Mediation, as the Ordinance of God for the Recovery of lost Sinners, the proper object of justifying Faith. The Position explained and proved. Rom. 3. 24, 25. Ephes. 1. 6, 7, 8. Acts 10. 41. Chap. 16. 13. Chap. 4. 12. Luk. 24. 25, 26, 27. Joh. 1. 12. 3. 16, 36. 6. 29. 7. 38, &c. Col. 2. 12. 1 Cor. 2. 1, 31. 2 Cor. 5. 19, 20, 21. Pag. 92, 93, &c.

CHAP.

## C H A P. II.

*The nature of justifying Faith in particular ; or of Faith in that exercise of it, whereby we are justified. The Hearts approbation of the way of the Justification, and Salvation of Sinners by Christ, with its acquiescency therein. The description given, explained, and confirmed. (1.) From the nature of the Gospel. (2.) Exemplified in its contrary, or the nature of unbelief. Prov. 1. 30. Heb. 2. 3. 1 Pet. 2. 7. 1 Cor. 1. 23, 24. 2 Cor. 4. 3, 4. What it is, and wherein it doth consist. (3.) The Design of God, in, and by the Gospel. His own Glory, his utmost End in all things. The Glory of his Righteousness, Grace, Love, Wisdom, &c. The end of God in the Way of the Salvation of Sinners by Christ. Rom. 3. 25. Joh. 3. 16. 1 Joh. 3. 16. Eph. 1. 5, 6. 1 Cor. 1. 24. Ephes. 3. 10. Rom. 1. 16. 4. 16. Ephes. 3. 9. 2 Cor. 4. 6. The nature of Faith thence declared. Faith alone ascribes and gives this glory to God. Order of the Acts of Faith, or the method in believing. Convictions previous thereunto. Sincere assent unto all Divine Revelations, Acts 26. 27. The Proposal of the Gospel unto that end, Rom. 10. 11, 12, 13, &c. 2 Cor. 3. 18. State of Persons called to believe. Justifying Faith doth not consist in any one single habit or act of the Mind or Will. The nature of that assent which is the first Act of Faith. Approbation of the Way of Salvation by Christ, comprehensive of the special nature of justifying Faith. What is included therein. (1.) A Renuntiatio of all other ways. Hos. 14. 2, 3. Jer. 3. 23. Psal. 7. 16. Rom. 10. 3. (2.) Consent of the Will unto this Way, Joh. 14. 6. (3.) Acquiescency of the Heart in God. 1 Pet. 1. 21. Trust in God. Faith described by Trust, the Reason of it. Nature and Object of this Trust inquired into. A double consideration of special Mercy. Whether Obedience be included in the nature of Faith, or be of the essence of it. A sincere purpose of Universal Obedience inseparable from Faith. (How Faith alone justifieth. Repentance, how required in, and unto.*

unto Justification. How a condition of the New Covenant. Perseverance in Obedience, is so also. Definitions of Faith. Pag. 125.

### CHAP. III.

*Use of Faith in Justification; various Conceptions about it. By whom asserted, as the Instrument of it, by whom denied. In what sense it is affirmed so to be. The expressions of the Scripture, concerning the use of Faith in Justification, what they are; and how they are best explained. By an Instrumental Cause. Faith, how the Instrument of God in Justification. How the Instrument of them that do believe. The use of Faith expressed in the Scripture, by apprehending, receiving; declared by an Instrument. Faith in what sense the condition of our Justification. Signification of that Term whence to be Learned. Pag. 146.*

### CHAP. IV.

*The proper sense of these words, Justification and to justify, considered. Necessity thereof. Latine derivation of Justification. Some of the Antients deceived by it. From Jus, and Justum; Justus filius, who. The Hebrew הַצְדִּיק. Use and signification of it. Places where it is used, examined. 2 Sam. 15. 4. Deut. 21. 5. Prov. 17. 15. Isa. 5. 23. Chap. 50. 8. 1 King. 8. 31, 32. 2 Chro. 6. 22, 23. Psal. 82. 3. Exod. 23. 7. Isa. 53. 11. Jer. 44. 16. Dan. 12. 3. The constant sense of the word, evinced. Δικαίωσις, Use of it in other Authors, to punish. What it is in the New Testament, Matth. 11. 19. Chap. 12. 37. Luk. 7. 29. Chap. 10. 29. Chap. 16. 15. Chap. 18. 14. Acts 13. 38, 39. Rom. 2. 13. Chap. 3. 4. Constantly used in a forensick sense. Places seeming dubious, vindicated. Rom. 8. 30. 1 Cor. 6. 11. Tit. 3. 5, 6, 7. Revel. 22. 11. How often these words Δικαίωσις and Δικαίωματα, are used in the New Testament. Constant*

*Constant sense of this. The same evinced, from what is opposed unto it, Isa. 50.8. Prov.17.15. Rom.5. 16, 18. Rom.8. 33, 34. And the Declaration of it in Terms equivalent. Rom.4. 6, 7. Rom.5.9, 10. 2 Cor.5. 20, 21. Matth.1. 21. Acts 13. 39. Gal.2. 16, &c. Justification in the Scripture, proposed under a Juridical Schem, and of a forensick Title. The Parts and Progress of it. Instances from the whole. Pag.169. &c.*

## CHAP. V.

*Distinction of a First and Second Justification. The whole Doctrine of the Roman Church concerning Justification grounded on this Distinction. The First Justification, the nature and causes of it according unto the Romanists. The Second Justification, what it is in their sense. Solution of the seeming Difference between Paul and James, falsely pretended by this Distinction. The same Distinction received by the Socinians, and others. The latter termed by some, the continuation of our Justification. The Distinction disproved. Justification considered, either as unto its Essence, or its Manifestation. The Manifestation of it twofold, initial and final. Initial is either unto our selves, or others. No Second Justification hence insues. Justification before God, Legal and Evangelical. Their distinct natures. The Distinction mentioned, derogatory to the Merit of Christ. More in it ascribed unto our selves, then unto the Blood of Christ, in our Justification. The vanity of Disputations to this purpose. All true Justification, overthrown by this Distinction. No countenance given unto this Justification in the Scripture. The Second Justification not intended by the Apostle James. Evil of Arbitrary Distinctions. Our First Justification so described in the Scripture, as to leave no room for a Second. Of the Continuation of our Justification: Whether it depend on Faith alone, or our Personal Righteousness inquired. Justification at once compleated in all the Causes and Effects of it,*  
*proved*

proved at large. Believers upon their Justification, obliged unto perfect Obedience. The commanding Power of the Law constitutes the nature of Sin in them, who are not obnoxious unto its curse. Future Sins, in what sense remitted at our First Justification. The Continuation of Actual Pardon, and thereby of a justified Estate, on what it doth depend. Continuation of Justification, the act of God; whereon it depends in that sense. On our part it depends on Faith alone. Nothing required hereunto, but the Application of Righteousness imputed. The Continuation of our Justification is before God. That whereon the Continuation of our Justification depends, pleadable before God. This not our Personal Obedience proved. (1.) By the experience of all Believers. (2.) Testimonies of Scripture. (3.) Examples. The Distinction mentioned rejected. Pag. 189.

## CHAP. VI.

Evangelical Personal Righteousness, the nature and use of it. Whether there be an Evangelical Justification on our Evangelical Righteousness inquired into. How this is by some affirmed and applauded. Evangelical Personal Righteousness asserted as the condition of our Legal Righteousness, or the Pardon of Sin. Opinion of the Socinians. Personal Righteousness required in the Gospel. Believers hence denominated Righteous. Not with respect unto Righteousness habitual, but actual only. Inherent Righteousness the same with Sanctification or Holiness. In what sense we may be said to be justified by Inherent Righteousness. No Evangelical Justification on our Personal Righteousness. The Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ doth not depend thereon. None have this Righteousness, but they are antecedently justified. A charge before God, in all Justification before God. The Instrument of this charge; the Law or the Gospel. From neither of them can we be justified by this Personal Righteousness. The Justification pretended needless and useless. It hath

not the nature of any Justification mentioned in the Scripture ; but is contrary to all that is so called. Other Arguments to the same purpose. Sentential Justification at the last day. Nature of the last Judgment. Who shall be then justified. A Declaration of Righteousness, and an Actual Admission unto Glory, the whole of Justification at the last day. The Argument that we are justified in this life, in the same manner, and on the same Grounds as we shall be judged at the last day, that Judgment being according unto Works, answered ; and the Impertinency of it declared. Pag.211.

## CHAP. VII.

*Imputation, and the nature of it. The first express Record of Justification, determineth it to be by Imputation. Gen. 15. 6. Reasons of it. The Doctrine of Imputation cleared by Paul ; the occasion of it. Maligned and opposed by many. Weight of the Doctrine concerning Imputation of Righteousness on all hands acknowledged. Judgment of the Reformed Churches herein, particularly of the Church of England. By whom opposed, and on what Grounds. Signification of the Word. Difference between reputare and imputare. Imputation of two kinds. ( 1. ) Of what was ours antecedently unto that Imputation, whether good or evil. Instances in both kinds. Nature of this Imputation. The thing imputed by it, imputed for what it is, and nothing else. ( 2. ) Of what is not ours antecedently unto that Imputation, but is made so by it. General nature of this Imputation. Not judging of others to have done what they have not done. Several distinct Grounds and Reasons of this Imputation. ( 1. ) Ex Justitia ; ( 1. ) Propter Relationem fœderalem. ( 2. ) Propter Relationem Naturalem. ( 2. ) Ex voluntaria sponsione. Instances, Philem. 17. Gen. 43. 9. Voluntary sponson, the Ground of the Imputation of Sin to Christ. ( 3. ) Ex injuria. 1 King. 1. 21. ( 4. ) Ex mera Gratia.*

Rom. 4. *Difference between the Imputation of any Works of ours, and of the Righteousness of God. Imputation of Inherent Righteousness, is Ex Jultitia. Inconsistency of it, with that which is Ex mera Gratia. Rom. II. 6. Agreement of both kinds of Imputation. The true nature of the Imputation of Righteousness unto Justification, explained. Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. The thing it self imputed, not the effect of it; proved against the Socinians. Pag. 226.*

## CHAP. VIII.

*Imputation of Sin unto Christ. Testimonies of the Antients unto that purpose. Christ and the Church, one Mystical Person. Mistakes about that State and Relation. Grounds and Reasons of the Union, that is the foundation of this Imputation. Christ the Surety of the New Covenant; in what sense, unto what ends. Heb. 7. 22. opened. Mistakes about the Causes, and Ends of the Death of Christ. The New Covenant in what sense alone procured and purchased thereby. Inquiry whether the Guilt of our sins, was imputed unto Christ. The meaning of the words, Guilt and Guilty. The Distinction of Reatus culpæ and Reatus pænæ, examined. Act of God in the Imputation of the Guilt of our Sins unto Christ. Objections against it, answered. The Truth confirmed. Pag. 246.*

## CHAP. IX.

*Principal Controversies about Justification. (1.) Concerning the nature of Justification, stated. (2.) Of the Formal Cause of it. (3.) Of the Way whereby we are made partakers of the Benefits of the Mediation of Christ. What intended by the Formal Cause of Justification, declared. The Righteousness on the account whereof Believers are justified before God alone, inquired after under those Terms. This the Righteousness of Christ,*

*Christ, imputed unto them. Occasions of Exceptions and Objections against this Doctrine. General Objections examined. Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ; consistent with the Free Pardon of Sin, with the necessity of Evangelical Repentance. Method of Gods Grace in our Justification. Necessity of Faith unto Justification, on supposition of the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. Grounds of that Necessity. Other Objections arising mostly from mistakes of the Truth, asserted, discussed and answered. Pag. 289.*

## CHAP. X.

*Arguments for Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. Our own Personal Righteousness, not that on the account whereof we are justified in the sight of God. Disclaimed in the Scripture, as to any such end. The truth and reality of it granted. Manifold Imperfections accompanying it, rendering it unmeet to be a Righteousness unto the Justification of Life. Pag. 315.*

## CHAP. XI.

*Nature of the Obedience or Righteousness required unto Justification. Original and Causes of the Law of Creation. The Substance and End of that Law. The Immutability or unchangeableness of it, considered absolutely; and as it was the Instrument of the Covenant between God and Man. Arguments to prove it unchangeable; and its Obligation unto the Righteousness first required, perpetually in force. Therefore not abrogated, not dispensed withal, not derogated from, but accomplished. This alone by Christ, and the Imputation of his Righteousness unto us. Pag. 340.*

## CHAP. XII.

*Imputation of the Obedience of Christ, no less necessary then that of his suffering on the same Ground. Objections against it.*

1. *That it is impossible. Management hereof by Socinus. Ground of this Objection, That the Lord Christ was for himself obliged unto all the Obedience he yielded unto God, and performed it for himself, answered. The Obedience inquired after, the Obedience of the Person of Christ the Son of God. In his whole Person, Christ was not under the Law. He designed the Obedience he performed, for us not for himself. This Actual Obedience not necessary as a qualification of his Person, unto the discharge of his Office. The Foundation of this Obedience in his being made Man, and of the Posterity of Abraham, not for himself, but for us. Right of the Humane Nature unto Glory, by virtue of Union. Obedience necessary unto the Humane Nature, as Christ in it was made under the Law. This Obedience properly for us. Instances of that nature among Men. Christ obeyed as a publick Person; and so not for himself. Humane Nature of Christ subject unto the Law, as an Eternal Rule of dependance on God, and subjection to him; not as prescribed unto us whilest we are in this World, in order unto our future Blessedness, or Reward. Second Objection, that it is useles, answered. He that is pardoned all his sins, is not thereon esteemed to have done all that is required of him. Not to be unrighteous, Negatively; not the same with being righteous, Positively. The Law obligeth both unto punishment and obedience; how, and in what sense. Pardon of Sin gives no title to Eternal Life. The Righteousness of Christ who is one, imputed unto many. Arguments proving the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ, unto the Justification of Life. Pag. 361.*

## CHAP. XIII.

*The Difference between the two Covenants, stated. Arguments from thence. Pag. 396.*

## CHAP. XIV.

*All Works whatever expressly excluded from any interest in our Justification before God. What intended by the Works of the Law. Not those of the Ceremonial Law only. Not perfect Works only, as required by the Law of our Creation. Not the outward Works of the Law performed without a principle of Faith. Not Works of the Jewish Law. Not Works with a conceit of Merit. Not Works only wrought before believing in the strength of our own wills. Works excluded absolutely from our Justification without respect unto a Distinction of a First and Second Justification. The true sense of the Law in the Apostolical Assertion, that none are justified by the Works thereof. What the Jews understood by the Law. Distribution of the Law under the Old Testament. The whole Law a perfect Rule of all Inherent Moral or Spiritual Obedience. What are the Works of the Law, declared from the Scripture, and the Argument thereby confirmed. The nature of Justifying Faith further declared. Pag: 400.*

## CHAP. XV.

*Of Faith alone.*

## CHAP. XVI.

*Testimonies of Scripture confirming the Doctrine of Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. Jer. 23. 6. Explained and vindicated. Pag. 419.*

## CHAP. XVII.

*Testimonies out of the Evangelists, considered. Design of our Saviours Sermon on the Mount. The purity and penalty of the Law,*

*Law, vindicated by him. Arguments from thence. Luk. 18. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13. The Parable of the Pharisee and Publican explained and applied to the present Argument. Testimonies out of the Gospel by John, Chap. 3. 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, &c. Pag. 425.*

## CHAP. XVIII.

*Testimonies out of the Epistles of Paul, the Apostle. His design in the Fifth Chapter to the Romans. That Design explained at large and applied to the present Argument. Chap. 3. 24, 25, 26. explained, and the true sense of the words vindicated. The Causes of Justification enumerated. Apostolical Inferences from the consideration of them. Chap. 4. Design of the Disputation of the Apostle therein. Analysis of his Discourse. Ver. 4, 5. particularly insisted on, their true sense vindicated. What Works excluded from the Justification of Abraham. Who it is, that worketh not. In what sense the ungodly are justified. All Men ungodly antecedently unto their Justification. Faith alone the means of Justification on our part. Faith it self absolutely considered, not the Righteousness that is imputed unto us. Proved by sundry Arguments. Pag. 431.*

Chap. 5. Ver. 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18.

*Boasting excluded in our selves, asserted in God. The design and sum of the Apostles Argument. Objection of Socinus removed. Comparison between the two Adams, and those that derive from them. Sin entered into the World. What Sin intended. Death, what it compriseth. What intended by it. The sense of those words in as much, or in whom all have sinned, cleared and vindicated. The various oppositions used by the Apostle in this Discourse. Principally between Sin or the Fall, and the Free Gift. Between the disobedience of the one, and the obedience of another. Judgment on the one hand, and Justification*  
unto

unto Life on the other. The whole Context at large, explained, and the Argument for Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, fully confirmed. P. 464. Chap. 10. V. 3, 4. explained, and insisted on to the same purpose. Pag. 489.

I Cor. 1. 30.

Christ, how of God made Righteousness unto us. Answer of Bellarmine unto this Testimony, removed. That of Socinus, disproved. True sense of the words evinced. P. 497. 2 Cor. 5. 21. In what sense Christ knew no sin. Emphasis in that expression. How he was made Sin for us. By the Imputation of Sin unto him. Mistakes of some about this expression. Sense of the Antients. Exception of Bellarmine unto this Testimony, answered; with other Reasonings of his to the same purpose. P. 502. The Exceptions of others also removed. Gal. 2. 16. Pag. 513.

Ephes. 2. 8, 9, 10.

Ephes. 2. 8, 9, 10. Evidence of this Testimony. Design of the Apostle from the beginning of the Chapter. Method of the Apostle in the Declaration of the Grace of God. Grace alone the cause of Deliverance from a State of Sin. Things to be observed in the Assignment of the Causes of Spiritual Deliverance. Grace, how magnified by him. Force of the Argument, and evidence from thence. State of the Case here proposed by the Apostle. General determination of it. By Grace ye are saved. What it is to be saved, inquired into. The same as to be justified, but not exclusively. The causes of our Justification, declared Positively and Negatively. The whole secured unto the Grace of God by Christ, and our Interest therein through Faith alone. Works excluded. What Works? Not Works of the Law of Moses. Not Works antecedent unto believing. Works of true Believers. Not only in opposition to the Grace of God, but to Faith in us. Argument from those words. Reason whercon this exclusion of Works is founded. To exclude Boasting on our part. Boasting wherein it consists.

*consists. Inseparable from the Interest of Works in Justification. Danger of it. Confirmation of this Reason obviating an Objection. The Objection stated. If we be not justified by Works, of what use are they, answered. Pag. 516.*

Phil. 3. 8, 9.

*Heads of Argument from this Testimony. Design of the Context. Righteousness the Foundation of Acceptance with God. A twofold Righteousness considered by the Apostle. Opposite unto one another, as unto the especial end inquired after. Which of these he adhered unto, his own Righteousness or the Righteousness of God; declared by the Apostle with vehemency of speech. Reasons of his earnestness herein. The turning point whereon he left Judaism. The opposition made unto this Doctrine by the Jews. The weight of the Doctrine and unwillingness of Men to receive it. His own sense of Sin and Grace. Peculiar expressions used in this place, for the Reasons mentioned, concerning Christ. Concerning all things that are our own. The choice to be made on the Case stated, whether we will adhere unto our own Righteousness, or that of Christs, which are inconsistent as to the end of Justification. Argument from this place. Exceptions unto this Testimony, and Argument from thence, removed. Our Personal Righteousness Inherent, the same with respect unto the Law and Gospel. External Righteousness only required by the Law, an impious Imagination. Works wrought before Faith only rejected. The Exception removed. Righteousness before Conversion, not intended by the Apostle. Pag. 256.*

## CHAP. XIX.

*Objections against the Doctrine of Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. Nature of these Objections. Difficulty in discerning aright the sense of some Men in this Argument. Justification by Works, the end of all declension from  
the*

the Righteousness of Christ. Objections against this Doctrine derived from a supposition thereof alone. First principal Objection; Imputed Righteousness overthrows the necessity of an holy Life. This Objection as managed by them of the Church of Rome, an open calumny. How insisted on by some among our selves. Socinus fierceness in this charge. His foul dishonesty therein. Falsercharges on Mens opinions, making way for the rash condemnation of their persons. Iniquity of such censures. The Objection rightly stated. Sufficiently answered in the previous Discourses about the nature of Faith, and force of the Moral Law. The nature and necessity of Evangelical Holiness elsewhere pleaded. Particular answers unto this Objection. All who profess this Doctrine do not exemplifie it in their lives. The most holy Truths have been abused. None by whom this Doctrine is now denied, exceed them in holiness, by whom it was formerly professed, and the power of it attested. The contrary Doctrine not successful in the Reformation of the lives of Men. The best way to determine this difference. The same Objection managed against the Doctrine of the Apostle in his own days. Efficacious prejudices against this Doctrine in the minds of Men. The whole Doctrine of the Apostle liable to be abused. Answers of the Apostle unto this Objection. He never once attempts to answer it, by declaring the necessity of Personal Righteousness, or good Works unto Justification before God. He confines the cogency of Evangelical Motives unto Obedience only unto Believers. Grounds of Evangelical Holiness asserted by him in compliance with his Doctrine of Justification. (1.) Divine Ordination. Exceptions unto this Ground, removed. (2.) Answer of the Apostle vindicated. The Obligation of the Law unto Obedience. Nature of it, and consistency with Grace. This Answer of the Apostle vindicated. Heads of other Principles that might be pleaded to the same purpose. Pag. 539.

## CHAP. XX.

*Seeming Difference, no real contradiction between the Apostles Paul and James, concerning Justification. This granted by all. Reasons of the seeming Difference. The best Rule of the Interpretation of places of Scripture, wherein there is an appearing repugnancy. The Doctrine of Justification according unto that Rule principally to be learned from the Writings of Paul. The Reasons of his fulness and accuracy in the teaching of that Doctrine. The Importance of the Truth; the opposition made unto it; and abuse of it. The design of the Apostle James. Exceptions of some against the Writings of S. Paul, scandalous and unreasonable. Not in this matter to be interpreted by the passage in James insisted on, Chap. 2. That there is no repugnancy between the Doctrine of the two Apostles demonstrated. Heads and Grounds of the Demonstration. Their scope, design, and end not the same. That of Paul; the only case stated and determined by him. The designs of the Apostle James; the case proposed by him quite of another nature. The occasion of the case proposed and stated by him. No appearance of difference between the Apostles, because of the several cases they speak unto. Not the same Faith intended by them. Description of the Faith spoken of by the one, and the other. Bellarmine's Arguments to prove true justifying Faith to be intended by James, answered. Justification not treated of by the Apostles in the same manner, nor used in the same sense, nor to the same end. The one treats of Justification, as unto its nature and causes; the other as unto its signs and evidence, proved by the instances insisted on. Pag. 557.*

*How the Scripture was fulfilled, that Abraham believed in God, and it was counted unto him for Righteousness, when he offered his Son, on the Altar. Works the same, and of the same kind*

kind in both the Apostles. <sup>1</sup> Observations on the Discourse of James. No Conjunction made by him between Faith and Works in our Justification, but an opposition. No distinction of a First and Second Justification in him. Justification ascribed by him wholly unto Works, in what sense. Does not determine how a sinner may be justified before God; but how a Professor may evidence himself so to be. The Context opened from Ver. 14. to the end of the Chapter. Pag. 569.

---

---

## Some of the Mistakes that have escaped in the Press may be thus corrected.

**P** Ag. 10. Line 2. *a fine*, read *other*, p. 11. l. 24. *none*, r. *nothing*, p. 41. l. 30. r. *אגללואי*, l. 33. *אפדח*, p. 42. l. 22. r. *דברי*, p. 53. l. 6. r. *this Author*, l. 25. *man*, r. *men*, l. 26. *them*, p. 64. l. 4. *a fine*, that it is, p. 71. l. 21. and r. *add*, p. 72. l. 12. r. *For an*, p. 172. l. 17. for *הכה* r. *הנה*, l. 28. *Hithpaol*, p. 174. l. 8. *ומרשיע*, p. 175. l. 10. *קדוב*, l. 20. *רשע*, l. 24. *ודש*, l. 28. *הלילה*, p. 176. l. 3. *נצטרק*, l. 8. *ומצדיקו*, l. 9. *הרבי*, l. 4. *a fine*, *אגדאגסא*, *אגדסא*, l. 3. [*a fine*, *affects*, p. 180. l. 22. *vocation that is intended*, p. 199. l. 1. *which was*, r. *whereas*, p. 208. 23. *such*, r. *Faith*, p. 234. l. 2. *dele* *אדני*, p. 266. l. 8. *Curcellaus*, p. 283. l. 23. *suffered* r. *offered*, p. 311. l. 30. *of him*, p. 362. l. 11. r. *as if we*, p. 392. l. 20. r. *more colour*, p. 412. l. 7. *רברי*, p. 436. l. 2. *a fine*, r. *other men*, p. 444. l. 10. *proofs*, r. *process*, p. 465. l. 1. *אגאגאגא*

Sundry other literal Mistakes and Mispointings are referred unto the candor of the Reader; which I chuse rather than to trouble many with the rehearsal of what it may be, few will take notice of.

---

*General Considerations previously necessary unto  
the Explanation of the Doctrine of Justi-  
fication.*

**T**HAT we may treat of the Doctrine of *Justification* usefully unto its proper Ends, which are the Glory of God in Christ, with the peace and furtherance of the Obedience of Believers, some things are *previously* to be considered, which we must have respect unto in the whole process of our Discourse. And among others that might be insisted on to the same purpose, these that ensue are not to be omitted.

1. The first Enquiry in this matter in a way of Duty, is after the *proper Relief* of the Conscience of a sinner, pressed and perplexed with a sense of the Guilt of sin. For *Justification* is the way and means whereby such a person doth obtain acceptance before God, with a Right and Title unto an heavenly Inheritance. And nothing is pleadable in this cause, but what a man would speak unto his own Conscience in that state, or unto the Conscience of another, when he is anxious under that Enquiry. Wherefore, The *Person* under consideration, that is, who is to be Justified, is one who in himself is ἀσεβής *Rom.* 4. 5. *Ungodly*; and thereon ὑπόδικος τῷ Θεῷ; *Chap.* 3. 19. *guilty before God*; that is, obnoxious, subject, liable τῷ δικαίωματι τοῦ Θεοῦ, *Chap.* 1. 32; to the righteous sentential Judgment of God; that *he who committeth sin*, who is in any way guilty of it, is *worthy of Death*. Hereupon such

B

a per-

## 2 *General Considerations previously necessary*

a person finds himself *ὑπὸ καταραῖς* Gal. 3. 10 ; under the curse, and the wrath of God therein abiding on him, Joh. 3. 18, 36. In this condition he is *ἀναπολόγητος* ; without plea, without excuse, by any thing in and from himself, for his own relief ; *His mouth is stopped*, Rom. 3. 19. For he is in the Judgment of God declared in the Scripture *σκληθεὶς ὑπ' ἁμαρτίαν* ; Gal. 3. 22 ; every way *shut up* under sin and all the consequents of it. Many Evils in this condition are men subject unto, which may be reduced unto those two of our first Parents wherein they were represented. For first, they thought *foolishly* to hide themselves from God ; and then more *foolishly* would have charged him as the cause of their sin. And such naturally are the thoughts of men under their convictions. But whoever is the *subject* of the *Justification* enquired after, is by various means brought into his Apprehensions, who cryed, *Sirs ! What must I do to be saved ?*

2. With respect unto this state and condition of men, or men in this state and condition, the enquiry is, *What that is upon the account whereof, God pardoneth all their sins, receiveth them into his favour, declareth or pronounceth them Righteous, and acquitted from all Guilt, removes the Curse, and turneth away all his wrath from them, giving them Right and Title unto a blessed Immortality or life Eternal.* This is that alone wherein the Consciences of sinners in this estate are concerned. Nor do they enquire after any thing, but what they may have to oppose unto, or answer the Justice of God in the commands and curse of the Law, and what they may betake themselves unto, for the obtaining of Acceptance with him unto life and salvation.

That the Apostle doth thus and no otherwise state this whole matter, and in an Answer unto this Enquiry, declare the nature of Justification and all the causes of it, in the *third and fourth Chapters of the Epistle to the Romans*, and elsewhere, shall be afterwards declared and proved. And we shall also  
mani-

manifest that the *Apostle James* in the second Chapter of his *Epistle*, doth not speak unto this Enquiry, nor give an Answer unto it ; but it is of Justification in another sense, and to another purpose whereof he treateth. And whereas we cannot either safely or usefully treat of this Doctrine, but with respect unto the same Ends for which it is declared, and whereunto it is applied in the Scripture, we should not by any pretences be turned aside from attending unto this Case and its Resolution, in all our Discourses on this subject. For it is the Direction, Satisfaction and peace of the Consciences of men, and not the curiosity of Notions or subtilty of Disputations, which it is our Duty to design. And therefore I shall as much as possibly I may, avoid all those *Philosophical Terms* and Distinctions wherewith this *Evangelical Doctrine* hath been perplexed rather than illustrated. For more weight is to be put on the steady Guidance of the Mind and Conscience of one Believer really exercised about the Foundation of his peace and acceptance with God, then on the confutation of ten wrangling Disputers.

3. Now the Enquiry on what account or for what Cause and Reason a man may be so acquitted or discharged of sin, and accepted with God as before declared, doth necessarily issue in this ; Whether it be *any thing in our selves*, as our *Faith, and Repentance, the Renovation of our Natures, inherent habits of Grace, and actual works of Righteousness which we have done, or may do* ; or whether it be the *Obedience, Righteousness, Satisfaction and Merit of the Son of God our Mediator and Surety of the Covenant, imputed unto us*. One of these it must be, namely, something that is our own, which, whatever may be the Influence of the Grace of God into it, or causality of it, because wrought in and by us, is *inherently* our own in a proper sense ; or something, which being *not our own*, not inherent in us, not wrought by us, is yet imputed unto us, for the pardon of our sins, and the Acceptation

#### 4 *General Considerations previously necessary*

tion of our Persons as righteous ; or the making of us Righteous in the sight of God. Neither are these things capable of mixture or composition, *Rom. 11. 6.* Which of these it is the Duty, Wisdome and safety of a convinced sinner to rely upon and trust unto in his Appearance before God, is the sum of our present Enquiry.

4. The way whereby sinners do or ought to betake themselves unto this Relief, on supposition that it is the *Righteousness of Christ*, and how they come to be partakers of, or interested in that which is not inherently their own, unto as good Benefit and as much Advantage as if it were their own, is of a distinct consideration. And as this also is clearly determined in the Scripture, so it is acknowledged in the Experience of all them that do truly believe. Neither are we in this matter much to regard the senses or arguings of men, who were never throughly convinced of sin, nor have ever in their own persons  *fled for Refuge unto the Hope set before them.*

5. These things I say are always to be attended unto, in our whole Disquisition into the nature of *Evangelical Justification* ; For without a constant respect unto them, we shall quickly wander into curious and perplexed Questions, wherein the Consciences of guilty Sinners are not concerned ; and which therefore really belong not unto the substance or truth of this Doctrine, nor are to be immixed therewith. It is alone the Relief of those who are in themselves *κατάδικτοι πρὸς Θεῷ*, *guilty before*, or obnoxious and liable to the Judgment of God, that we enquire after. That this is not any thing in or of themselves, nor can so be ; that it is a Provision without them, made in infinite Wisdom and Grace by the mediation of Christ, his Obedience and Death therein, is secured in the Scripture against all contradiction : And it is the fundamental Principle of the Gospel, *Math. 11. 28.*

6. It is confessed that many things for the Declaration of the Truth and the order of the Dispensation of Gods Grace  
here-

herein, are necessarily to be insisted on; such are the nature of *Justifying Faith*, the *place and use of it* in Justification, the *Causes* of the new Covenant, the true notion of the Mediation and Suretiship of Christ, and the like, which shall all of them be enquired into. But beyond what tends directly unto the Guidance of the Minds, and satisfaction of the Souls of Men, who seek after a stable and abiding foundation of Acceptance with God, we are not easily to be drawn, unless we are free to lose the Benefit and Comfort of this most important Evangelical Truth, in needless and unprofitable contentions. And amongst many other miscarriages which men are subject unto whilst they are conversant about these things, this in an especial manner is to be avoided.

1. For the Doctrine of Justification is directive of Christian Practice, and in no other Evangelical Truth is the whole of our Obedience more concerned; For the Foundation, Reasons and Motives of all our Duty towards God are contained therein: Wherefore in order unto the due improvement of them, ought it to be taught and not otherwise. That which alone we aim (or ought so to do) to learn in it and by it, is how we may get and maintain peace with God, and so to live unto him, as to be accepted with him in what we do. To satisfy the Minds and Consciences of men in these things, is this Doctrine to be taught. Wherefore to carry it out of the understandings of ordinary Christians by speculative notions and distinctions is disserviceable unto the Faith of the Church. Yea the mixing of *Evangelical Revelations* with *Philosophical Notions* hath been in sundry Ages the Poison of Religion. Pretence of accuracy and artificial skill in Teaching, is that which giveth countenance unto such a way of handling sacred things. But the *Spiritual Amplitude* of Divine Truths is restrained hereby, whilst low mean *Philosophical* senses are imposed on them. And not only so, but endless Divisions and Contentions are occasioned and perpetuated;

## 6 *General Considerations previously necessary*

tuated. Hence when any Difference in Religion is, in the pursuit of Controversies about it, brought into the field of *Metaphysical Respects* and *Philosophical* terms whereof there is *πελὸς νόμος ἔνθα καὶ ἔνθα*, sufficient provision for the supply of the Combatants on both sides, the truth for the most part, as unto any concernment of the souls of men therein, is utterly lost, and buried in the rubbish of senseless and unprofitable words. And thus in particular, those who seem to be well enough agreed in the whole Doctrine of *Justification*, so far as the Scripture goeth before them, and the Experience of Believers keeps them company, when once they ingage into their *Philosophical* Definitions and Distinctions, are at such an irreconcilable variance among themselves, as if they were agreed on no one thing that doth concern it. For as men have various apprehensions in coining such Definitions as may be defensible against Objections, which most men aim at therein: So no *Proposition* can be so plain (at least in *materia probabilis*) but that a man ordinarily versed in *Pedagogical Terms* and *Metaphysical Notions*, may multiply Distinctions on every word of it.

8. Hence there hath been a pretence and appearance of *twenty several Opinions* among Protestants about Justification, as *Bellarmino* and *Vasquez*, and others of the Papists charge it against them out of *Oslander*, when the Faith of them all was one and the same, *Bellar. lib. 5. cap. 1. Vasq. in 1. 2. Quest. 113. disp. 202.* whereof we shall speak elsewhere. When men are once advanced into that field of Disputation, which is all overgrown with thorns of subtilties, perplexed notions, and futilous terms of Art, they consider principally how they may entangle others in it, scarce at all how they may get out of it themselves. And in this posture they oftentimes utterly forget the business which they are about, especially in this matter of *Justification*; namely how a guilty Sinner may come to obtain Favour and Acceptance with God. And

not only so, but I doubt they oftentimes dispute themselves beyond what they can well abide by, when they return home unto a sedate meditation of the state of things between God and their own souls. And I cannot much value their notions and sentiments of this matter, who object and answer themselves out of a sense of their own Appearance before God, much less of theirs who evidence an open inconformity unto the Grace and truth of this Doctrine in their hearts and lives.

9. Wherefore we do but trouble the faith of Christians and the peace of the true Church of God, whilst we dispute about Expressions, Terms and Notions, when the substance of the Doctrine intended, may be declared and believed, without the knowledge, understanding, or use of any of them. Such are all those in whose subtile management the captious Art of wrangling doth principally consist. A diligent Attendance unto the Revelation made hereof in the Scripture, and an examination of our own experience thereby, is the Sum of what is required of us for the right understanding of the truth herein. And every true Believer who is *taught of God*, knows how to put his whole trust in Christ alone, and the Grace of God by him, for Mercy, Righteousness and Glory, and not at all concern himself with those loads of thorns and briars, which under the names of Definitions, Distinctions, accurate Notions, in a number of Exotick, Pædagogical and Philosophical terms, some pretend to accommodate them withall.

10. The Holy Ghost in expressing the most eminent Acts in our Justification, especially as unto our Believing, or the acting of that faith whereby we are justified, is pleased to make use of many *Metaphorical Expressions*. For any to use them now in the same way, and to the same purpose, is esteemed rude, undisciplinary, and even ridiculous, but on what Grounds? He that shall deny, that there is more spiritual sense and experience conveyed by them into the hearts  
and

## 8 *General Considerations previously necessary*

and minds of Believers, (which is the life and soul of teaching things practical) than in the most accurate *Philosophical* expressions, is himself really ignorant of the whole Truth in this matter. The Propriety of such Expressions belongs, and is confined unto natural science; but spiritual Truths are to be taught not in *the words which mans wisdom teacheth*, but *which the Holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spiritual things with spiritual*. God is wiser then man; and the Holy Ghost knows better what are the most expedient ways for the Illumination of our minds with that knowledge of Evangelical Truths, which it is our Duty to have and attain, then the wisest of us all. And other knowledge of, or skill in these things, then what is required of us in a way of Duty, is not to be valued.

It is therefore to no purpose to handle the mysteries of the Gospel, as if *Holcot* and *Bricot*, *Thomas* and *Gabriel*, with all the *Sententiarists*, *Summists*, and *Quodlibetarians* of the old *Roman Peripatetical School*, were to be raked out of their Graves to be our guides. Especially will they be of no use unto us, in this Doctrine of *Justification*. For whereas they pertinaciously adhered unto the Philosophy of *Aristotle*, who knew nothing of any Righteousness, but what is an *habit* inherent in our selves, and the Acts of it, they wrested the whole Doctrine of *Justification* unto a compliance therewithall. So *Pighius* himself complained of them, *Controv. 2. Dissimulare non possumus, hanc vel primam doctrinæ Christianæ partem ( de Justificatione ) obscuratam magis quam illustratam a scholasticis, spinosis plerisq; questionibus, & definitionibus, secundum quas nonnulli magno supercilio primam in omnibus autoritatem arrogantes, &c.*

Secondly, A due consideration of him with whom in this matter we have to do, and that immediately, is necessary unto a right stating of our thoughts about it. The Scripture expresseth it emphatically, that it is *God that justifieth, Rom. 8.*

33. And he assumes it unto himself as his Prerogative, to do what belongs thereunto. *I, even I am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins,* Isa. 43. 25. And it is hard in my Apprehension, to suggest unto him, any other reason or consideration of the pardon of our sins; seeing he hath taken it on him to do it for his own sake, that is, for the *Lords sake*, Dan. 9. 17. in whom *all the seed of Israel are justified*, Isa. 45. 25. *In his sight*, before his Tribunal it is, that men are justified or condemned, *Psal. 143. 2. Enter not into Judgement with thy servant; for in THY SIGHT shall no man living be justified.* And the whole work of Justification, with all that belongeth thereunto, is represented after the manner of a *Juridical* proceeding before Gods Tribunal, as we shall see afterwards. Therefore saith the Apostle, *by the deeds of the Law shall no flesh be justified in his sight*; Rom. 3. 20. However any may be justified in the sight of Men or Angels by their own Obedience or Deeds of the Law, yet in *His Sight* none can be so.

Necessary it is unto any man who is to come unto a Trial, in the sentence whereof he is greatly concern'd, duely to consider the *Judge* before whom he is to appear, and by whom his cause is finally to be determined. And if we manage our Disputes about *Justification* without a continual regard unto *Him*, by whom we must be cast or acquitted, we shall not rightly apprehend what our *Plea* ought to be. Wherefore the Greatness, the Majesty, the Holiness, and Sovereign Authority of God, are always to be present with us in a due sense of them, when we enquire how we may be justified before him. Yet is it hard to discern how the minds of some men are influenced by the consideration of these things, in their fierce contests for the Interest of their own works in their Justification; *precibus aut precio ut in aliqua parte hereant.* But the Scripture doth represent unto us what thoughts of him, and of themselves, not only *Sinners*,

## 10 *General Considerations previously necessary*

but *Saints* also, have had, and cannot but have upon near Discoveries and effectual Conceptions of God and his Greatness. Thoughts hereof ensuing on a sense of the guilt of sin, filled our first Parents with *fear* and *shame*, and put them on that foolish attempt of *hiding themselves* from him. Nor is the wisdom of their posterity one jot better under their Convictions, without a discovery of the Promise. That alone makes sinners wise, which tenders them relief. At present, the Generality of men are secure, and do not much question but that they shall come off well enough one way or other in the *Trial* they are to undergo. And as such persons are altogether indifferent what Doctrine concerning *Justification* is taught and received; so for the most part for themselves, they encline unto that Declaration of it which best suits their own Reason, as influenced with self-conceit, and corrupt Affections. The sum hereof is, that what they cannot do themselves, what is wanting that they may be saved, be it more or less, shall one way or other be made up by Christ, either the use or the abuse of which persuasion is the greatest fountain of sin in the world, next unto the Depravation of our nature. And whatever be, or may be pretended unto the contrary, Persons not convinced of sin, not humbled for it, are in all their Ratiocinations about spiritual things, under the conduct of Principles so vitiated and corrupted. See *Mat.* 18. 3,4. But when God is pleased by any means to manifest his Glory unto sinners, all their prefidences and contrivances do issue in dreadful horror and distress. An account of their Temper is given us *Isa.* 33. 14. *The sinners in Sion are afraid, fearfulness hath surprized the Hypocrites, who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with Everlasting burnings?* Nor is it thus only with some peculiar sort of sinners. The same will be the Thoughts of all guilty persons at some time or another. For those who through sensuality, security, or superstition, do  
hide

hide themselves from the vexation of them in this world, will not fail to meet with them when their Terrour shall be encreased, and become remediless. *Our God is a consuming fire*; and men will one day find, how vain it is to set their Briars and Thorns against him in battle array. And we may see what extravagant contrivances convinced sinners will put themselves upon, under any real view of the Majesty and Holiness of God; *Micah 6. 6, 7. Wkerewith (saith one of them) shall I come before the Lord, and bow my self before the high God? shall I come before him with Burnt-offerings, with Calves of a year old? will the Lord be pleased with thousands of Rams, or with ten thousands of Rivers of Oyl? shall I give my first born for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my Soul.* Neither shall I ever think them meet to be contended withall about the Doctrine of Justification, who take no notice of these things, but rather despise them.

This is the proper effect of the Conviction of sin, strengthened and sharpened with the consideration of the Terrour of the Lord, who is to judge concerning it. And this is that which in the *Papacy* meeting with an *Ignorance of the Righteousness of God*, hath produced innumerable superstitious Inventions for the appeasing of the Consciences of men, who by any means fall under the Disquietments of such Convictions. For they quickly see that none of the Obedience which God requireth of them, as it is performed by them, will justifie them before this high and holy God. Wherefore they seek for shelter in contrivances about things that he hath not commanded, to try if they can put a cheat upon their Consciences, and find relief in Diversions.

Nor is it thus only with *profligate sinners* upon their Convictions; but the best of men, when they have had near and efficacious Representations of the Greatness, Holiness, and Glory of God, have been cast into the deepest self-abasement, and most serious Renunciations of all trust or confidence

## 12 *General Considerations previously necessary*

dence in themselves. So the Prophet *Isaiab* upon his vision of the Glory of the Holy One, cried out, *Woe is me, I am undone, because I am a man of unclean lips, chap. 6. 5.* nor was he relieved but by an Evidence of the free pardon of sin, *ver. 7.* So Holy *Job* in all his contests with his Friends who charged him with *Hypocrisie*, and his being a sinner guilty in a peculiar manner above other men, with assured confidence and perseverance therein justified his sincerity, his Faith and Trust in God, against their whole charge and every parcel of it. And this he doth with such a full satisfaction of his own Integrity, as that not only he insists at large on his vindication, but frequently appeals unto God himself, as unto the Truth of his Plea. For he directly pursues that counsel with great Assurance which the Apostle *James* so long after gives unto all Believers, nor is the Doctrine of that Apostle more eminently exemplified in any one instance throughout the whole Scripture then in him. For he sheweth his Faith by his works, and pleads his Justification thereby. As *Job* Justified himself, and was Justified by his *works*, so we allow it the Duty of every Believer to be. His plea for Justification by works, in the sense wherein it is so, was the most noble that ever was in the world, nor was ever any controverſie managed upon a greater occasion.

At length this *Job* is called into the immediate presence of God, to plead his own cause, not now as stated between him and his Friends, whether he were an *Hypocrite* or no, or whether his Faith or Trust in God was sincere, but as it was stated between God and him, wherein he seemed to have made some undue Assumptions on his own behalf. The Question was now reduced unto this; on what Grounds he might or could be *justified in the sight of God?* To prepare his mind unto a right Judgement in this case, God manifests his Glory unto him, and instructs him in the Greatness of His Majesty and Power. And this he doth by a multiplication of Instances,

because under our Temptations we are very slow in admitting right conceptions of God. Here the Holy man quickly acknowledged, that the state of the case was utterly altered. All his former pleas of Faith, Hope, and Trust in God, of sincerity in Obedience, which with so much earnestness he before insisted on, are now quite laid aside. He saw well enough that they were not pleadable at the *Tribunal* before which he now appeared, so that God should enter into Judgment with him thereon, with respect unto his Justification. Wherefore in the deepest *self-abasement* and abhorrency, he betakes himself unto Sovereign Grace and Mercy. For then *Job answered the Lord and said, behold I am vile, what shall I answer thee, I will lay mine hand upon my mouth; once have I spoken, but I will not answer, yea twice, but I will proceed no farther; Job 40. 3, 4, 5.* And again, *Hear I beseech thee and I will speak, I will demand of thee, and declare thou unto me; I have heard of thee by the hearing of the Ear, but now mine Eye seeth thee; wherefore I abhor my self, and repent in dust and ashes, chap. 42. 4, 5, 6.* Let any man place themselves in the Condition wherein now *Job* was, in the immediate presence of God; Let them attend unto what he really speaks unto them in his word, namely, what they will answer unto the Charge that he hath against them, and what will be their best plea before his *Tribunal*, that they may be Justified: I do not believe that any man living hath more encouraging Grounds to plead for an interest in his own Faith and Obedience *in his Justification before God*, than *Job* had; although I suppose he had not so much skill to manage a plea to that purpose with *Scholastick notions and distinctions* as the *Jesuits* have. But however, we may be harassed with subtle Arguments and Solutions, I fear it will not be safe for us to adventure farther upon God than he durst to do.

There was of old a Direction for the visitation of the Sick, composed as they say by *Anselm*, and published by:  
*Cassanus.*

## 14 General Considerations previously necessary

*Casparus Vlenbergius*, which expresseth a better sense of these things then some seem to be convinced of. *Credisne te non posse salvari nisi per mortem Christi? Respondet infirmus, Etiam; tum dicit illi; Age Ergo dum superest in te anima, in hac sola morte fiduciam tuam constitue; in nulla alia re fiduciam habe, huic morti te totum committe, hac sola te totum contege, totum immisce te in hac morte, in hac morte totum te involve. Et si Dominus te voluerit judicare, Dic, Domine, mortem Domini nostri Jesu Christi objicio inter me & tuum Judicium aliter tecum non contendo. Et si tibi dixerit quia peccator es, dic, mortem Domini nostri Jesu Christi pono inter me & peccata mea. Si dixerit tibi quod meruisti damnationem; dic, Domine, mortem Domini nostri Jesu Christi obtendo inter te & mala merita mea, ipsiusq; merita offero pro merito quod ego debuissim habere nec habeo; si dixerit quod tibi est iratus, dic, Domine, mortem Domini Jesu Christi oppono inter me & iram tuam.* That is, *Doſt thou believe that thou canst not be saved but by the death of Christ? The sick man answereth, yes; then let it be said unto him; Go to then, and whilst thy Soul abideth in thee, put all thy confidence in this death alone, place thy trust in no other thing, commit thy self wholly to this Death, cover thy self wholly with this alone, cast thy self wholly on this Death, wrap thy self wholly in this Death. And if God would judge thee, say, Lord, I place the Death of our Lord Jesus Christ between me and thy judgment; and otherwise I will not contend, or enter into Judgment with thee. And if he shall say unto thee, that thou art a sinner, say, I place the Death of our Lord Jesus Christ between me and my sins. If he shall say unto thee, that thou hast deserved damnation; say, Lord, I put the Death of our Lord Jesus Christ between thee and all my sins; and I offer his merits for my own which I should have, and have not. If he say that he is angry with thee, say, Lord, I place the Death of our Lord Jesus Christ between me and thy Anger.* Those who gave these Directions, seem to have been sensible of what it is to

appear before the Tribunal of God; and how unsafe it will be for us there to insist on any thing in our selves. Hence are the words of the same *Anselm* in his Meditations. *Conscientia mea meruit damnationem, & penitentia mea non sufficit ad satisfactionem, sed certum est quod misericordia tua superat omnem offensionem.* My Conscience hath deserved damnation, and my Repentance is not sufficient for satisfaction, but most certain it is, that thy mercy aboundeth above all offence. And this seems to me a better Direction then those more lately given by some of the *Roman Church*. Such is the prayer suggested unto a sick man, by *Johan. Polandus* lib. *Methodus in adjuvandis morientibus.* *Domine Jesu, conjunge, obsecro, obsequium meum cum omnibus quæ tu egisti, & passus es ex tam perfecta Charitate & Obedientia. Et cum divitiis satisfactionum & meritorum Dilectionis, Patri æterno illud offerre digneris.* Or that of a greater Author, *Antidot. Animæ*, fol. 17. *Tu hinc o rosea Martyrum turba offer pro me, nunc & in hora mortis meæ, merita fidelitatum, constantiæ, & pretiosi sanguinis, cum sanguine Agni immaculati, pro omnium salute effusi.* *Hierom* long before *Anselm*, spake to the same purpose. *Cum dies Judicij aut dormitionis advenerit, omnes manus dissolventur; quibus dicitur in alio loco confortamini manus dissolutæ; dissolventur autem manus quia nullum opus dignum Dei justitia reperitur, & non justificabitur in conspectu ejus omnis vivens, unde Propheta dicit in Psalmo, si iniquitates attendas Domine, quis sustinebit,* lib. 6. in *Isa.* in cap. 13. v. 6, 7. *When the day of Judgement, or of Death, shall come, all hands will be dissolved (that is, faint or fall down) unto which it is said in another place, be strengthened ye hands that hang down. But all hands shall be melted down, (that is, all mens strength and confidence shall fail them) because no works shall be found which can answer the Righteousness of God; for no flesh shall be justified in his sight.* Whence the Prophet says in the *Psalms*, *If thou Lord shouldst mark iniquity, who should stand?* And  
*Ambrose.*

## 16 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*Ambrose* to the same purpose, *Nemo ergo sibi arroget, nemo de meritis gloriatur, nemo de potestate se jactet, omnes speremus per Dominum Jesum misericordiam invenire, quoniam omnes ante Tribunal ejus stabimus, de illo veniam, de illo indulgentiam postulabo, quam spes alia peccatoribus,* in *Psal. 119. Resh.* Let no man arrogate any thing unto himself, let no man glory in his own merits or good deeds, let no man boast of his power, let us all hope to find mercy by our Lord Jesus, for we shall all stand before his Judgment-seat. Of him will I beg pardon, of him will I desire Indulgence, what other hope is there for sinners?

Wherefore if men will be turned off from a continual regard unto the Greatness, Holiness, and Majesty of God, by their Inventions in the Heat of Disputation, if they do forget a Reverential Consideration of what will become them, and what they may betake themselves unto, when they stand before his Tribunal, they may ingage into such apprehensions, as they dare not abide by in their own personal Trial. For how shall man be just with God? Hence it hath been observed, that the *School-men* themselves in their Meditations and Devotional writings, wherein they had immediate thoughts of God with whom they had to do, did speak quite another Language as to Justification before God, then they do in their wrangling Philosophical fiery Disputes about it. And I had rather learn what some men really judge about their own Justification from their prayers, then their writings. Nor do I remember, that I did ever hear any good man in his prayers, use any expressions about Justification, pardon of sin, and Righteousness before God, wherein any plea from any thing in our selves was introduced or made use of. The Prayer of *Daniel* hath in this matter been the substance of their Supplications. *O Lord! Righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces; we do not present our Supplications before thee for our own Righteousness, but for thy great mercies, O Lord hear, O Lord forgive, for thine own sake O my God,*

God, Dan. 9. 7, 18, 19. Or that of the Psalmist, *Enter not into Judgement with thy servant O Lord, for in thy sight shall no man living be justified*, Psal. 143. 2. Or, *If thou Lord mark Iniquity, Lord who shall stand; but there is forgiveness with thee that thou maist be feared*, Psal. 130. 2,3,4. On which words, the Exposition of *Austin* is remarkable, speaking of *David*, and applying it unto himself. *Ecce clamat sub moli-bus iniquitatum suarum. Circumspexit se, circumspexit vitam suam, vidit illam undiq; flagitiis coopertam, quacunq; respexit, nihil in se boni invenit: Et cum tanta & tam multa peccata undiq; videret, tanquam expavescens, exclamavit, si iniquitates observaris Domine, quis sustinebit? vidit enim prope totam vitam humanam circumlatrari peccatis; accusari omnes conscientias cogitationibus suis, non inveniri* Cor Castum præsumens de justitia, quod quia inveniri non potest, præsumat ergo omnium Cor de misericordia Domini Dei sui, & dicat Deo, si iniquitates observaris Domine, Domine quis sustinebit? *Quæ autem est spes? quoniam apud te propitiatio est.* And whereas we may and ought to represent unto God in our Supplications our Faith, or what it is that we believe herein, I much question, whether some men can find in their hearts to pray over and plead before him, all the Arguments and Distinctions they make use of to prove the interest of our Works and Obedience in our Justification before him, or enter into Judgement with him upon the conclusions which they make from them. Nor will many be satisfied to make use of that Prayer which *Pelagius* taught the *Widow*, as it was objected to him in the *Diaspoltan Synod*. *Tu nosti Domine quam sanctæ, quam innocentes, quam puræ ab omni fraude & rapina quas ad te expando manus; quam justæ, quam immaculata labia & ab omni mendacio libera, quibus tibi ut mihi miserearis preces fundo.* Thou knowest, O Lord, how holy, how innocent, how pure from all deceit and rapine are the hands which I stretch forth unto thee; how just, how unspotted with evil, how free from lying are those lips wherewith I pour

## 18 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*forth prayers unto thee, that thou wouldst have mercy on me.* And yet although he taught her so to plead her own purity, innocency and righteousness before God, yet he doth it not, as those whereon she might be absolutely justified, but only as the condition of her obtaining mercy. Nor have I observed that any publick *Liturgies* (the *Mass-Book* only excepted, wherein there is a frequent recourse unto the merits and intercession of Saints) do guide men in their prayers before God to plead any thing for their acceptance with him, or as the means or condition thereof, but Grace, Mercy, the Righteousness and Blood of Christ alone.

Wherefore I cannot but judge it best, (others may think of it as they please) for those who would teach or learn the *Doctrine of Justification* in a due manner, to place their Consciences in the presence of God, and their Persons before his Tribunal, and then upon a due consideration of his Greatness, Power, Majesty, Righteousness, Holiness, of the terror of his Glory, and Sovereign Authority, to enquire what the Scripture, and a sense of their own Condition directs them unto as their Relief and Refuge, and what Plea it becomes them to make for themselves. Secret thoughts of God and our selves, retired meditations, the conduct of the spirit in humble supplications, Death-bed preparations for an immediate appearance before God, Faith and Love in exercise on Christ, speak other things for the most part, then many contend for.

3. *A clear apprehension and due sense of the Greatness of our Apostasie from God, of the Depravation of our Natures thereby, of the Power and Guilt of Sin, of the Holiness and Severity of the Law,* are necessary unto a right apprehension of the *Doctrine of Justification*. Therefore unto the Declaration of it doth the Apostle premise a large Discourse throughly to convince the minds of all that seek to be justified, with a sense of these things, *Rom. 1. 2, 3.* The Rules which he hath given  
us,

us, the Method which he prescribeth, and the Ends which he designeth, are those which we shall chuse to follow. And, He layeth it down in general, *That the Righteousness of God is revealed from Faith to Faith and that the Just shall live by Faith*; chap. I. 17. But he declares not in particular the causes, nature, and way of our Justification, until he hath fully evinced that all men are shut up under this state of sin, and manifested how deplorable their Condition is thereby. And in the Ignorance of these things, in the denying or palliating of them, lyeth the foundation of all mis-belief about the Grace of God. *Pelagianism* in its first Root, and all its present Branches, is resolved thereinto. For not apprehending the dread of our *Original Apostacy* from God, nor the consequents of it in the universal Depravation of our Nature, they disown any necessity either of the *Satisfaction of Christ*, or the *Efficacy of Divine Grace* for our Recovery or Restauration. So upon the matter the principal Ends of the Mission both of the Son of God, and of the Holy Spirit, are renounced; which issues in the denial of the Deity of the one and the Personality of the other. The *Fall* which we had being not great, and the *Disease* contracted thereby being easily curable, and there being little or no evil in these things which are now *unavoidable* unto our nature, it is no great matter to be freed or justified from all, by a meer act of *Favour* on our own Endeavours; nor is the Efficacious Grace of God any way needful unto our Sanctification and Obedience, as these men suppose.

Where these or the like conceits are admitted, and the minds of men by them kept off from a due apprehension of the State and Guilt of sin, and their Consciences from being affected with the terrour of the Lord and curse of the Law thereon; Justification is a notion to be dealt withall pleasantly or subtilly as men see occasion. And hence arise the Differences about it at present, I mean those which are really

## 20. *General Considerations previously necessary*

such, and not meerly the different ways whereby Learned men express their thoughts and apprehensions concerning it.

By some the Imputation of the actual Apostasie and Transgression of *Adam* the head of our nature, whereby his sin became the sin of the world, is utterly denied. Hereby both the ground the Apostle proceedeth on, in evincing the necessity of our Justification, or our being made Righteous by the *Obedience of another*, and all the Arguments brought in the Confirmation of the Doctrine of it, in the fifth Chapter of his Epistle to the *Romans* are evaded and overthrown. *Socinus de Servator. par. 4. cap. 6.* confesseth that place to give great countenance unto the Doctrine of Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. And therefore he sets himself to oppose with sundry *Artifices* the *Imputation of the sin of Adam* unto his natural posterity. For he perceived well enough that upon the Admission thereof, the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto his *spiritual seed*, would unavoidably follow according unto the Tenour of the Apostles Discourse.

Some deny the *Depravation and Corruption* of our Nature which ensued on our Apostasie from God, and the loss of his Image. Or if they do not absolutely deny it, yet they so *extenuate* it as to render it a matter of no great concern unto us. Some *Disease and Distemper* of the Soul they will acknowledge, arising from the disorder of our Affections, whereby we are apt to receive in such vitious habits and customs, as are in practice in the world. And as the Guilt hereof is not much, so the danger of it is not great. And as for any spiritual filth or stain of our nature that is in it, it is clear washed away from all by Baptism. That *Deformity* of Soul which came upon us in the loss of the Image of God, wherein the Beauty and Harmony of all our faculties in all their Actings in order unto their utmost End, did consist;

sist; That *Enmity* unto God even in the mind which ensued thereon that *Darkness* which our Understandings were clouded yea blinded withall; the *Spiritual Death* which passed on the whole Soul, and total *Alienation* from the life of God; that *Impotency* unto Good, that *Inclination* unto Evil, that *Deceitfulness* of sin, that *Power* and *Efficacy* of corrupt Lusts, which the Scripture and Experience so fully charge on the state of lost Nature, are rejected as empty Notions or Fables. No wonder if such Persons look upon *Imputed Righteousness* as the *shadow of a Dream*, who esteem those things which evidence its necessity, to be but fond imaginations. And small hope is there to bring such men to value the Righteousness of Christ, as *imputed* to them, who are so unacquainted with their own unrighteousness *inherent* in them. Until men know themselves better, they will care very little to know Christ at all.

Against such as these the *Doctrine of Justification* may be defended, as we are obliged to contend for the Faith once delivered unto the Saints, and as the mouths of Gainsayers are to be stopped. But to endeavour their satisfaction in it, whilst they are under the power of such apprehensions is a vain Attempt. As our Saviour said unto them unto whom he had declared the necessity of *Regeneration*; *if I have told you Earthly things and you believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you heavenly things?* so may we say, if men will not believe those things, whereof it would be marvellous, but that the Reason of it is known, that they have not an undeniable Evidence and Experience in themselves, how can they believe those Heavenly mysteries which respect a supposition of that within themselves, which they will not acknowledge.

Hence some are so far from any concernment in a *perfect Righteousness* to be imputed unto them, as that they boast of a *perfection* in themselves. So did the *Pelagians* of old, glory of a sinless perfection in the sight of God, even when they  
 were

## 22 *General Considerations previously necessary*

were convinced of sinful miscarriages in the sight of men, as they are charged by *Hierom, lib. 2. Dialog.* and by *Austin. lib. 2. contra Julian. cap. 8.* Such persons are not *Subiecta capacia auditionis Evangelicæ.* Whilst men have no sense in their own Hearts and Consciences of the spiritual disorder of their Souls, of the secret continual actings of sin with deceit and violence, obstructing all that is good, promoting all that is evil, defiling all that is done by them through the lusting of the Flesh against the Spirit as contrary unto it, though no *outward perpetration of sin* nor actual omission of Duty do ensue thereon; who are not engaged in a constant watchful conflict against the first motions of sin, unto whom they are not the greatest burden and sorrow in this life, causing them to cry out for deliverance from them; who can despise those who make acknowledgments in their confession unto God, of their sense of these things, with the Guilt wherewith they are accompanied, will with an assured confidence reject and contemn what is offered about Justification through the Obedience and Righteousness of Christ imputed to us. For no man will be so fond as to be solicitous of a *Righteousness* that is not his own, who hath at home in a readiness that which is his own, which will serve his turn. It is therefore the ignorance of these things alone, that can delude men into an apprehension of their Justification before God by their own personal Righteousness. For if they were acquainted with them, they would quickly discern such an imperfection in the best of their Duties, such a frequency of sinful irregularities in their Minds, and disorders in their Affections, such an unsuitableness in all that they are and do, from the inward frames of their Hearts unto all their outward actions, unto the Greatness and Holiness of God, as would abate their confidence in placing any Trust in their own Righteousness for their Justification.

By means of these and the like presumptuous conceptions  
of

of unenlightened minds, the Consciences of men are kept off from being affected with a due sense of sin, and a serious consideration how they may obtain acceptance before God. Neither the consideration of the Holiness or *Terrour of the Lord*; nor the severity of the Law as it indispensibly requireth a Righteousness in compliance with its commands; nor the promise of the Gospel declaring and tending a Righteousness, the Righteousness of God in answer thereunto; nor the uncertainty of their own minds upon Trials and Surprizals, as having no *stable ground of Peace* to Anchor on; nor the constant secret disquietment of their Consciences, if not seared or hardened through the deceitfulness of sin; can prevail with them whose thoughts are prepossessed with such slight conceptions of the state and guilt of sin, to *fly for Refuge* unto the only hope that is set before them, or really and distinctly to comport with the only way of Deliverance and Salvation.

Wherefore if we would either teach or learn the *Doctrine of Justification* in a due manner, a clear apprehension of the Greatness of our Apostasie from God, a due sense of the Guilt of sin, a deep Experience of its power, all with respect unto the *Holiness and Law of God*, are necessary unto us. We have nothing to do in this matter with men who through the Feavor of Pride have lost the Understanding of their own miserable condition. For, *Natura sic apparet vitiosa ut hoc majoris vitij sit non videre*, Austin. The whole need not the Physician but the sick. Those who are *pricked unto the Heart* for sin, and cry out what shall we do to be saved, will understand what we have to say. Against others we must defend the Truth as God shall enable. And it may be made good by all sorts of Instances; That as men *rise* in their notions about the extenuation of sin, so they *fall* in their regard unto the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. And it is no less true also on the other hand, as Unbelief worketh in men a disesteem of the Person and Righteousness of Christ, they

## 24 *General Considerations previously necessary*

they are cast inevitably to seek for countenance unto their own Consciences, in the extenuation of sin. So insensibly are the minds of men diverted from Christ and seduced to place their confidence in themselves. Some confused respect they have unto him, as a Relief they know not how nor wherein; but they live in that pretended height of humane Wisdom, *to trust to themselves.* So they are instructed to do by the best of the Philosophers. *Unum bonum est, quod beate vite causa & firmamentum est, tibi fidere.* Senec. Epist. 31. Hence also is the internal *sanctifying Grace* of God among many equally despised with the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. The sum of their Faith, and of their Arguments in the confirmation of it, is given by the Learned Roman Oratour and Philosopher. *Virtutem (faith he) nemo unquam Deo acceptam retulit; nimirum recte. Propter virtutem enim jure laudamur, & in virtute recte gloriamur, quod non contingeret, si donum a Deo, non a nobis haberemus.* Tull. de nat. Deor.

4. *The opposition that the Scripture makes between Grace and Works in general, with the Exclusion of the one and the Assertion of the other in our Justification, deserves a previous consideration.* The opposition intended is not made between Grace and Works or our own Obedience, as unto their Essence, Nature and Consistency in the order and method of our Salvation but only with respect unto our Justification. I do not design herein to plead any particular Testimonies of Scripture, as unto their especial sense or declaration of the mind of the Holy Ghost in them, which will afterwards be with some Diligence enquired into; but only to take a view which way the *Eye of the Scripture* guides our Apprehensions, and what compliance there is in our own Experience with that Guidance.

The Principal seat of this Doctrine, as will be confessed by all, is in the *Epistles of Paul* unto the *Romans* and *Galatians*,

tians, whereunto that also of the *Hebrews* may be added. But in that unto the *Romans* it is most eminently declared. For therein is it handled by the Apostle *ex professo*, at large, and that both Doctrinally, and in the way of *controversie* with them by whom the Truth was opposed. And it is worth our consideration what process he makes towards the Declaration of it, and what principles he proceeds upon therein.

I. He lays it down as the fundamental maxime which he would proceed upon, or as a general *Thesis* including the substance of what he designed to explain and prove, that, in the Gospel the *Righteousness of God is revealed from Faith to Faith, as it is written the Just shall live by Faith*, chap. 1. 17. All sorts of men who had any knowledge of God and themselves were then, as they must be always, enquiring, and in one Degree or other labouring after *Righteousness*. For this they looked on, and that justly, as the only means of an Advantagious Relation between God and themselves. Neither had the Generality of men any other thoughts, but that this *Righteousness* must be their own, inherent in them, and performed by them, as *Rom.* 10. 3. For as this is the Language of a *natural Conscience*, and of *the Law*, and suited unto all *Philosophical notions* concerning the nature of *Righteousness*; so whatever Testimony was given of another kind in the *Law* and the *Prophets*, (as such a Testimony is given unto a *Righteousness of God* without the *Law*, chap. 3. 21.) there was a *Veil upon it* as to the understanding of all sorts of men. As therefore *Righteousness* is that which all men seek after, and cannot but seek after who design or desire Acceptance with God, so it is in vain to enquire of the *Law*, of a *natural Conscience*, of *Philosophical Reason*, after any *Righteousness* but what consists in inherent Habits and Acts of our own. Neither *Law*, nor *natural Conscience*, nor *Reason*, do know any other. But in opposition unto this *Righteousness of our own*, and the necessity thereof, testi-

fied unto by the Law in its Primitive constitution, by the natural Light of Conscience, and the apprehension of the nature of things by Reason, the Apostle declares, that in the Gospel there is *revealed another Righteousness*, which is also the Righteousness of another, the *Righteousness of God*, and that from Faith to Faith. For not only is the Righteousness it self revealed aliene from those other Principles, but also the manner of our Participation of it, or its Communication unto us from Faith to Faith, ( the Faith of God in the Revelation, and our Faith in the Acceptation of it, being only here concerned ) is an eminent Revelation. Righteousness of all things should rather seem to be from *Works unto Works*, from the Work of Grace in us, to the Works of Obedience done by us, as the Papists affirm. No saith the Apostle, it is *from Faith to Faith*, whereof afterwards.

This is the general *Thesis* the Apostle proposeth unto Confirmation, and he seems therein to exclude from Justification every thing but the Righteousness of God and the Faith of Believers. And to this purpose he considers all Persons that did or might pretend unto Righteousness or seek after it, and all ways and means whereby they hoped to attain unto it, or whereby it might most probably be obtained, declaring the failing of all persons, and the insufficiency of all means as unto them, for the obtaining a Righteousness of our own before God. And as unto Persons,

1. He considers the *Gentiles* with all their notions of God, their Practice in Religious Worship, with their Conversation thereon. And from the whole of what might be observed amongst them, he concludes that they neither were, nor could be *justified before God*, but that they were all, and that most deservedly, obnoxious unto the sentence of Death. And whatever men may discourse concerning the Justification and Salvation of any, without the Revelation of the Righteousness of God by the Gospel *from Faith to Faith*, it is expressly

preſly contradictory to his whole Diſcourſe, *chap. 1.* from *ver. 19.* to the End.

2. He conſiders the *Jews* who enjoyed the *written Law*, and the Priviledges wherewith it was accompanied, eſpecially that of *Circumciſion*, which was the outward Seal of Gods Covenant. And on many Conſiderations, with many Arguments, he excludes them alſo from any poſſibility of attaining Juſtification before God by any of the Priviledges they enjoyed, or their own compliance therewithall, *chap. 2.* And both ſorts he excludes diſtinctly from this priviledge of Righteouſneſs before God, with this one Argument, That both of them ſinned openly againſt that which they took for the Rule of their Righteouſneſs, namely, the *Gentiles* againſt the Light of Nature, and the *Jews* againſt the Law, whence it inevitably follows, that none of them could attain unto the Righteouſneſs of their own Rule. But he proceeds farther unto that which is common to them all. And,

3. He proves the ſame againſt all ſorts of Perſons whether *Jews* or *Gentiles*, from the conſideration of the univerſal deprivation of nature in them all, and the horrible effects that neceſſarily enſue thereon in the Hearts and Lives of men, *chap. 3.* So evidencing, That as they all were, ſo it could not fall out but that all muſt be ſhut up under ſin, and come ſhort of Righteouſneſs. So from Perſons he proceeds to Things or Means of Righteouſneſs. And,

4. Becauſe the *Law* was given of God immediately as the whole and only Rule of our Obedience unto him, and the *works of the Law* are therefore all that is required of us, theſe may be pleaded with ſome pretence as thoſe whereby we may be juſtified. Wherefore in particular he conſiders the Nature, Uſe, and End of the Law, manifeſting its utter inſufficiency to be a means of our *Juſtification before God*, *chap. 3.* 19, 20.

5. It may be yet objected, That the *Law and its works* may be thus inſufficient as it is obeyed by *Unbelievers* in the

## 28 *General Considerations previously necessary*

state of Nature, without the Aids of Grace administred in the Promise, but with respect unto them who are Regenerate and do believe, whose Faith and Works are accepted with God, it may be otherwise. To obviate this Objection, he giveth an Instance in two of the most eminent Believers under the Old Testament, namely, *Abraham* and *David*, declaring that all Works whatever were excluded in and from their Justification, *chap. 4.*

On these Principles, and by this Gradation he peremptorily concludes, That all and every one of the Sons of men, as unto any thing that is in themselves or can be done by them, or be wrought in them, are *guilty before God*, obnoxious unto Death, shut up under sin, and have their mouths so stopped, as to be deprived of all pleas in their own excuse; that they had no Righteousness wherewith to appear before God, and that all the ways and means whence they expected it, were insufficient unto that purpose.

Hereon he proceeds with his Enquiry how men may be delivered from this condition, and come to be justified in the sight of God. And in the Resolution hereof he makes no mention of any thing in themselves, but only *Faith* whereby we receive the Attonement. That whereby we are justified, he saith is the *Righteousness of God* which is by the *Faith of Christ Jesus*, or that we are justified *freely by Grace through the Redemption that is in him*, *chap. 3. 22, 23, 24, 25.* And not content here with this answer unto the enquiry how lost convinced sinners may come to be justified before God, namely, That it is by the *Righteousness of God revealed from Faith to Faith, by Grace, by the blood of Christ*, as he is set forth for a Propitiation; He immediately proceeds unto a positive exclusion of every thing in and of our selves that might pretend unto an Interest herein, as that which is inconsistent with the Righteousness of God as revealed in the Gospel, and witnessed unto by the Law and the Prophets.

How

How contrary their *Scheme of Divinity* is unto this Design of the Apostle, and his management of it, who affirm that *before the Law* men were justified by Obedience unto the Light of Nature, and some particular Revelations made unto them in things of their own especial private concernment; and that *after the giving of the Law* they were so by Obedience unto God according to the Directions thereof, as also that the Heathen might obtain the same benefit in compliance with the Dictates of Reason, cannot be contradicted by any who have not a mind to be contentious.

Answerable unto this Declaration of the mind of the Holy Ghost herein by the Apostle, is the constant Tenour of the Scripture speaking to the same purpose. The *Grace of God*, the *Promise of Mercy*, the *free pardon of Sin*, the *Blood of Christ*, his *Obedience* and the *Righteousness* of God in him, rested in and received by Faith, are every where asserted as the causes and means of our Justification, in opposition unto any thing in our selves so expressed as it useth to express the best of our Obedience and the utmost of our personal Righteousness. Wherever mention is made of the Duties, Obedience, and personal Righteousness of the best of men with respect unto their Justification, they are all renounced by them, and they betake themselves unto Sovereign Grace and Mercy alone. Some places to this purpose may be recounted.

The Foundation of the whole is laid in the first Promise wherein the Destruction of the Work of the Devil by the suffering of the seed of the woman, is proposed as the only Relief for sinners, and only means of the Recovery of the favour of God. *It shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel*, Gen. 3. 15. *Abraham believed in the Lord, and he counted it unto him for Righteousness*, Gen. 15. 6. *And Aaron shall lay both his hands on the Head of the live Goat, and confess over him all the iniquities of the Children of Israel, and all their Transgressions in all their sins, putting them on the head*

### 30 General Considerations previously necessary

of the Goat ; and the Goat shall bear upon him all their Iniquities unto a Land not inhabited, Lev. 16. 21, 22. I will go in the strength of the Lord God, I will make mention of thy Righteousness even of thine only, Psal. 71. 16. If thou Lord shouldst mark Iniquity, O Lord who shall stand ? but there is forgiveness with thee that thou maist be feared, Psal. 130. 3, 4. Enter not into Judgment with thy Servant, for in thy sight shall no man living be justified, Psal. 143. 2. Behold he put no trust in his Servants, and his Angels he charged with folly, how much less on them that dwell in houses of Clay whose foundation is in the dust, Job 4. 18, 19. Fury is not in me ; who would set the Briers and Thorns against me in battel, I would go through them, I would burn them together. Or let him take hold of my strength that he may make peace with me, and he shall make peace with me, Isa. 27. 4, 5. Surely shall one say, in the Lord have I Righteousness and strength, in the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified and Glory, Isa. 45. 24, 25. All we like Sheep have gone astray, we have turned every one to his own way, and the Lord hath laid on him the Iniquity of us all. By his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many, for he shall bear their Iniquities, Isa. 53. 6, 11. For this is his name whereby he shall be called, the Lord our Righteousness, Jer. 23. 6. But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our Righteousnesses are as filthy raggs, Isa. 64. 6. He shall finish the Transgression and make an End of sin, and make Reconciliation for Iniquity, and bring in Everlasting Righteousness, Dan. 9. 24. Unto as many as received him he gave power to become the Sons of God, even to them that believe in his name, Joh. 1. 12. For as Moses lifted up the Serpent in the WilderNESS, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish but have everlasting life, chap. 3. 14, 15. see ver. 16, 17, 18. Be it known therefore unto you Men and Brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins, and by him all that believe are justified from all things from which ye could

could not be justified by the Law of Moses, Acts 13. 38, 39. That they may receive forgiveness of sins and inheritance among them that are sanctified by Faith that is in me, chap. 26. 18. Being justified freely by his Grace, through the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ, whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his Blood, to declare his Righteousness for the Remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God. To declare at this time his Righteousness, that he might be just, and the justifier of him that believeth in Jesus. Where then is Boasting? it is excluded, by what Law? of Works; nay but by the Law of Faith. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by Faith without the deeds of the Law, Rom. 3. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28. For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to Glory, but not before God; For what saith the Scripture, Abraham believed God and it was counted unto him for Righteousness; now to him that worketh is the Reward, not reckoned of Grace but of Debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his Faith is counted for Righteousness. Even as David also describeth the Blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth Righteousness without works, saying, Blessed are those whose Iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered; Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord will not impute sin, Rom. 4. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8. But not as the offence, so also is the free Gift; for if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the Grace of God, and the Gift by Grace, which is by one man Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the Gift; for the judgment was by one to Condemnation: but the free Gift is of many offences unto Justification. For if by one mans offence Death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of Grace, and of the Gift of Righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ. Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men unto condemnation, even so by the Righteousness of one, the free Gift came upon all men unto Justification

## 32 General Considerations previously necessary

tion of life. For as by one mans Disobedience many were made sinners, so by the Obedience of one shall many be made righteous, chap. 5. 15, 16, 17, 18, 19. There is therefore no condemnation unto them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh but after the spirit. For the Law of the spirit of Life in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the Law of Sin and Death; and what the Law could not do, in that it's weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh. That the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us, chap. 8. 1, 2, 3, 4. For Christ is the End of the Law for Righteousness unto every one that believeth, chap. 10. 4. And if by Grace, then it is no more of Works, otherwise Grace is no more Grace; but if it be of Works, then it is no more Grace, otherwise Works is no more Works, chap. 11. 6. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us Wisdom and Righteousness, and Sanctification and Redemption, 1 Cor. 1. 30. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him, 2 Cor. 5. 21. Knowing that a man is not justified by the Works of the Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ: even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law: for by the Works of the Law shall no flesh be justified, Gal. 2. 16. But that no man is justified by the Law in the sight of God, is evident. For the just shall live by Faith, and the Law is not of Faith; but the man that doth them shall live in them. Christ hath redeemed us from the Curse of the Law, being made a Curse for us, chap. 3. 11, 12, 13. For by Grace ye are saved through Faith, and that not of your selves, it is the Gift of God. Not of Works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship created in Christ Jesus unto Good Works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them, Ephes. 2. 8, 9, 10. Yea doubtless, and I count all things loss for the Excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord,

for

for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ; and be found in him, not having my own Righteousness which is of the Law, but that which is through the Faith of Christ, the Righteousness which is of God by Faith, Phil. 3. 8, 9. Who hath saved us and called us with an holy calling, not according to our Works, but according unto his own purpose, and Grace which was given us in Christ Jesus before the World began, 2 Tim. 1. 9. That being justified by his Grace, we should be made Heirs according to the hope of Eternal Life, Tit. 3. 7. He hath once appeared in the End of the World to put away sin, Heb. 9. 26, 28. having in himself purged our sins, chap. 1. 3. For by one Offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified, chap. 10. 14. For the Blood of Jesus Christ the Son of God cleanseth us from all sin, 1 Joh. 1. 7. Wherefore unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, and hath made us Kings and Priests unto God and his Father, to him be Glory and Dominion for ever and ever, Amen. Rev. 1. 5, 6.

These are some of the places which at present occur to Remembrance, wherein the Scripture represents unto us the Grounds, Causes, and Reasons of our Acceptation with God. The especial import of many of them, and the Evidence of Truth that is in them will be afterwards considered. Here we take only a general view of them. And every thing in and of our selves under any consideration whatever, seems to be excluded from our Justification before God, Faith alone excepted whereby we receive his Grace and the Attonement. And on the other side, the whole of our Acceptation with Him seems to be assigned unto Grace, Mercy, the Obedience and Blood of Christ; in opposition unto our own Worth and Righteousness, or our own Works and Obedience. And I cannot but suppose that the Soul of a convinced sinner, if not prepossessed with prejudice, will in general not judge amiss whether of these things that are set

### 34 *General Considerations previously necessary*

in opposition one to the other, he should betake himself unto, that he may be justified.

But it is replied, these things are not to be understood absolutely and without Limitations. Sundry *Distinctions* are necessary, that we may come to understand the mind of the Holy Ghost and sense of the Scripture in these Ascriptions unto *Grace*, and Exclusions of the *Law*, our *own Works* and Righteousness from our Justification. For (1) the *Law* is either the *moral* or the *ceremonial* *Law*; the latter indeed is excluded from any place in our *Justification*, but not the former. (2) *Works* required by the *Law* are either wrought *before Faith*, without the Aid of *Grace*; or after believing, by the help of the Holy Ghost. The former are excluded from our Justification, but not the latter. (3) *Works* of Obedience wrought after *Grace* received, may be considered either as *sincere* only, or absolutely *perfect* according to what was originally required in the Covenant of *Works*. Those of the latter sort are excluded from any place in our Justification, but not those of the former. (4) There is a *two-fold Justification* before God in this life; a first and a second, and we must diligently consider with respect unto whether of these *Justifications* any thing is spoken in the Scripture. (5) Justification may be considered either as to its *beginning*; or as unto its *continuation*, and so it hath divers causes under these divers respects. (6) *Works* may be considered either as Meritorious *ex condigno*, so as their merit should arise from their own intrinsic worth, or *ex congruo* only with respect unto the Covenant and promise of God. Those of the first sort are excluded at least from the first Justification; the latter may have place both in the first and second. (7) *Moral Causes* may be of many sorts; *preparatory*, *dispository*, *meritorious*, *conditionally efficient*, or only *sine quibus non*. And we must diligently enquire in what sense, under the Notion of what cause or causes, our *Works* are excluded from our  
Justifi-

Justification, and under what notions they are necessary thereunto. And there is no one of these *Distinctions* but it needs many more to explain it, which accordingly are made use of by Learned men. And so specious a Colour may be put on these things, when warily managed by the Art of Disputation, that very few are able to discern the Ground of them, or what there is of substance in that which is pleaded for; and fewer yet, on whether side the Truth doth lye. But he who is really *convinced of sin*, and being also sensible of what it is to enter into judgement with the Holy God, enquires for *himself* and not for others, how he may come to be accepted with him, will be apt upon the consideration of all these *Distinctions* and *Sub-distinctions* wherewith they are attended, to say to their Authors, *secistis probe, incertior sum multo, quam dudum*. My Enquiry is how I shall come before the Lord, and bow my self before the high God? how shall I escape the wrath to come? what shall I *plead in judgment* before God, that I may be absolved, acquitted, justified? where shall I have a *Righteousness* that will endure a Trial in his presence? If I should be harneſſed with a thousand of these *distinctions*, I am afraid they would prove Thorns and Briars, which he would pass through and consume.

The Enquiry therefore is upon the consideration of the *state* of the Person to be justified before mentioned and described, and the proposal of the Reliefs in our Justification as now expressed; whether it be the wisest and safest course for such a Person seeking to be justified before God, to betake himself absolutely, his whole Trust and Confidence, unto *Sovereign Grace* and the *Mediation of Christ*, or to have some reserve for, or to place some confidence in his own Graces, Duties, Works and Obedience? In putting this great Difference unto *Umpirage*, that we may not be thought to fix on a *partial Arbitrator*, we shall refer it to one of our

### 36 *General Considerations previously necessary*

greatest and most learned Adversaries in this cause. And he positively gives us in his Determination and Resolution in those known words. In this case; *Propter incertitudinem propriae justitiae, & periculum inanis gloriae, Tutissimum est fiduciam totam in sola misericordia Dei & benignitate reponere,* Bellar. de Justificat. lib. 5. cap. 7. prop. 3. *By reason of the uncertainty of our own Righteousness, and the danger of vain Glory, it is the safest course to repose our whole Trust in the mercy and kindness or Grace of God alone.*

And this Determination of this important enquiry, he confirmeth with *two Testimonies* of Scripture, as he might have done it with many more. But those which he thought meet to mention are not impertinent. The first is *Dan. 9. 18. We do not present our Supplications before thee for our Righteousnesses but for thy great mercies.* And the other is that of our Saviour, *Luke 17. 10. When you have done all these things which are commanded you, say We are unprofitable Servants.* And after he hath confirmed his Resolution with sundry Testimonies of the *Fathers*, he closeth his Discourse with this Dilemma, *Either a man hath true merits, or he hath not. If he hath not, he is perniciously deceived ( when he trusteth in any thing but the mercy of God alone ) and seduceth himself, trusting in false merits ; If he hath them he looseth nothing whilst he looks not to them, but trusts in God alone.* So that whether a man have any good works or no, as to his Justification before God, it is best and safest for him, not to have any regard unto them, or put any trust in them. And if this be so, he might have spared all his pains he took in writing his *Sophistical Books* about Justification, whose principal Design is to seduce the minds of men into a contrary opinion. And so, for ought I know, they may spare their labour also without any disadvantage unto the Church of God, or their own Souls, who so earnestly contend for some kind of Interest or other, for our own Duties and Obedience in our Justifi-

Justification before God, seeing it will be found that they place their *own whole Trust* and Confidence in the Grace of God by Jesus Christ alone. For to what purpose do we labour and strive with Endless Disputations, Arguments and Distinctions to prefer our Duties and Obedience unto some office in our Justification before God, if when we have done all we find it the safest course in our own persons to abhor our selves with *Job* in the presence of God, to betake our selves unto Sovereign Grace and Mercy with the *Publican*, and to place all our confidence in them through the Obedience and Blood of Christ.

So died that great *Emperour Charles the fifth*, as *Thuanus* gives the account of his *Novissima*. So he reasoned with himself; *Se quidem indignum esse qui propriis meritis regnum calcularum obtineret; sed Dominum Deum suum qui illud duplici jure obtineat, & Patris hereditate, & Passionis merito, altero contentum esse, alterum sibi donare; ex cujus dono illud sibi merito vendicet, hacq; fiducia fretus minime confundatur; neq; enim oleum misericordiae nisi in vase fiduciae poni; hanc hominis fiduciam esse a se deficientis & innitentis domino suo, alioquin propriis meritis fidere, non fidei esse sed perfidiae; peccata deleri per Dei indulgentiam, ideoq; credere nos debere peccata deleri non posse nisi ab eo cui soli peccavimus, & in quem peccatum non cadit, per quem solum nobis peccata condonentur; That in himself he was altogether unworthy to obtain the Kingdom of Heaven by his own Works or Merits, but that his Lord God who enjoyed it on a double Right or Title, by inheritance of the Father, and the merit of his own passion, was contented with the one himself, and freely granted unto him the other; on whose free grant he laid claim thereunto, and in confidence thereof he should not be confounded; for the Oyl of mercy is poured only into the Vessel of Faith or Trust; that this is the Trust of a man despairing in himself, and resting in his Lord; otherwise to trust unto his own Works or Merits, is not Faith but Treachery; that*

### 38 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*that sins are blotted out by the mercy of God ; and therefore we ought to believe that our sins can be pardoned by him alone against whom alone we have sinned ; with whom there is no sin, and by whom alone sins are forgiven.*

This is the Faith of men when they come to dye, and those who are exercised with Temptations whilst they live. Some are *hardened* in sin, and endeavour to leave this World without thoughts of another. Some are *stupidly* ignorant, who neither know nor consider what it is to appear in the presence of God, and to be judged by him. Some are seduced to place their confidence in *merits, pardons, indulgences,* and future suffrages for the dead. But such as are acquainted with God and themselves in any spiritual manner, who take a view of the time that is past, and approaching Eternity, into which they must enter by the Judgment seat of God, however they may have thought, talked and disputed about *their own works* and Obedience, looking on Christ and his Righteousness only to make up some small defects in themselves, will come at last unto an *universal Renuntiation* of what they have been and are, and betake themselves unto Christ alone for Righteousness or Salvation. And in the whole ensuing Discourse I shall as little as is possible immix my self in any curious *Scholastical disputes.* This is the substance of what is pleaded for, that men should renounce all confidence in themselves, and every thing that may give countenance thereunto ; betaking themselves unto the Grace of God by Christ alone, for Righteousness and Salvation. This God designeth in the Gospel, 1 Cor. I. 29, 30, 31. and herein whatever difficulties we may meet withall in the Explication of some Propositions and Terms that belong unto the Doctrine of Justification, about which men have various *conceptions,* I doubt not of the internal concurrent suffrage of them who know any thing as they ought of God and themselves.

Fifthly, There is in the Scripture represented unto us a

*Com-*

*Commutation* between Christ and Believers, as unto *Sin* and *Righteousness*, that is in the *imputation* of their sins unto *him*, and of his *Righteousness* unto them. In the Improvement and Application hereof unto our own Souls, no small part of the life and exercise of Faith doth consist.

This was taught the Church of God in offering of the *Scape Goat*. And Aaron shall lay his hands on the head of the live Goat, and confess over him all the Iniquities of the Children of Israel, and all their Transgressions in all their Sins, putting them on the head of the Goat; And the Goat shall bear upon him all their Iniquities, Levit. 16. 21, 22. Whether this Goat sent away with this burthen upon him did *live*, and so was a *Type* of the life of Christ in his Resurrection after his Death, or whether he *perished* in the Wilderness being cast down the precipice of a Rock by him that conveyed him away as the *Jews* suppose; it is generally acknowledged, that what was done to him and with him, was only a Representation of what was done really in the Person of Jesus Christ. And Aaron did not only confess the sins of the People over the Goat, but he also put them all on his head, וְוָתַן אֶת־עַל־רוֹשׁ הַשְּׂעִיר *and he shall give them all to be on the head of the Goat*; in answer whereunto it is said that he *bare them* all upon him. This he did by virtue of the divine Institution; wherein was a ratification of what was done. He did not *transfuse* sin from one subject into another, but *transferred* the Guilt of it from one to another. And to evidence this Translation of *sin* from the People unto the Sacrifice in his confession, he put and fixed both his hands on his head. Thence the *Jews* say, that all Israel was made as innocent on the day of Expiation as they were in the day of Creation. From ver. 30. Wherein they came short of perfection or consummation thereby the Apostle declares, Heb. 10. But this is the language of every Expiatory Sacrifice, *quod in ejus caput sit*; let the Guilt be on him. Hence the Sacrifice it self was called.

#### 40 *General Considerations previously necessary*

led חטאה and חטא Sin and Guilt, *Levit. 4. 29. 7. 2. 10. 17.* And therefore where there was an uncertain Murther, and none could be found that was liable to punishment thereon, that Guilt might not come upon the Land, nor the Sin be imputed unto the whole People, an *Heifer* was to be slain by the *Elders* of the City that was next unto the place where the Murder was committed, to take away the Guilt of it, *Deut. 21. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7.* But whereas this was only a moral Representation of the punishment due to Guilt, and no Sacrifice, the Guilty person being not known; those who slew the Heifer did not put their hands on him, so to transfer their own guilt to him, but *washed their hands over him*, to declare their personal innocency. By these means as in all other Expiatory Sacrifices, did God instruct the Church in the *transferring* of the *Guilt of sin*, unto him who was to bear all their Iniquities, with their Discharge and Justification thereby.

So God *laid on Christ the Iniquities of us all*, that by his *Stripes we might be healed*, *Isa. 53. 5, 6.* Our Iniquity was *laid* on him, and he *bare* it, *ver. 11.* and through his bearing of it, we are freed from it. *His Stripes are our healing*, our sin was his, *imputed unto him*, *his merit is ours*, imputed unto us. *He was made sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might become the Righteousness of God in him*, *2 Cor. 5. 21.* This is that *Commutation* I mentioned, He was *made sin for us*, we are *made the Righteousness of God in him*; God *not imputing sin* unto us, *ver. 19.* but *imputing Righteousness* unto us, doth it on this Ground alone, That *he was made sin for us*. And if by his being made sin, only his being made a Sacrifice for sin is intended, it is to the same purpose. For the formal Reason of any thing being made an *Expiatory Sacrifice*, was the Imputation of sin unto it by Divine Institution. The same is expressed by the same Apostle, *Rom. 8. 3, 4.* *God sent his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin condemned sin in the flesh,*

flesh, that the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us. The sin was made his, he answered for it, and the Righteousness which God requireth by the Law is made ours; The Righteousness of the Law is fulfilled in us; not by our doing it, but by his. This is that blessed Change and Commutation wherein alone the Soul of a convinced sinner can find rest and peace. So he hath redeemed us from the Curse of the Law, being made a Curse for us, that the blessing of faithful Abraham might come upon us, Gal. 3. 13, 14. The Curse of the Law contained all that was due to sin; this belonged unto us. But it was transferred on him; He was made a Curse, whereof his hanging on a Tree was the sign and token. Hence he is said to bear all our sins in his own Body upon the Tree, 1 Pet. 1. 24. because his hanging on the Tree was the token of his bearing the Curse. For he that is hanged on the Tree is the Curse of God, Deut. 21. 23. And in the blessing of Faithful Abraham all Righteousness and Acceptation with God is included; for Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness.

But because some, who for Reasons best known unto themselves, do take all occasions to except against my Writings, have in particular raised an impertinent clamour about somewhat that I formerly delivered to this purpose, I shall declare the whole of my Judgment herein, in the words of some of those, whom they can pretend no quarrel against that I know of.

The excellent words of Justin Martyr deserve the first place.

αὐτὸς ἢ ἴδιον υἱὸν ἀπέδοτο λύτρον ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν, ἢ ἄγιον ὑπὲρ ἀνόμων, ἢ ἄκακον ὑπὲρ ἥσυχων, ἢ δίκαιον ὑπὲρ ἥσυχων ἀδίκων, ἢ ἀσθαρτον ὑπὲρ ἥσυχων θνητῶν. τί γὰρ ἄλλο τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν ἠδυνήθη καλύψας ἢ ἐκεῖνος δικαιοσύνη; ἐν τίνι δικαιοσύνην δύνατον πύς ἀνόμους ἡμᾶς ἢ ἀσεβεῖς ἢ ἐν μόνῳ τῷ υἱῷ τοῦ Θεοῦ; ὡς τῆς γλυκείας ἀνταλλαγῆς, ὡς τῆς ἀνεξιχνιάσου θημερησίας, ὡς ἥσυχων ἀσεβοσδοκῆτων ἐνεργησιῶν; ἵνα ἀνομία μὴ πολλῶν ἐν δικαίῳ ἐνὶ κρησῆ, δικαιοσύνη δὲ ἐνὸς πόλλους ἀνόμους δικαιοσύνη.

Epist. ad Diognet. He gave his Son a Ransome for us; the

## 42 General Considerations previously necessary

Holy for Transgressors ; the Innocent for the nocent ; the Just for the unjust ; the Incorruptible for the corrupt ; the Immortal for mortals. For what else could hide or cover our sins but his Righteousness ? in whom else could we wicked and ungodly ones be justified, or esteemed Righteous, but in the Son of God alone ? O SWEET PERMUTATION ; or Change ! O unsearchable Work or curious Operation ! O Blessed Beneficence exceeding all Expectation ! That the Iniquity of many should be hid in one Just one, and the Righteousness of One should justify many Transgressors. And Gregory Nysson speaks to the same purpose. Μεταθεῖς γὰρ πρὸς ἑαυτὸν τὸ ἥθῃ ἡμῶν ἀμαρτιῶν ῥύπον, μετὰ δὲ καὶ μοι τῆς ἑαυτοῦ καθαρότητος ; κοινωθὼν μετὰ τοῦ ἑαυτοῦ χέλλους ἀπεργασάμενος. Orat. 2. in Cant. He hath transferred unto himself the filth of my sins, and communicated unto me his purity, and made me partaker of his Beauty. So Augustine also. Ipse peccatum ut nos justitia, nec nostra sed Dei ; nec in nobis sed in ipso, sicut ipse peccatum non suum sed nostrum, nec in se sed in nobis constitutum. Enchirid. ad Laurent. cap. 41. He was Sin that we might be Righteousness, not our own but the Righteousness of God, not in our selves but in him. As he was Sin not his own but ours ; not in himself but in us. The old Latine Translation rendring those words, Psal. 22. 1. וְכַיִן שָׂאנָהּ Verba delictorum meorum ; He thus comments on the place. Quomodo ergo dicit delictorum meorum ? nisi quia pro delictis nostris ipse precatur ; & delicta nostra, delicta sua fecit, ut justitiam suam nostram justitiam faceret. How, saith he, of my Sins ; because he prayeth for our Sins ; He made our Sins to be his, that he might make his Righteousness to be ours. ὡς τῆς γλυκείας ἀνταλλαγῆς ; O sweet Commutation and Change ! And Chrysostom to the same purpose ; on those words of the Apostle, That we might be made the Righteousness of God in him. Πῶς ταῦτα λόγῳ, πῶς ταῦτα ἔργῳ δύνησεται νῦν ; τὸ γὰρ δίκαιον, φησὶν, ἐποίησεν ἀμαρτωλῶν, ἵνα τὰς ἀμαρτωλῆς ποιήσῃ δίκαιους. μᾶλλον δὲ οὐδὲ ἕτως ἔπεν ; ἀλλὰ ὁ πολλῶν μείζον ἦν ; ἐ γὰρ ἔξεν ἔθνηκεν, ἀλλ' αὐτὴν τὴν ποιότητα. οὐ γὰρ εἶπεν, ἐποίησεν ἀμαρτωλῶν, ἀλλ' ἀμαρτίαν ; οὐχὶ τὸ μὴ ἀμαρτίοντα μόνον, ἀλλ'

ἀλλὰ ἢ μὴδὲ γινόντα ἀμαρτίαν. ἵνα καὶ ἡμεῖς γινώμεθα, ἐκ εἴπε, δίκαιοι, ἀλλὰ δικαιοσύνη, καὶ οὐκ ἀδικαιοσύνη. θεῶν γὰρ ἔστιν αὐτοῖς, ὅταν μὴ ὤξ' ἔργων (ὅταν καὶ κληθεὶς ἀνάγκη τίνα μὴ εὐρηθῆναι) ἀλλ' ἐπὶ χάριτι & δικαιοθῶμεν, ἐνθα πᾶσα ἀμαρτία ἐφραίνεται. in 2 Epist. ad Corinth. cap. 5. Hom. 11. *What word, what speech is this, what mind can comprehend or express it; For he saith he made him who was Righteous to be made a Sinner, that he might make sinners Righteous; nor yet doth he say so neither, but that which is far more sublime and excellent. For he speaks not of an inclination or affection, but expresseth the quality it self. For he says not, he made him a sinner, but sin, that we might be made not meerly Righteous but Righteousness, and that the Righteousness of God, when we are justified not by works, (for if we should, there must be no spot found in them) but by Grace, whereby all sin is blotted out. So Bernard also Epist. 190. ad Innocent. Homo qui debuit, homo qui solvit. Nam si unus, inquit, pro omnibus mortuus est, ergo omnes mortui sunt; ut videlicet satisfactio unius omnibus imputetur, sicut omnium peccata unus ille portavit. Nec alter jam inveniatur qui foras fecit, alter qui satisfecit; quia Caput & Corpus unus est Christus. And many more speak unto the same purpose. Hence Luther before he engaged in the Work of Reformation, in an Epistle to one George Spenlein a Monk, was not afraid to write after this manner; Mi dulcis frater, disce Christum & hunc crucifixum, disce ei cantare, & de teipso desperans dicere ei; Tu Domine Jesu es justitia mea, ego autem sum peccatum tuum; tu assumpsisti meum, & dedisti mihi tuum, assumpsisti quod non eras, & dedisti mihi quod non eram. Ipse suscepit te & peccata tua fecit sua, & suam justitiam fecit tuam; maledictus qui hæc non credit. Epist. An. 1516. Tom. 1.*

If those who shew themselves now so quarrelsome almost about every word that is spoken concerning Christ and his Righteousness, had ever been harrassed in their Consciences about the *Guilt of sin*, as this man was, they would think it no strange matter to speak and write as he did. Yea some

## 44 General Considerations previously necessary

there are who have lived and died in the Communion of the Church of Rome it self that have given their Testimony unto this Truth. So speaks *Taulerus*; *Meditat. vitæ Christ.* cap. 7. *Christus omnia mundi peccata in se recepit, tantumq; pro illis ultro sibi assumpsit dolorem cordis ac si ipse ea perpetrasset.* Christ took upon him all the sins of the World, and willingly underwent that grief of heart for them, as if he himself had committed them. And again speaking in the person of Christ. *Quandoquidem peccatum Adæ multum abire non potest, obsecro te Pater Cælestis, ut ipsum in me vindices. Ego enim omnia illius peccata in me recipio. Si hæc iræ tempestas, propter me orta est, mitte me in mare amarissimæ passionis.* Whereas the great Sin of Adam cannot go away, I beseech thee Heavenly Father punish it in me. For I take all his sins upon my self. If then this Tempest of Anger be risen for me, cast me into the Sea of my most bitter passion. See in the Justification of these Expressions, *Heb. 10. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10.* The Discourse of *Albertus Pighius* to this purpose, though often cited and urged, shall be once again repeated, both for its Worth and Truth, as also to let some men see, how fondly they have pleased themselves in reflecting on some Expressions of mine, as though I had been singular in them. His words are, after others to the same purpose; *Quoniam quidem inquit (Apostolus) Deus erat in Christo, mundum reconcilians sibi, non imputans hominibus sua delicta; Et deposuit apud nos verbum reconciliationis. In illa ergo justificamur coram Deo, non in nobis; non nostra sed illius justitia, quæ nobis cum illo jam communicantibus imputatur. Propriæ justitiæ inopes, extra nos, in illo docemur justitiam querere. Cum, inquit, qui peccatum non noverat, pro nobis peccatum fecit; hoc est, hostiam peccati expiaticem; ut nos efficeremur Justitia Dei in ipso, non nostra, sed Dei justitia justi efficimur in Christo, quo jure? Amicitia, quæ communionem omnium inter amicos facit, juxta vetus & celebratissimum proverbium; Christo insertis, conglutinatis & unitis & sua*

*nostra*

nostra facit, suas divitias nobis communicat, suam justitiam inter Patris judicium & nostram injustitiam interponit, & sub ea veluti sub umbone ac clypeo a divina, quam commervimus, ira nos abscondit, tuetur ac protegit, imo eandem nobis impertit & nostram facit, qua tecti ornatiq; audacter & secure jam divino nos sistamus Tribunali & Judicio: justiq; non solum appareamus, sed etiam simus. Quemadmodum enim unius delicto peccatores nos etiam factos affirmat Apostolus: ita unius Christi justitiam in justificandis nobis omnibus efficacem esse; Et sicut per inobedientiam unius hominis peccatores constituti sunt multi, sic per Obedientiam unius justii (inquit) constituentur multi. Hæc est Christi justitia, ejus Obedientia, qua voluntatem Patris sui perfecit in omnibus; sicut contra nostra injustitia, est nostra inobedientia, & mandatorum Dei prævaricatio. In Christi autem obedientia quod nostra collocatur justitia inde est, quod nobis illi incorporatis, ac si nostra esset, accepta ea fertur: ut ea ipsa etiam nos justii habeamur. Et velut ille quondam Jacob, quum natiuitate primogenitus non esset, sub habitu fratris occultatus, atq; ejus veste indutus, quæ odorem optimum spirabat, seipsum insinuavit Patri, ut sub aliena persona benedictionem primogenituræ acciperet: Ita & nos sub Christi primogeniti fratris nostri preciosa puritate delitescere, bono ejus odore fragrare, ejus perfectione vitia nostra sepeliri & obtegi, atq; ita nos piissimo Patri ingerere, ut justitiæ benedictionem ab eodem assequamur, necesse est. And afterwards. Justificat ergo nos Deus Pater bonitate sua gratuita, qua nos in Christo complectitur, dum eidem insertos innocentia & justitia Christi nos induit; quæ una ut vera & perfecta est, quæ Dei sustinere conspectum potest, ita unum pro nobis sisti oportet Tribunali divini judicii & veluti cause nostræ intercessorem eidem representari: qua subnixi etiam hic obtineremus remissionem peccatorum nostrorum assiduam: cujus puritate velatæ non imputantur nobis sordes nostræ, imperfecti-gnum immunditiæ, sed veluti sepultæ conteguntur, ne in judicium Dei veniant: donec confecto in nobis, & plane extincto veteri

46 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*homine, divina bonitas nos in beatam pacem cum novo Adam recipiat.* God was in Christ saith the Apostle, reconciling the world unto himself; not imputing unto men their sins. In him therefore we are justified before God, not in our selves, not by our own, but by his Righteousness, which is imputed unto us now communicating with him. Wanting Righteousness of our own, we are taught to seek for Righteousness without our selves in him. So he saith, him who knew not sin, he made to be sin for us, that is, an expiatory Sacrifice for sin, that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him; we are made Righteous in Christ not with our own but with the Righteousness of God. By what Right? the Right of friendship, which makes all common among friends, according unto the ancient celebrated proverb. Being ingrafted into Christ, fastened, united unto him, he makes his things ours, communicates his Riches unto us, interposeth his Righteousness between the Judgment of God and our unrighteousness, and under that as under a shield and buckler, he hides us from that divine wrath which we have deserved; he defends and protects us therewith, yea he communicates it unto us and makes it ours, so as that being covered and adorned therewith, we may boldly and securely place our selves before the divine Tribunal and Judgment, so as not only to appear Righteous, but so to be. For even as the Apostle affirmeth that by one mans fault we were all made sinners, so is the Righteousness of Christ alone, efficacious in the Justification of us all; and as by the disobedience of one man many were made sinners, so by the Obedience of one man (saith he) many are made Righteous. This is the Righteousness of Christ, even his Obedience, whereby in all things he fulfilled the Will of his Father. As on the other hand our unrighteousness, is our disobedience, and our transgression of the Commands of God. But that our Righteousness is placed in the Obedience of Christ, it is from hence, that we being incorporated into him, it is accounted unto us as if it were ours; so as that therewith we are esteemed Righteous. And as Jacob of old, whereas he was

not the first born, being hid under the habit of his Brother, and cloathed with his Garment which breathed a sweet savour, presented himself unto his Father, that in the person of another, he might receive the Blessing of the Primogeniture; so is it necessary that we should lye hid under the precious purity of the first born our eldest Brother, be fragrant with his sweet savour, and have our sin buried and covered with his perfection, that we may present our selves before our most Holy Father, to obtain from him the Blessing of Righteousness. And again; God therefore doth justify us by his free Grace or Goodness wherewith he embraceth us in Christ Jesus, when he cloatheth us with his Innocency and Righteousness as we are ingrafted into him; for as that alone is true and perfect which only can endure in the sight of God, so that alone ought to be presented and pleaded for us before the divine Tribunal, as the advocate of, or plea in our cause; resting hereon, we here obtain the daily pardon of sin; with whose purity being covered, our filth and the uncleanness of our imperfections are not imputed unto us, but are covered as if they were buried, that they may not come into the Judgment of God; until the old man being destroyed and slain in us, divine Goodness receives us into peace with the second Adam. So far he; expressing the power which the influence of divine truth had on his mind, contrary to the Interest of the cause wherein he was engaged, and the loss of his Reputation with them, for whom in all other things, he was one of the fiercest Champions. And some among the Roman Church, who cannot bear this Assertion of the Commutation of Sin and Righteousness by Imputation between Christ and Believers, no more then some among our selves, do yet affirm the same concerning the Righteousness of other men. *Mercaturam quandam docere nos Paulus videtur. Abundatis, inquit, vos pecunia, & estis inopes justitiæ, contra illi abundant. justitia, & sunt inopes pecuniæ, fiat quedam commutatio; date vobis pecuniis egentibus pecuniam quæ vobis affluit, & illis deficit; sic futurum.*

## 48 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*turum est ut illi vicissim justitiam suam qua abundant, & qua vos estis destituti, vobis communicent.* *Hosius; de expresso Dei verbo, Tom. 2. pag. 21.* But I have mentioned these Testimonies principally to be a Relief unto some mens *Ignorance*, who are ready to speak evil of what they understand not.

This blessed *Permutation* as unto Sin and Righteousness, is represented unto us in the Scripture as a principal object of our Faith; as that whereon our Peace with God is founded. And although both these, the *Imputation of Sin unto Christ*, and the *Imputation of Righteousness unto us*, be the Acts of God and not ours, yet are we by Faith to *exemplifie* them in our own Souls, and really to perform what on our part is required unto their *Application* unto us, whereby we receive the Attonement, *Rom. 5. 11.* Christ calls unto him all those that are *weary and heavy laden*, *Mat. 11. 28.* The weight that is upon the Consciences of men wherewith they are laden, is *the burden of sin.* So the Psalmist complains that his *sins were a burthen too heavy for him*, *Psal. 38. 4.* Such was *Cains* apprehension of his Guilt, *Gen. 4. 13.* This Burden Christ bare when it was laid on him by divine Estimation. For so it is said *וְעֹנָהּ הוּא יִסְבֵּר* *Isa. 53. 11.* *He shall bear their sins* on him as a burden. And this he did when God made *to meet upon him* the Iniquity of us all, ver. 6. In the Application of this unto our own Souls, as it is required that we be sensible of the *weight and burden* of our sins, and how it is heavier then we can bear, so the Lord Christ calls us unto him with it, that we may be eased. This he doth in the preaching of the Gospel, wherein he is *evidently Crucified before our Eyes*, *Gal. 3. 1.* In the view which Faith hath of Christ crucified, ( for Faith is a *looking unto him*, *Isa. 45. 22. chap. 65. 1.* answering their *looking unto the Brazen Serpent* who were stung with fiery Serpents, *Joh. 3. 14, 15.* ) and under a sense of his *Invitation*, ( for Faith is our *coming unto him* upon his call and invitation ) to come unto him with our *Burdens*, a Believer

considereth that God hath laid all our *Iniquities upon him*, yea that he hath done so, is an especial object whereon Faith is to act it self, which is Faith in his Blood. Hereon doth the Soul approve of, and embrace the Righteousness and Grace of God, with the *infinite condescension* and love of Christ himself. It gives its consent that what is thus done, is what *becomes the infinite Wisdom and Grace of God*, and therein it rests. Such a Person seeks no more to *establish his own Righteousness*, but submits to the Righteousness of God. Herein by Faith doth he leave that *Burden on Christ*, which he called him to bring with him, and complies with the Wisdom and Righteousness of God in laying it upon him. And herewithall doth he receive the *everlasting Righteousness*, which the Lord Christ brought in when he made an end of sin, and Reconciliation for Transgressors.

The Reader may be pleased to observe, that I am not debating these things *argumentatively* in such propriety of Expressions as are required in a *Scholastical Disputation*, which shall be done afterwards so far as I judge it necessary. But I am doing that which indeed is better and of more Importance; namely, declaring the Experience of Faith in the Expressions of the Scripture, or such as are *analogous* unto them. And I had rather be instrumental in the communication of light and knowledge unto the meanest Believer, then to have the clearest success against prejudiced Disputers. Wherefore by Faith thus acting are we justified and have peace with God. Other Foundation in this matter can no man lay that will endure the Trial.

Nor are we to be moved that men who are unacquainted with these things in their Reality and Power, do reject the whole *work of Faith* herein, as an easie effort of *Fancy or Imagination*. For the preaching of the Cross is foolishness unto the best of the natural wisdom of men. Neither can any understand them but *by the spirit* of God. Those who

## 50 *General Considerations previously necessary*

know the Terroure of the Lord, who have been really convinced and made sensible of the Guilt of their *Apostasie* from God, and of their actual sins in that state, and what a fearful thing it is to fall into the hands of the living God, seeking thereon after a *real solid Foundation* whereon they may be accepted with him, have other thoughts of these things, and do find Believing a thing to be quite of another nature than such men suppose. It is not a work of Fancy or Imagination unto men to deny and abhor themselves, to subscribe unto the Righteousness of God in denouncing Death as due to their sins, to renounce all hopes and expectations of Relief from any Righteousness of their own, to mix the Word and Promise of God concerning Christ and Righteousness by him with Faith, so as to receive the Attonement, and therewithall to give up themselves unto an universal Obedience unto God. And as for them unto whom through Pride and Self-conceit on the one hand, or Ignorance on the other it is so; we have in this matter no concernment with them. For unto whom these things are only the work of Fancy, the Gospel is a Fable.

Something unto this purpose I had written long since in a *practical Discourse* concerning *Communion with God*. And whereas some men of an inferiour condition, have found it useful for the strengthening themselves in their dependencies on some of their superiours, or in compliance with their own Inclination, to cavil at my Writings and revile their Author; that *Book* hath been principally singled out to exercise their faculty and Good intentions upon. This course is steered of late by one Mr. *Hotchkisse*, in a *Book about Justification*, wherein in particular he falls very severely on that Doctrine which for the substance of it, is here again proposed, pag. 81. And were it not that I hope it may be somewhat useful unto him to be a little warned of his *Immoralities* in that Discourse, I should not in the least have taken  
notice

notice of his other Impertinencies. The Good man I perceive can be angry with Persons whom he never saw, and about things which he cannot or will not understand, so far as to *revile* them with most opprobrious Language. For my part although I have never written any thing designedly on this subject, or the *Doctrine of Justification* before now; yet he could not but discern by what was occasionally delivered in that *Discourse*, that I maintain no other Doctrine herein, but what is the common Faith of the most Learned men in all Protestant Churches. And the Reasons why I am singled out for the object of his petulancy and spleen, are too manifest to need Repetition. But I shall yet inform him of what perhaps he is ignorant; namely, That I esteem it no small honour that the *Reproaches* wherewith the Doctrine opposed by him is *reproached* do fall upon me. And the same I say concerning all the reviling and contemptuous Expressions that his ensuing pages are filled withall. But as to the present occasion I beg his excuse if I *believe him not*, that the reading of the passages which he mentions out of my Book, filled him *with Horror and Indignation*, as he pretends. For whereas he acknowledgeth that my words may have a sense which he approves of (and which therefore must of necessity be good and sound) what *honest* and sober person would not rather take them in that sense, then wrest them unto another, so to cast himself under the disquietment of *a fit of horrible Indignation*, In this fit I suppose it was, if such a fit indeed did befall him (as one Evil begets another) that he thought he might insinuate something of my *denial of the necessity of our own personal Repentance and Obedience*. For no man who had read that Book only of all my Writings, could with the least regard to *Conscience or Honesty* give countenance unto such a surmise, unless his mind was much discomposed by the unexpected invasion of a fit of Horror. But such is his dealing with me from first to last, nor do I know

52 *General Considerations previously necessary*

where to fix on any one instance of his Exceptions against me, wherein I can suppose he had escaped his pretended fit, and was returned unto himself, that is unto *honest and ingenuous thoughts*, wherewith I hope he is mostly conversant. But though I cannot miss in the Justification of this charge by considering any Instance of his Reflections, yet I shall at present take that which he insists longest upon, and filleth his Discourse about it with most scurrility of Expressions. And this is in the 164th page of his Book, and those that follow. For there he disputeth fiercely against me for making this to be *an undue End of our serving God, namely, that we may flee from the wrath to come*. And who would not take this for an inexpressible crime in any, especially in him who hath written so much of the nature and use of *Threatnings under the Gospel*, and the *Fear* that ought to be ingenerated by them in the hearts of men, as I have done. Wherefore so great a Crime being the object of them, all his Revilings seem not only to be *Excused but Hallowed*. But what if all this should prove a wilful prevarication, not becoming a Good man, much less a Minister of the Gospel? my words as reported and transcribed by himself are these; *Some there are that do the Service of the House of God as the drudgery of their Lives; the principle they yield Obedience upon is a Spirit of Bondage unto fear; the Rule they do it by is the Law in its dread and rigour; exacting it of them to the utmost without mercy or mitigation; the End they do it for is to fly from the Wrath to come, to pacifie Conscience, and to seek for Righteousness as it were by the works of the Law*. What follow unto the same purpose he omits, and what he adds as my words are not so, but his own, *ubi pudor, ubi fides?* That which I affirmed to be a part of an evil End when and as it makes up one entire End by being mixed with sundry other things expressly mentioned, is *singled out*, as if I had denied that *in any sense* it might be a part of a good End in our Obedience, which I never thought,

thought, I never said, I have spoken and written much to the contrary. And yet to countenance himself in this disingenuous procedure, besides many other *untrue* Reflections he adds that I insinuate, that those whom I describe are *Christians that seek Righteousness by Faith in Christ*, pag. 167. I must needs tell my Author that my *Faith* in this matter is, That such *works as these* will have no influence in his Justification; And that the principal Reason why I suppose I shall not in my progress in this Discourse take any particular notice of his exceptions either against the Truth or me, next unto this consideration, that they are all trite and obsolete, and as to what seemeth to be of any force in them will occur unto me in other Authors from whom they are derived, is that I may not have a continual occasion to declare how forgetful he hath been of all the Rules of ingenuity, yea and of *common honesty* in his dealing with me. For that which gave the occasion unto this present displeasing digression, it being no more as to the substance of it, but that our *sins were imputed unto Christ*, and that his *Righteousness is imputed unto us*, it is that in the Faith whereof I am assured I shall live and dye, though he should write *twenty* as learned Books against it, as those which he hath already published; and in what sense I do believe these things shall be afterwards declared. And although I judge no man upon the Expressions that fall from him in *Polemical Writings*, wherein on many occasions they do affront their own experience and contradict their own prayers, yet as to those who understand not that blessed Commutation of Sins and Righteousness as to the substance of it, which I have pleaded for, and the actings of our Faith with respect thereunto, I shall be bold to say, *That if the Gospel be hid it is hid to them that perish.*

Sixthly, We can never state our Thoughts aright in this matter unless we have a clear Apprehension of, and satisfaction in, *the Introduction of Grace by Jesus Christ into the whole*.

## 54 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*whole of our Relation unto God, with its respect unto all parts of our Obedience.* There was no such thing, nothing of that nature or kind, in the first constitution of that Relation and Obedience by the Law of our Creation. We were made in a state of immediate *Relation* unto God in our own persons, as our Creator, Preserver and Rewarder. There was no *mystery* of Grace in the Covenant of Works. No more was required unto the consummation of that state, but what was given us in our Creation, enabling us unto rewardable Obedience. *Do this and live, was the sole Rule* of our Relation unto God. There was nothing in Religion originally of that which the Gospel celebrates under the name of the *Grace, Kindness and Love* of God, whence all our favourable Relation unto God doth now proceed, and whereinto it is resolved; nothing of the Interposition of a *Mediator* with respect unto our Righteousness before God and Acceptance with him, which is at present the Life and Soul of Religion, the Substance of the Gospel, and the Centre of all the Truths revealed in it. The *Introduction* of these things is that which makes our Religion a mystery, yea a great mystery, if the Apostle may be believed, *1 Tim. 3. 16.* All Religion at first was suited and commensurable unto Reason; but being now become a *mystery*, men for the most part are very unwilling to receive it. But so it must be; and unless we are restored unto our primitive Rectitude, a Religion suited unto the principles of our Reason, which it hath none but what answer that first state, will not serve our Turns.

Wherefore of this *Introduction of Christ and Grace in him*, into our *Relation unto God*, there are no notions in the natural conceptions of our minds, nor are they discoverable by Reason in the best and utmost of its exercise, *1 Cor. 2. 14.* For before our understandings were darkened, and our Reason debased by the *Fall*, there were no such things revealed or proposed unto us; yea the supposition of them is inconsistent

sistent with, and contradictory unto, that whole state and condition wherein we were to live to God; seeing they all suppose the Entrance of sin. And it is not likely that our Reason as now *corrupted*, should be willing to embrace that which it knew nothing of in its best condition, and which was inconsistent with that way of attaining happiness which was absolutely suited unto it. For it hath no Faculty or Power but what it hath derived from that state. And to suppose it is now of it self suited and ready to embrace such heavenly *mysteries* of Truth and Grace, as it had no notions of, nor could have in the state of Innocency, is to suppose that by the Fall our *Eyes were opened to know Good and Evil*, in the sense that the Serpent deceived our first Parents with an Expectation of. Whereas therefore our Reason was given us for our only Guide in the first constitution of our Natures, it is naturally unready to receive what is above it, and as corrupted hath an *Enmity* thereunto.

Hence in the first open proposal of this *mystery*, namely, of the Love and Grace of God in Christ, of the Introduction of a *Mediator* and his Righteousness into our Relation unto God, in that way which God in infinite Wisdom had designed; the whole of it was looked on as meer *folly* by the Generality of the wise and rational men of the World, as the Apostle declares at large, 1 *Cor.* ch. I. Neither was the Faith of them ever really received in the World, without an *Act of the Holy Ghost* upon the mind in its Renovation. And those who judge that there is nothing more needful to enable the mind of man to receive the mysteries of the Gospel in a due manner, but the outward proposal of the Doctrine thereof, do not only deny the Depravation of our Nature by the Fall, but by just consequence, wholly renounce that Grace whereby we are to be recovered. Wherefore Reason (as hath been elsewhere proved) acting on and by its own innate Principles and Abilities, conveyed unto it from its original

## 56 *General Considerations previously necessary*

original state, and as now corrupted, is *repugnant* unto the whole Intoduction of Grace by Christ into our Relation unto God, *Rom.* 8. 7. An Endeavour therefore to reduce the Doctrine of the Gospel, or what is declared therein, concerning the *hidden mystery* of the Grace of God in Christ, unto the principles and inclinations of the minds of men, or Reason as it remains in us after the Entrance of sin, under the power at least of those notions and conceptions of things Religious, which it retains from its first state and condition, is to debase and corrupt them, ( as we shall see in sundry Instances ) and so make way for their Rejection.

Hence very difficult it is to keep up *doctrinally* and *practically* the minds of men unto the Reality and Spiritual height of this mystery. For men naturally do neither understand it, nor like it. And therefore every attempt to accommodate it unto the principles and inbred notions of *corrupt Reason* is very acceptable unto many, yea unto the most. For the things which such men speak and declare, are without more ado, without any exercise of *Faith* or *Prayer*, without any *supernatural Illumination*, easily intelligible, and exposed to the common sense of mankind. But whereas a Declaration of the *mysteries* of the Gospel can obtain no Admission into the minds of men but by the effectual working of the Spirit of God, *Ephes.* 1. 17, 18, 19. it is generally looked on as difficult, perplexed, unintelligible; and even the minds of many who find they cannot contradict it, are yet not at all delighted with it. And here lyeth the Advantage of all them who in these days do attempt to corrupt the Doctrine of the Gospel in the whole or any part of it, for the accommodation of it unto the common notions of corrupted Reason, is the whole of what they design. And in the confidence of the suffrage hereof, they not only oppose the things themselves, but despise the Declarations of them as *Enthusiastical canting*. And by nothing do they more prevail themselves,  
then

then by a pretence of reducing all things to Reason, and a contempt of what they oppose as unintelligible *Fanaticism*. But I am not more satisfied in any thing of the most uncontrollable Evidence, than that the Understandings of these men is no just measure or standard of Spiritual Truth. Wherefore notwithstanding all this fierceness and scorn, with the pretended Advantages which some think they have made by traducing Expressions in the writings of some men, it may be *improper*, it may be only not suited unto their own *genius* and capacity in these things, we are not *to be ashamed of the Gospel of Christ*, which is the power of God unto Salvation to every one that believeth.

Of this Repugnancy unto the *mystery* of the Wisdom and Grace of God in Christ, and the Foundation of its whole *Oeconomy* in the distinct operations of the *Persons of the Holy Trinity* therein, there are two parts or branches.

I. That which would reduce the whole of it unto the *private Reason of men*, and their own weak imperfect management thereof. This is the entire design of the *Socinians*. Hence,

I. The Doctrine of the *Trinity* it self is denied, impugned, yea *derided* by them, and that solely on this Account. They plead that it is incomprehensible by Reason; for there is in that Doctrine, a Declaration of things absolutely infinite and eternal, which cannot be exemplified in, nor accommodated unto things finite and temporal. This is the substance of all their pleas against the Doctrine of the *Holy Trinity*, that which gives a seeming life and sprightly vigour to their Objections against it; wherein yet under the pretence of the use and exercise of Reason, they fall and resolve all their reasonings into the most absurd and irrational principles that ever the minds of men were besotted withall. For unless you will grant them that what is *above their Reason* is therefore *contradictory unto true Reason*; that what is infinite and eternal

## 58 *General Considerations previously necessary*

is perfectly comprehensible and in all its concerns and respects to be accounted for; that what cannot be in things finite and of a separate existence, cannot be in things infinite whose being and existence can be but one, with other such irrational yea brutish Imaginations, all the Arguments of these pretended men of Reason against the *Trinity*, become like Chaff that every Breath of Wind will blow away. Hereon they must as they do, deny the *distinct Operations* of any Persons in the Godhead in the Dispensation of the *mystery* of Grace. For if there are no such distinct Persons there can be no such distinct Operations. Now as upon a denial of these things no *one Article of Faith* can be rightly understood, nor any one *Duty of Obedience* be performed unto God in an acceptable manner, so in particular, we grant that the Doctrine of Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, cannot stand.

2. On the same Ground the *Incarnation of the Son of God* is rejected as *ἀπίπτον ἀτοπίτατον*, the most absurd conception that ever befell the minds of men. Now it is to no purpose to dispute with men so perswaded about *Justification*. Yea we will freely acknowledge that all things we believe about it are *γεῖωδεις μύθοι*, no better then *old Wives Tales*, if the Incarnation of the Son of God be so also. For I can as well understand how he who is a meer man, however exalted, dignified, and glorified, can exercise a Spiritual Rule in and over the Hearts, Consciences and Thoughts of all the men in the World, being intimately knowing of and present unto them all equally at all times, ( which is another of their fopperies ) as how the Righteousness and Obedience of *One* should be esteemed the Righteousness of all that Believe, if that *One* be no more then a man, if he be not acknowledged to be the Son of God incarnate.

Whilst the minds of men are prepossessed with such prejudices, nay unless they firmly assent unto the Truth in these  
foun-

foundations of it, it is impossible to convince them of the Truth and Necessity of that Justification of a sinner which is revealed in the Gospel. Allow the Lord Christ to be *no other Person* but what they believe him to be, and I will grant there can be *no other way of Justification* then what they declare; though I cannot believe that ever any sinner will be justified thereby. These are the issues of an obstinate Refusal to give way unto the Introduction of the mystery of God and his Grace, into the way of Salvation and our Relation unto him.

And he who would desire an Instance of the *fertility* of mens Inventions in forging and coyning Objections against heavenly mysteries in the Justification of the Sovereignty of their own Reason as unto what belongs to our Relation unto God, need go no farther then the Writings of these men against the *Trinity* and *Incarnation* of the Eternal Word. For this is their fundamental Rule in things divine and Doctrines of Religion, that *not what the Scripture saith is therefore to be accounted true, although it seems repugnant unto any Reasonings of ours, or is above what we can comprehend, but what seems repugnant unto our Reason, let the words of the Scripture be what they will, that we must conclude that the Scripture doth not say so, though it seem never so expressly so to do.* *Itaq; non quia utrumq; Scriptura dicat propterea hæc inter se non pugnare concludendum est; sed potius quia hæc inter se pugnant ideo alterutrum a Scriptura non dici statuendum est,* saith *Schlicting. ad Meissn. def. Socin. pag. 102.* Wherefore because the Scripture affirms both these (that is the Efficacy of Gods Grace and the Freedom of our Wills) we cannot conclude from thence, that they are not repugnant; but because these things are repugnant unto one another, we must determine, that one of them is not spoken in the Scripture; no, it seems, let it say what it will. This is the handsomest way they can take in advancing their own Reason above the Scripture,

which yet favours of intolerable Presumption. So Socinus himself speaking of the *satisfaction* of *Christ* faith in plain Terms; *Ego quidem etiamsi non semel sed sæpius id in sacris monumentis scriptum extaret, non idcirco tamen ita prorsus rem se habere crederem, ut vos opinamini; cum enim id omnino fieri non possit, non secus atq; in multis aliis Scripturæ Testimoniis, una cum cæteris omnibus facio; aliqua quæ minus incommoda videretur, interpretatione adhibita, cum sensum ex ejusmodi verbis elicerem qui sibi constaret; For my part if this (Doctrine) were extant and written in the Holy Scripture, not once but often, yet would I not therefore believe it to be so as you do; For whereas it can by no means be so (whatever the Scripture saith) I would as I do with others in other places, make use of some less incommodious Interpretation, whereby I would draw a sense out of the words that should be consistent with it self. And how he would do this he declares a little before; *Sacra verba in alium sensum quam verba sonant per inusitatos etiam Tropos quandoq; explicantur; He would explain the words into another sense than what they sound or propose by unusual Tropes. And indeed such uncount Tropes doth he apply as so many Engines and Machines to pervert all the Divine Testimonies concerning our Redemption, Reconciliation, and Justification by the Blood of Christ.**

Having therefore fixed this as their Rule, constantly to prefer their own Reason above the express words of the Scripture, which must therefore by one means or other be so perverted or wrested to be made compliant therewith, it is Endless to trace them in their multiplied Objections against the holy mysteries, all resolved into this one principle, that *their Reason cannot comprehend them, nor doth approve of them.* And if any man would have an especial Instance of the serpentine Wits of men winding themselves from under the power of Conviction by the spiritual Light of Truth, or at least endeavouring so to do, let him read the Comments of  
the

the *Jewish Rabbins* on *Isaiah* chap. 53. and of the *Socinians* on the Beginning of the *Gospel of John*.

Secondly, The second Branch of this *Repugnancy* springeth from the want of a due comprehension of that *Harmony* which is in the mystery of Grace, and between all the parts of it. This comprehension is the principal effect of that *Wisdom* which Believers are taught by the Holy Ghost. For our understanding of the Wisdom of God in a mystery is neither an *Art* nor a *Science* whether purely *speculative* or more *practical*, but a *spiritual Wisdom*. And this spiritual Wisdom is such as understands and apprehends things, not so much, or not only in the notion of them, as in their Power, Reality, and Efficacy towards their proper Ends. And therefore although it may be very few, unless they be learned, judicious, and diligent in the use of means of all sorts, do attain unto it clearly and distinctly in the *Doctrinal notions* of it; yet are all true Believers; yea the meanest of them directed and enabled by the Holy Spirit as unto their own practice and duty, to act suitably unto a comprehension of this *Harmony*, according to the Promise that *they shall be all taught of God*. Hence those things which appear unto others contradictory and inconsistent one with another, so as that they are forced to offer violence unto the Scripture and their own Experience in the Rejection of the one or other of them, are reconciled in their minds, and made mutually useful or helpful unto one another, in the whole course of their Obedience. But these things must be farther spoken unto.

Such an *Harmony* as that intended there is in the whole mystery of God. For it is the most curious effect and product of divine Wisdom; And it is no impeachment of the Truth of it, that it is not discernable by humane Reason. A full comprehension of it no creature can in this world arise unto. Only in the contemplation of Faith, we may ar-

rive.

## 62 General Considerations previously necessary

rive unto such an understanding Admiration of it, as shall enable us to give Glory unto God, and to make use of all the parts of it in *practice* as we have occasion. Concerning it the Holy man mentioned before cryed out, *ὡ ἀνεξιχνίαστος ἡμυροβίασ ;* O unsearchable contrivance and operation ! And so is it expressed by the Apostle, as that which hath an unfathomable depth of Wisdom in it, *ὡ βάθος πλάτου,* &c. O the Depth of the Ricke both of the Wisdom and Knowledge of God; how unsearchable are his ways and his Judgments past finding out, Rom. II. 33, 34, 35, 36. see to the same purpose, Eph. 3. 8, 9, 10.

There is an *Harmony*, a suitableness of one thing unto another in all the works of Creation. Yet we see that it is not perfectly nor absolutely discoverable unto the wisest and most diligent of men. How far are they from an Agreement about the order and motions of the Heavenly Bodies, of the Sympathies and Qualities of sundry things here below, in the Relation of Causality and Efficiency between one thing and another. The new discoveries made concerning any of them, do only evidence how far men are from a just and perfect comprehension of them. Yet such an universal *Harmony* there is in all the parts of nature and its operations, that nothing in its proper station and operation is destructively contradictory either to the whole, or any part of it, but every thing contributes unto the preservation and use of the Universe. But although this *Harmony* be not absolutely *comprehensible* by any, yet do all living Creatures who follow the conduct or instinct of Nature make use of it, and live upon it, and without it neither their Being could be preserved, nor their Operations continued.

But in the *mystery* of God and his Grace the *Harmony* and suitableness of one thing unto another, with their tendency unto the same End, is incomparably more excellent and glorious then that which is seen in nature or the works of it.

For

For whereas God made all things at first in *Wisdom*, yet is the new Creation of all things by Jesus Christ, ascribed peculiarly unto the *Riches, Stores, and Treasures* of that infinite wisdom. Neither can any discern it unless they are *taught of God*, for it is only spiritually discerned. But yet is it by the most despised. Some seem to think that there is no great wisdom in it, and some that no great wisdom is required unto the comprehension of it; Few think it worth the while to spend half that time in *prayer*, in *meditation*, in the exercise of self denial, Mortification and Holy Obedience, doing the will of Christ that they may know of his word to the attaining of a due comprehension of the mystery of Godliness, as some do of diligence, study, and trial of Experiments, who design to excell in *natural* or *mathematical* Sciences. Wherefore there are three things evident herein.

1. That such an *Harmony* there is in all the parts of the *mystery of God*, wherein all the blessed properties of the divine nature are glorified, our Duty in all Instances is directed and engaged, our Salvation in the way of Obedience secured, and Christ as the End of all exalted. Wherefore we are not only to consider and know the several parts of the Doctrine of spiritual Truth, but their *Relation* also one unto another, their consistency one with another in practice, and their mutual furtherance of one another unto their common End. And a disorder in our Apprehensions about any part of that, whose Beauty and Use ariseth from its *Harmony* gives some confusion of mind with respect unto the whole.

2. That unto a comprehension of this *Harmony* in a due measure, it is necessary that we be *taught of God*, without which we can never be wise in the knowledge of the mystery of his Grace. And herein ought we to place the principal part of our diligence in our Enquiries into the Truths of the Gospel.

3. All those who are *taught of God* to know his Will, unless

## 64 *General Considerations previously necessary*

unless it be when their minds are disordered by prejudices, false opinions or temptations, have an experience in themselves and their own practical Obedience, of the *consistency* of all parts of the mystery of Gods Grace and Truth in Christ among themselves, of their spiritual Harmony and cogent tendency unto the same End. The Introduction of the Grace of Christ into our *Relation unto God*, makes no confusion or disorder in their minds, by the conflict of the principles of natural Reason, with respect unto our first Relation unto God, and those of Grace with respect unto that whereunto we are renewed.

From the want of a due comprehension of this *divine Harmony* it is, that the minds of men are filled with Imaginations of an Inconsistency between the most important parts of the mystery of the Gospel, from whence the confusions that are at this day in Christian Religion do proceed.

Thus the *Socinians* can see no consistency between the *Grace* or Love of God, and the *satisfaction* of Christ, but imagine if the one of them be admitted, the other must be excluded out of our Religion. Wherefore they principally oppose the *latter* under a pretence of asserting and vindicating the *former*. And where these things are expressly conjoined in the same proposition of Faith; as where it is said *that we are justified freely by the Grace of God, through the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus; whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his Blood*, as Rom. 3. 24, 25. they will offer violence unto common sense and Reason, rather than not disturb that *Harmony* which they cannot understand. For although it be plainly affirmed to be a Redemption by his *Blood*, as he is a *propitiation*, as his Blood was a *Ransome* or price of Redemption, yet they will contend, there it is only *metaphorical*, a meer deliverance by power, like that of the *Israelites* by *Moses*. But these things are clearly stated in the Gospel, and therefore not only consistent, but such as  
that

that the one cannot subsist without the other. Nor is there any mention of any especial Love or Grace of God unto sinners, but with respect unto the *satisfaction of Christ* as the means of the communication of all their effects unto them. See *Joh. 3. 16. Rom. 3. 23, 24, 25. chap. 8. 30, 31, 32, 33. 2 Cor. 5. 19, 20, 21. Ephes. 1. 7. &c.*

In like manner they can see no consistency between the *satisfaction of Christ*, and the *necessity of Holiness or Obedience* in them that do believe. Hence they continually clamour, that by our Doctrine of the *Mediation of Christ*, we overthrow all Obligations unto an Holy Life. And by their *Sophistical Reasonings* unto this purpose, they prevail with many to embrace their delusions, who have not a spiritual experience to confront their *Sophistry* withall. But as the Testimony of the Scripture lyeth expressly against them, so those who truly believe, and have real experience of the influence of that Truth into the life of God, and how impossible it is to yield any acceptable Obedience herein without respect thereunto, are secured from their snares.

These and the like *Imaginations* arise from the unwillingness of men to admit of the *Introduction of the mystery of Grace*, into our Relation unto God. For suppose us to stand before God on the old constitution of the Covenant of Creation, which alone natural Reason likes and is comprehensive of, and we do acknowledge these things to be inconsistent. But the mystery of the Wisdom and Grace of God in Christ, cannot stand without them both.

So likewise Gods *Efficacious Grace* in the conversion of sinners, and the *exercise of the Faculties of their Minds in a way of Duty* are asserted as contradictory and inconsistent. And although they seem both to be positively and frequently declared in the Scripture, yet say these men, their *Consistency* being repugnant to their Reason, let the Scripture say what it will, yet is it to be said by us, that the Scripture doth

## 66 *General Considerations* previously necessary

not assert one of them. And this is from the same cause ; men cannot in their *Wisdom* see it possible that the mystery of Gods Grace should be introduced into our Relation and Obedience unto God. Hence have many Ages of the Church, especially the last of them, been filled with *Endless Disputes*, in Opposition to the Grace of God, or to accommodate the conceptions of it, unto the Interests of corrupted Reason.

But there is no Instance more pregnant unto this purpose then that under our present consideration. Free *Justification* through the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, is cried out against as inconsistent with a *necessity of personal Holiness* and Obedience ; and because the *Socinians* insist principally on this pretence, it shall be fully and diligently considered apart, and that Holiness which without it they and others deriving from them do pretend unto, shall be tried by the unerring Rule.

Wherefore I desire it may be observed that in pleading for this Doctrine, we do it as a principal part of the Introduction of Grace into our whole Relation unto God. Hence we grant ;

1. That it is unsuited, yea foolish, and as some speak *Childish*, unto the principles of unenlightened and un sanctified Reason, or Understandings of men. And this we conceive to be the principal cause of all the Oppositions that are made unto it, and all the Depravations of it that the Church is pestered withall. Hence are the wits of men so fertile in *Sophistical Cavils* against it, so ready to load it with seeming absurdities, and I know not what unsuitableness unto their wonderous rational conceptions. And no Objection can be made against it, be it never so trivial, but it is highly applauded by those who look on that Introduction of the mystery of Grace which is above their natural conceptions, as unintelligible folly.

2. That

2. That the *necessary Relation* of these things one unto the other, namely of *Justification* by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, and the necessity of our Personal Obedience, will not be clearly understood nor duely improved, but by and in the exercise of the Wisdom of Faith. This we grant also; and let who will make what advantage they can of this concession. True Faith hath that *spiritual Light* in it or accompanying of it, as that it is able to receive it, and to conduct the Soul unto Obedience by it. Wherefore reserving the particular consideration hereof unto its proper place, I say in general.

1. That this *Relation* is evident unto that *spiritual Wisdom* whereby we are enabled doctrinally and practically to comprehend the *Harmony* of the mystery of God, and the consistency of all the parts of it one with another.

2. That it is made evident by the Scripture, wherein both these things, Justification through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, and the Necessity of our Personal Obedience are plainly asserted and declared. And we desie that Rule of the *Socinians*, that seeing these things are inconsistent in their apprehension or unto their Reason, therefore we must say that one of them is not taught in the Scripture; For whatever it may appear unto their Reason, it doth not so to ours; and we have at least as Good Reason to trust unto our own Reason, as unto theirs. Yet we absolutely acquiesce in neither, but in the Authority of God in the Scripture; rejoicing only in this, that we can set our seal unto his Revelations by our own Experience. For

3. It is fully evident in the gracious conduct which the minds of them that believe are under, even that of the *Spirit of Truth and Grace*, and the Inclinations of that new Principle of the Divine Life whereby they are acted. For although from the Remainders of Sin and Darknes that are in them, Temptations may arise unto a *continuation in sin because Grace*

## 68 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*hath abounded*, yet are their minds so formed and framed by the Doctrine of this Grace, and the Grace of this Doctrine, that the *abounding of Grace* herein, is the principal motive unto their *abounding in Holiness*, as we shall see afterwards.

And this we aver to be the spring of all those Objections which the Adversaries of this Doctrine do continually endeavour to entangle it withall. As ( 1 ) If the *Passive Righteousness* ( as it is commonly called ) that is his Death and Suffering be imputed unto us, there is no need nor can it be, that his *Active Righteousness* or the Obedience of his Life, should be imputed unto us ; and so on the contrary, for both together are inconsistent. ( 2 ) That if *all sin be pardoned*, there is no need of the *Righteousness* ; and so on the contrary, if the *Righteousness of Christ* be imputed unto us, there is no room for or need of the pardon of sin. ( 3 ) If we believe the *pardon of our sins*, then are our sins pardoned before we believe, or we are bound to believe that which is not so. ( 4 ) If the *Righteousness of Christ* be imputed unto us, then are we esteemed to have done and suffered, what indeed we never did nor suffered ; and it is true, that if we are esteemed our selves to have done it, Imputation is overthrown. ( 5 ) If Christs *Righteousness* be imputed unto us, then are we *as Righteous* as was Christ himself. ( 6 ) If our *sins were imputed unto Christ*, then was he thought to *have sinned*, and was a sinner subjectively. ( 7 ) If *Good Works* be excluded from any interest in our Justification before God, then are they of no *use* unto our Salvation. ( 8 ) That it is ridiculous to think, that where there is *no sin*, there is not all the *Righteousness* that can be required. ( 9 ) That *Righteousness imputed* is only a *putative or imaginary Righteousness*, &c.

Now although all these and the like Objections however subtilly managed, ( as *Socinus* boasts that he had used more than

then ordinary subtilty in this cause, *in quo si subtilius aliquanto quam opus esse videretur, quædam a nobis disputata sunt*; *De servat. par. 4. cap. 4.*) are capable of plain and clear solutions, and we shall avoid the examination of none of them; yet at present I shall only say, that all the shades which they cast on the minds of men, do vanish and disappear before the Light of express Scripture Testimonies, and the Experience of them that do believe, where there is a due comprehension of the mystery of Grace in any tolerable measure.

Seventhly, There are some *common prejudices* that are usually pleaded against the Doctrine of the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, which because they will not orderly fall under a particular consideration in our progress, may be briefly examined in these general previous considerations.

1. It is usually urged against it, that this *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ* is no where mentioned expressly in the Scripture. This is the first Objection of *Bellarmino* against it. *Hactenus*, saith he, *nullum omnino locum invenire potuerunt ubi legeretur Christi Justitiam nobis imputari ad justitiam; vel nos justos esse per Christi Justitiam nobis imputatam. De Justificat. lib. 2. cap. 7.* An Objection doubtless unreasonably and immodestly urged by men of his persuasion. For not only do they make profession of their whole Faith, or their belief of all things in matters of Religion, in Terms and Expressions no where used in the Scripture, but believe many things also, as they say, with Faith divine, not *at all revealed* or contained in the Scripture, but drained by them out of the *Traditions* of the Church. I do not therefore understand how such persons can *modestly* manage this as an Objection against any Doctrine, that the Terms wherein some do express it, are not *πρωτος* found in the Scripture, just in that order of one word after another as by them they are used. For this *Rule* may be much enlarged, and yet be kept strait enough to exclude the principal concerns of their Church out of the confines of

## 70 *General Considerations previously necessary*

Christianity; nor can I apprehend much more Equity in others who reflect with severity on this expression of the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ* as *unscriptural*, as if those who make use thereof were criminal in no small degree; when themselves immediately in the Declaration of their own judgment, make use of such Terms, Distinctions and Expressions, as are so far from being in the *Scripture*, as that it is odds they had never been in the *world*, had they escaped *Aristotles* Mint, or that of the *Schools* deriving from him.

And thus although a sufficient Answer hath frequently enough, if any thing can be so, been returned unto this Objection in *Bellarmino*, yet hath one of late amongst our selves made the *Translation* of it into *English*, to be the substance of the *first Chapter of a Book about Justification*; though he needed not to have given such an early intimation unto whom he is beholding for the greatest part of his ensuing Discourse, unless it be what is taken up in despicable reviling of other men. For take from him what is not his own on the one hand, and impertinent cavils at the words and expressions of other men, with forged imputations on some of them, on the other, and his whole Book will disappear. But yet although he affirms that none of the *Protestant Writers* who speak of the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ* unto us, (which were all of them without exception until of late) have *precisely kept to the form of wholesome Words*, but have rather *swerved and varied from the Language of the Scripture*, yet he will excuse them from *open Error*, if they intend no more thereby, but that we are made partakers of the benefits of the Righteousness of Christ. But if they intend that the *Righteousness of Christ it self* is imputed unto us, (that is, so as to be our Righteousness before God whereon we are pardoned and accepted with him, or do receive the forgiveness of sins, and a right to the Heavenly Inheritance) then are they *guilty of that Error* which makes

us to be esteemed to do our selves what Christ did; and so on the other side, Christ to have done what we do and did, chap. 2, 3. But these things are not so. For if we are esteemed to have done any thing *in our own persons*, it cannot be imputed unto us as done for us by another; as it will appear when we shall treat of these things afterwards. But the great and Holy Persons intended, are as little concerned in the *Accusations* or *Apologies* of some Writers, as those Writers seem to be acquainted with that Learning, Wisdom; and Judgment, wherein they did excell, and the Characters whereof are so eminently conspicuous in all their Writings.

But the Judgement of *most Protestants* is not only candidly expressed, but approved of also by *Bellarmino* himself in another place. *Non esset* (saith he) *absurdum si quis diceret nobis imputari Christi justitiam & merita; cum nobis donentur & applicentur; ac si nos ipsi Deo satisfacissemus.* De Justif. lib. 2. cap. 10. *It were not absurd if any one should say that the Righteousness and Merits of Christ are imputed unto us, when they are given and applied unto us, as if we our selves had satisfied God.* And this he confirms with that saying of *Bernard and Innocent*, Epist. 190. *Nam si unus pro omnibus mortuus est, ergo omnes mortui sunt, ut videlicet satisfactio unius omnibus imputetur, sicut omnium peccata unus ille portavit.* And those who will acknowledge no more in this matter, but only a Participation *Quovis modo*, one way or other, of the Benefits of the Obedience and Righteousness of Christ, wherein we have the concurrence of the *Socinians* also, might do well as I suppose, plainly to deny all Imputation of his Righteousness unto us in any sense as they do, seeing the *Benefits of his Righteousness* cannot be said to be imputed unto us, what way soever we are made Partakers of them. For to say, that the Righteousness of Christ is imputed unto us with respect unto the Benefits of it, when neither the *Righteousness* it self is imputed unto us, nor can the Benefits of it be imputed

## 72 *General Considerations previously necessary*

unto us, as we shall see afterwards, doth minister great occasion of much needless variance and contests. - Neither do I know any Reason why men should seek countenance unto this Doctrine under such an Expression as themselves reflect upon as *unscriptural*, if they be contented that their minds and sense should be clearly understood and apprehended. For Truth needs no subterfuges.

The *Socinians* do now principally make use of this Objection. For finding the *whole Church of God* in the use of sundry Expressions, in the Declaration of the most important Truths of the Gospel that are not *literally* contained in the Scripture, they hoped from an Advantage from thence in their opposition unto the things themselves. Such are the Terms of the *Trinity*, the *Incarnation*, *Satisfaction* and *Merit* of Christ, as this also of the Imputation of his Righteousness. How little they have prevailed in the other Instances hath been sufficiently manifested by them with whom they have had to do. But as unto that part of this Objection which concerns the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto Believers*, those by whom it is asserted do say ;

1. That it is the *Thing alone* intended which they plead for. If that be not contained in the Scripture, if it be not plainly taught and confirmed therein, they will speedily relinquish it. But if they can prove that the *Doctrine* which they intend in this expression, and which is thereby plainly declared unto the understandings of men, is a *divine Truth* sufficiently witnessed unto in the Scripture, then is this expression of it *reductively scriptural*, and the Truth it self so expressed a Divine Verity. To deny this, is to take away all use of the Interpretation of the Scripture ; and to overthrow the Ministry of the Church. This therefore is to be alone enquired into.

2. They say, the *same thing* is taught and expressed in the Scripture in *Phrases æquipollent*. For it affirms that by the

Obe-

Obedience of One ( that is Christ ) many are made Righteous, Rom. 5. 18. And that we are made Righteous by the *Imputation of Righteousness* unto us. *Blessed is the man unto whom God imputeth Righteousness without works*, chap. 4. 6. And if we are made Righteous by the Imputation of Righteousness unto us, that Obedience or Righteousness whereby we are made Righteous, is imputed unto us. And they will be content with this Expression of this Doctrine, That the Obedience of Christ whereby we are made Righteous, is the Righteousness that God imputeth unto us. Wherefore this Objection is of no force to disadvantage the Truth pleaded for.

2. *Socinus* objects in particular against this Doctrine of Justification by the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, and of his satisfaction*, that there is nothing said of it in the *Evangelists*, nor in the Report of the *Sermons of Christ unto the people, no nor yet in those of his private Discourses with his Disciples*. And he urgeth it vehemently and at large, against the whole of the Expiation of sin by his Death; *De Servator. par. 4. cap. 9*. And as it is easie, *malis inventis pejora addere*, this notion of his is not only made use of and pressed at large by one among our selves, but improved also by a dangerous comparison between the Writings of the *Evangelists* and the other Writings of the New Testament. For to enforce this Argument, that the *Histories of the Gospel* wherein the *Sermons of Christ* are recorded, do make no mention of the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, as in his judgement they do not, nor of his Satisfaction, or Merit or Expiation of sin, or of Redemption by his Death, as they do not in the judgment of *Socinus*, it is added by him, that for his part he is apt to admire our Saviours Sermons, who was the Author of our Religion, before the Writings of the *Apostles, though inspired men*. Whereunto many dangerous insinuations and reflections on the *Writings of St. Paul*, contrary

to the Faith and Sense of the Church in all Ages are subjoined.  
S. pag. 240, 241.

But this Boldness is not only unwarrantable but to be abhorred. What place of Scripture, what Ecclesiastical Tradition, what single president of any one sober Christian Writer, what *Theological* Reason will countenance a man in making the comparison mentioned, and so determining thereon? such juvenile boldness, such want of a due apprehension and understanding of the Nature of divine Inspirations, with the order and design of the writing of the *New Testament*, which are the springs of this precipitate censure, ought to be reflected on. At present to remove this pretence out of our way, it may be observed.

1. That what the Lord Christ taught his Disciples in his *Personal Ministry* on the Earth, was suited unto that *Oeconomy of the Church* which was antecedent unto his Death and Resurrection. Nothing did he withhold from them, that was needful to their Faith, Obedience, and Consolation in that state. Many things he instructed them in out of the Scripture, many new *Revelations* he made unto them, and many times did he occasionally instruct and rectify their judgements. Howbeit he made no clear *distinct Revelation* of those *sacred mysteries* unto them, which are peculiar unto the *Faith of the New Testament*, nor were to be distinctly apprehended before his Death and Resurrection.

2. What the Lord Christ revealed afterwards by his Spirit unto the Apostles, was no less *immediately from himself*, then was the Truth which he spoke unto them with his own mouth in the days of his flesh. An Apprehension to the contrary is destructive of Christian Religion. The *Epistles of the Apostles* are no less *Christ's Sermons*, then that which he delivered on the Mount. Wherefore,

3. Neither in the things themselves, nor in the way of their Delivery or Revelation, is there any Advantage of the  
one

one sort of Writings above the other. The things written in the *Epistles* proceed from the same Wisdom, the same Grace, the same Love, with the things which he spoke with his own mouth in the days of his flesh, and are of the same *divine veracity*, Authority and Efficacy. The Revelation which he made by his Spirit, is no less divine, and immediate from himself, than what he spoke unto his Disciples on the Earth. To distinguish between these things on any of these accounts, is intolerable folly.

4. The Writings of the *Evangelists* do not contain the whole of all the *Instructions* which the Lord Christ gave unto his Disciples personally on the Earth. For he was seen of them after *his Resurrection forty days*, and spoke with them of the things pertaining to the Kingdom of God, Act. 1. 3. And yet nothing hereof is recorded in their writings, but only some few *occasional speeches*. Nor had he given before unto them a clear and distinct understanding of those things which were delivered concerning his Death and Resurrection in the Old Testament, as is plainly declared, *Luke 24. 25, 26, 27.* For it was not necessary for them in that state wherein they were. Wherefore,

5. As to the extent of *Divine Revelations objectively*, those which he granted by his Spirit unto his Apostles after his Ascension, were beyond those which he Personally taught them, so far as they are recorded in the Writings of the *Evangelists*. For he told them plainly not long before his death, that he had *many things* to say unto them which *then they could not bear*, Joh. 16. 12. And for the knowledge of those things he refers them to the *coming of the Spirit* to make Revelation of them from himself, in the next words; *Howbeit when he the Spirit of Truth is come, he will guide you into all Truth; for he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear that shall he speak, and he will shew you things to come; He shall glorifie me, for he shall receive of mine and shew it unto you,*

## 76 *General Considerations previously necessary*

ver. 13, 14. And on this account he had told them before, that it *was expedient* for them that he should go away, that the Holy Spirit might come unto them, whom he would send from the Father, ver. 7. Hereunto he referred the *full and clear* manifestation of the mysteries of the Gospel. So false as well as dangerous and scandalous are those insinuations of *Socinus* and his followers.

Secondly, The Writings of the *Evangelists* are full unto their proper Ends and Purposes. These were to record the *Genealogy, Conception, Birth, Acts, Miracles* and *Teachings* of our Saviour, so far as to evince him to be the true only promised *Messias*. So he testifieth who wrote the last of them. *Many other signs truly did Jesus which are not written in this Book; But these are written that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God,* Joh. 20. 30, 31. Unto this End every thing is recorded by them that is needful unto the ingenerating and establishment of Faith. Upon this confirmation, all things declared in the *Old Testament* concerning him, all that was taught in *Types* and *Sacrifices* became the object of Faith in that sense wherein they were interpreted in the Accomplishment: And that in them this Doctrine was before revealed, shall be proved afterwards. It is therefore no wonder if some things, and those of the highest importance, should be declared more *fully* in other Writings of the New Testament, then they are in those of the *Evangelists*.

Thirdly, The Pretence it self is *wholly false*. For there are as many pregnant Testimonies given unto this Truth in one alone of the *Evangelists*, as in any other Book of the New Testament; namely in the Book of *John*. I shall refer to some of them which will be pleaded in their proper place, chap. 1. 12, 17, 19. chap. 3. 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 36. chap. 5. 24.

But we may pass this by, as one of those Inventions concerning which *Socinus* boasts in his Epistle to *Michael Vajoditus*,

ditus, that his Writings were esteemed by many for the singularity of the things asserted in them.

Fourthly, The *Difference* that hath been among *Protestant* Writers about this *Doctrine* is pleaded in the prejudice of it. *Osiander* in the entrance of the Reformation fell into a vain imagination, that we were Justified or made Righteous with the *Essential Righteousness of God*, communicated unto us by *Jesus Christ*. And whereas he was opposed herein with some severity by the most learned persons of those days, to countenance himself in his *singularity* he pretended that there were *twenty different Opinions amongst the Protestants themselves about the formal cause of our Justification before God*. This was quickly laid hold on by them of the *Roman Church*, and is urged as a prejudice against the whole *Doctrine*, by *Bellarmino*, *Vasquez*, and others. But the vanity of this pretence of his hath been sufficiently discovered; and *Bellarmino* himself could fancy but *four Opinions* among them, that seemed to be different from one another, reckoning that of *Osiander* for one: *De Justificat. lib. 2. cap. 1.* But whereas he knew that the Imagination of *Osiander* was exploded by them all, the other three that he mentions are indeed but *distinct parts* of the same entire *Doctrine*. Wherefore until of late it might be truly said, that the Faith and *Doctrine* of all *Protestants* was in this Article entirely the same. For however they differed in the way, manner, and methods of its Declaration, and too many private men were addicted unto *Definitions and Descriptions of their own*, under pretence of *Logical accuracy in Teaching*, which gave an appearance of some contradiction among them, yet in this they generally agreed, that it is the *Righteousness of Christ* and not our own, on the account whereof we receive the pardon of sin, acceptance with God, are declared Righteous by the Gospel, and have a Right and Title unto the Heavenly Inheritance. Hereon, I say they were generally agreed, first against the

*Papists,*

## 78 *General Considerations previously necessary*

*Papists*, and afterwards against the *Socinians*; and where this is granted, I will not contend with any man about his way of declaring the Doctrine of it.

And that I may add it by the way, we have herein the concurrence of the *Fathers of the Primitive Church*. For although by *Justification* following the *Etymology* of the *Latine* word, they understood the making us Righteous with internal personal Righteousness, at least some of them did so, as *Austin* in particular, yet that we are pardoned and accepted with God on any other account, but that of the Righteousness of Christ, they believed not. And whereas, especially in their Controversie with the *Pelagians* after the rising of that *Heretic*, they plead vehemently that we are made Righteous by the Grace of God, *changing our Hearts* and Natures, and creating in us a principle of spiritual Life and Holiness, and not by the endeavours of our own *free will*, or works performed in the strength thereof, their words and expressions have been abused contrary to their Intention and Design.

For we *wholly concur with them*, and subscribe unto all that they dispute about the making of us *personally Righteous* and holy, by the effectual Grace of God, against all merit of works and operations of our own free Will, (our Sanctification being every way as much of Grace, as our Justification properly so called) and that in opposition unto the common Doctrine of the *Roman Church* about the same matter; only they call this our being made inherently and personally Righteous by Grace, sometimes by the name of *Justification* which we do not. And this is laid hold on as an Advantage by those of the *Roman Church* who do not concur with them in the way and manner whereby we are so made Righteous. But whereas by our Justification before God, we intend only that *Righteousness* whereon our sins are pardoned, wherewith we are made Righteous in his sight, or for which we are accepted as Righteous

teous

teous before him, it will be hard to find any of them assigning of it unto any other causes then the *Protestants* do. So it is fallen out, that what they design to prove, we entirely comply with them in; but the way and manner whereby they prove it, is made use of by the *Papists* unto another End, which they intended not.

But as to the way and manner of the Declaration of this Doctrine among *Protestants* themselves, there ever was some *variety* and Difference in Expressions. Nor will it otherwise be whilst the Abilities and Capacities of men, whether in the conceiving of things of this nature, or in the expression of their conceptions are so various as they are. And it is acknowledged that these Differences of late have had by some as much weight laid upon them, as the substance of the Doctrine generally agreed in. Hence some have composed entire *Books* consisting almost of nothing, but *impertinent Cavils* at other Mens Words and Expressions. But these things proceed from the weakness of some men, and other vitious habits of their minds, and do not belong unto the cause it self. And such Persons, as for me, shall write as they do, and fight on until they are weary. Neither hath the multiplication of Questions and the curious discussion of them in the handling of this *Doctrine*, wherein nothing ought to be diligently insisted on, but what is *directive of our practice*, been of much use unto the Truth it self, though it hath not been directly opposed in them.

That which is of real Difference among Persons who agree in the *substance of the Doctrine* may be reduced unto a very few Heads. As ( I ) There is something of this kind about the *nature of Faith* whereby we are justified, with its proper Object in Justifying, and its Use in Justification. And an Instance we have herein, not only of the weakness of our Intellects in the Apprehension of spiritual things, but also of the remainders of confusion and disorder in our minds, at  
least

## 80 *General Considerations previously necessary*

least how true it is that we *know only in part*, and *propheſie only in part*, whilst we are in this life. For whereas this Faith is an *Act of our minds*, put forth in the way of *Duty* to God, yet many by whom it is sincerely exerciſed, and that continually, are not agreed either in the *nature* or proper object of it. Yet is there no doubt but that ſome of them who differ amongſt themſelves about theſe things, have delivered their minds free from the prepoſſeſſion of prejudices and notions derived from other *artificial* Reasonings impoſed on them, and do really expreſs their own conceptions as to the beſt and utmoſt of their Experience. And notwithstanding this Difference they do yet all of them *pleaſe God* in the exerciſe of Faith as it is their Duty, and have that reſpect unto its proper Object, as ſecures both their Juſtification and Salvation. And if we cannot on this conſideration bear with, and forbear one another in our different conceptions, and expreſſions of thoſe conceptions about theſe things, it is a ſign we have a great mind to be *contentious*, and that our confidences are built on very weak foundations. For my part I had much rather my Lot ſhould be found among them who do *really believe with the heart unto Righteouſneſs*, though they are not able to give a tolerable *Definition of Faith* unto others, then among them who can endlessly diſpute about it with ſeeming *Accuracy* and Skill, but are negligent in the exerciſe of it as their own Duty. Wherefore ſome things ſhall be briefly ſpoken of in this matter, to declare my own apprehenſions concerning the things mentioned, without the leaſt deſign to contradict or oppoſe the conceptions of others.

2. There hath been a Controverſie more directly ſtated among ſome *Learned Divines* of the reformed Churches, (for the *Lutherans* are unanimous on the one ſide) about the Righteouſneſs of Chriſt that is ſaid to be imputed unto us. For ſome would have this to be only his *ſuffering of Death*, and the

the *satisfaction* which he made for sin thereby, and others include therein *the Obedience* of his life also. The occasion, original, and progress of this controversy, the persons by whom it hath been managed, with the writings wherein it is so, and the various ways that have been endeavoured for its Reconciliation, are sufficiently known unto all, who have enquired into these things. Neither shall I immix my self herein, in the way of *controversie* or in opposition unto others, though I shall freely declare my own Judgement in it, so far as the consideration of the Righteousness of Christ under this distinction is inseparable from the substance of the Truth it self which I plead for.

3. Some Difference there hath been also, whether the *Righteousness of Christ imputed* unto us, or the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, may be said to be the *formal cause* of our Justification before God, wherein there appears some variety of Expression among Learned men, who have handled this subject in the way of controversy with the *Papists*. The true Occasion of the Differences about this Expression hath been this and no other. Those of the *Roman Church* do constantly assert, that the Righteousness whereby we are Righteous before God, is the *formal cause* of our Justification. And this Righteousness they say, is our *own inherent Personal Righteousness*, and not the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us. Wherefore they treat of this whole controversy, namely, what is the Righteousness on the account whereof we are accepted with God, or justified under the name of the *formal cause* of Justification, which is the subject of the *second Book of Bellarmine* concerning Justification. In opposition unto them, some Protestants contending that the Righteousness wherewith we are esteemed Righteous before God, and accepted with him, is the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us, and not our own inherent, imperfect Personal Righteousness, they have done it under this enquiry, namely,

## 82 *General Considerations previously necessary*

what is *the formal cause of our Justification*; which some have said to be the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, some the Righteousness of Christ imputed. But what they designed herein was not to resolve this Controversie into a *Philosophical* enquiry about the nature of a *formal cause*, but only to prove that, that truly belonged unto the Righteousness of Christ in our Justification, which the Papists ascribed unto our own, under that name. That there is an *habitual, infused habit* of Grace which is the formal cause of our personal inherent Righteousness they grant. But they all deny that God *pardons our sins*, and *justifies our persons* with respect unto this Righteousness as the *formal cause* thereof. Nay they deny that in the Justification of a sinner there either is, or can be any *inherent formal cause* of it. And what they mean by a *formal cause* in our Justification is only that which gives the denomination unto the subject, as the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ doth to a person that he is justified.

Wherefore notwithstanding the differences that have been among some in the various expression of their conceptions, the substance of the Doctrine of the Reformed Churches, is by them agreed upon and retained entire. For they all agree that God justifieth no sinner, absolveth him not from Guilt, nor declareth him Righteous, so as to have a Title unto the Heavenly Inheritance, but with respect unto a true and perfect Righteousness, as also that this Righteousness is truly the Righteousness of him that is so justified. That this Righteousness becometh ours by Gods free Grace and Donation, the way on our part whereby we come to be really and effectually interested therein, being *Faith* alone. And that this is the perfect Obedience or Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us; In these things, as they shall be afterwards distinctly explained, is contained the whole of that Truth, whose Explanation and Confirmation is the Design of the ensuing Discourse.

course. And because those by whom this Doctrine in the substance of it, is of late impugned, derive more from the *Socinians* than the *Papists*, and make a nearer approach unto their principles, I shall chiefly insist on the examination of those Original Authors, by whom their notions were first coined, and whose weapons they make use of in their defence.

Eighthly, To close these previous Discourses, it is worthy our consideration what *weight was laid on this Doctrine of Justification at the first Reformation*, and what Influence it had into the whole work thereof. However the minds of men may be changed as unto sundry Doctrines of Faith among us, yet none can justly own the name of *Protestant*, but he must highly value the first Reformation. And they cannot well do otherwise, whose present even *temporal Advantages* are resolved thereinto. However I intend none but such as own an especial presence and Guidance of God with them who were eminently and successfully employed therein. Such persons cannot but grant that their Faith in this matter, and the concurrence of their Thoughts about its Importance, are worthy consideration.

Now it is known, that the Doctrine of Justification gave the first occasion to the whole work of Reformation, and was the main hinge whereon it turned. This those mentioned declared to be *Articulus stantis aut cadentis Ecclesie*, and that the vindication thereof alone, deserved all the pains that was taken in the whole endeavour of Reformation. But things are now, and that by virtue of their Doctrine herein, much changed in the World, though it be not so understood or acknowledged. In general no small Benefit redounded unto the World by the *Reformation*, even among them by whom it was not, nor is received, though many bluster with contrary pretensions. For all the Evils which have accidentally ensued thereon, arising most of them from the corrupt

## 84 *General Considerations previously necessary*

Passions and Interests of them by whom it hath been opposed, are usually ascribed unto it ; and all the Light, Liberty, and Benefit of the Minds of men which it hath introduced, are ascribed unto other causes. But this may be signally observed with respect unto the *Doctrine of Justification*, with the causes and effects of its Discovery and Vindication. For the first Reformers found their *own*, and the *Consciences* of other men, so immersed in darkness, so pressed and harrassed with fears, terrours, and disquietments under the power of it, and so destitute of any steady Guidance into the ways of peace with God, as that with all diligence ( like persons sensible that herein their Spiritual and Eternal Interest was concerned ) they made their Enquiries after the Truth in this matter, which they knew must be the only means of their Deliverance. All men in those days, were either kept in Bondage under endless Fears and Anxieties of mind upon the convictions of sin, or sent for Relief unto *Indulgences, Priestly Pardons, Pennances, Pilgrimages*, works satisfactory of their own, and supererogatory of others, or kept under Chains of Darkness for *Purgatory* unto the last day. Now he is no way able to compare things past and present, who sees not how great an Alteration is made in these things even in the *Papal Church*. For before the Reformation, whereby the Light of the Gospel, especially in this Doctrine of Justification, was diffused among men, and shone even into their minds who never comprehended nor received it, the whole almost of Religion among them was taken up with and confined unto these things. And to instigate men unto an abounding sedulity in the observation of them, their minds were stuffed with *Traditions* and *Stories* of Visions, Apparitions, frightful Spirits, and other Imaginations that poor mortals are apt to be amazed withall, and which their restless disquietments gave countenance unto.

*Somnia, terrores Magici, miracula, sagæ  
Nocturni Lemures, portentaq; Thessala ----*

Were the principal objects of their Creed, and matter of their Religious Conversation. That very Church it self is comparatively at ease from these things unto what it was before the *Reformation*; though so much of them is still retained, as to blind the Eyes of men from discerning the *Necessity* as well as the Truth of the Evangelical Doctrine of Justification.

It is fallen out herein not much otherwise then it did at the first Entrance of *Christianity* into the world. For there was an Emanation of Light and Truth from the Gospel which affected the minds of men, by whom yet the whole of it in its general Design, was opposed and persecuted. For from thence the very vulgar sort of men became to have better apprehensions and notions of God and his properties, or the Original and Rule of the Universe, then they had arrived unto in the midnight of their *Paganism*. And a sort of *learned speculative men* there were, who by virtue of that Light of Truth which sprung from the Gospel, and was now diffused into the minds of men, reformed and improved the old *Philosophy*, discarding many of those falshoods and impertinencies wherewith it had been encumbered. But when this was done, they still maintained their cause on the old principles of the Philosophers, and indeed their opposition unto the Gospel was far more *plausible* and pleadable than it was before. For after they had discarded the gross conceptions of the common sort about the divine Nature and Rule, and had blended the Light of Truth which brake forth in Christian Religion with their own *Philosophical notions*, they made a vigorous Attempt for the reinforcement of *Heathenism* against the main Design of the Gospel. And things have not as I said, fallen out much otherwise in the Reformation. For

## 86 *General Considerations previously necessary*

as by the Light of Truth which therein brake forth, the Consciences of even the vulgar sort are in some measure freed from those *Childish Affrightments* which they were before in Bondage unto; so those who are *Learned* have been enabled to reduce the Opinions and Practices of their Church, into a more defensible posture, and make their Opposition unto the Truths of the Gospel more plausible than they formerly were. Yea that *Doctrine* which in the way of its Teaching and Practice among them, as also in its effects on the Consciences of men, was so horrid as to drive innumerable persons from their Communion in that and other things also, is now in the new Representation of it, with the artificial covering provided for its former effects in practice, thought an Argument meet to be pleaded for a return unto its entire Communion.

But to root out the Superstitions mentioned out of the minds of men, to communicate unto them the knowledge of the Righteousness of God which is revealed from Faith to Faith, and thereby to deliver them from their bondage, fears and distress, directing convinced sinners unto the only way of solid peace with God, did the first Reformers labour so diligently in the Declaration and Vindication of the Evangelical Doctrine of Justification; and God was with them. And it is worth our consideration, whether we should on every cavil and *sophism* of men not so taught, not so employed, not so tryed, not so owned of God as they were, and in whose Writings there are not appearing such *Characters of Wisdom, sound Judgment, and deep Experience* as in theirs, easily part with that Doctrine of Truth, wherein alone they found peace unto their own Souls, and whereby they were instrumental to give liberty and peace with God unto the Souls and Consciences of others innumerable, accompanied with the visible effects of Holiness of Life, and fruitfulness in the works of Righteousness, unto the praise of God by Jesus Christ.

In my judgment *Luther* spake the truth when he said; *amisso Articulo Justificationis, simul amissa est tota Doctrina Christiana.* And I wish he had not been a true Prophet, when he foretold that in the following Ages the Doctrine hereof would be again obscured; the Causes whereof I have elsewhere enquired into.

Some late Writers indeed among the *Protestants* have endeavoured to reduce the controverſie about *Justification* with the *Papists*, unto an Appearance of a far less real Difference, then is usually judged to be in it. And a good work it is no doubt to pare off all unnecessary occasions of Debate and Differences in Religion, provided we go not so near the Quick, as to let out any of its vital Spirits. The way taken herein is to proceed upon some Concessions of the *most sober* among the *Papists*, in their Ascriptions unto *Grace* and the Merit of Christ on the one side; and the *express judgment* of the *Protestants* variously delivered, of the necessity of good works to them that are justified. Besides it appears that in different expressions which either party adhere unto, as it were by Tradition, the same things are indeed intended. Among them who have laboured in this kind *Ludovicus le Blanc*, for his perspicuity and plainness, his moderation and freedom from a contentious frame of Spirit, is *pene solus legi dignus*. He is like the *Ghost of Tiresias* in this matter. But I must needs say that I have not seen the effect that might be desired of any such undertaking. For when each party comes unto the Interpretation of their own Concessions which is *ex communi jure*, to be allowed unto them, and which they will be sure to do in compliance with their Judgment in the substance of the Doctrine wherein the main stress of the Difference lies, the distance and breach continue as Wide as ever they were. Nor is there the least ground towards peace obtained by any of our condescensions or compliances herein. For unless we can come up entirely unto the *Decrees* and *Canons* of the  
 Con-

## 88 *General Considerations previously necessary*

Council of *Trent*, wherein the Doctrine of the Old and New Testament is *anathematized*, they will make no other use of any mens compliances, but only to encrease the clamour of Differences among our selves. I mention nothing of this nature to hinder any man from granting whatever he can or please unto them, without the prejudice of the substance of Truths professed in the *Protestant Churches*; but only to intimate the useflessness of such concessions in order unto *Peace and Agreement* with them, whilst they have a *Procrustes Bed* to lay us upon; and from whose size they will not recede.

Here and there one, ( not above *three or four* in all may be named within this hundred and thirty years ) in the *Roman Communion*, have owned our Doctrine of Justification for the substance of it. So did *Albertus Pighius* and the *Antidagma Coloniense*, as *Bellarmin* acknowledges. And what he says of *Pighius* is true, as we shall see afterwards; the other I have not seen. *Cardinal Contarenus* in a Treatise of Justification, written before, and published about the *Beginning of the Trent Council*, delivereth himself in the favour of it. But upon the observation of what he had done, some say he was shortly after poisoned, though I must confess I know not where they had the Report.

But do what we can for the sake of Peace, as too much cannot be done for it, with the safety of Truth; it cannot be denied but that the Doctrine of Justification as it works effectually in the Church of *Rome*, is the Foundation of many Enormities among them both in Judgment and Practice. They do not continue I acknowledge, in that visible predominancy and rage as formerly; nor are the Generality of the people in so much *slavish Bondage* unto them as they were. But the streams of them do still issue from this corrupt Fountain, unto the dangerous Infection of the Souls of men. For *Missatical Expiatory Sacrifices* for the living and the dead, the necessity  
of

of *Auricular Confession* with *Authoritative Absolution*, *Penances*, *Pilgrimages*, *Sacramentals*, *Indulgences*, *Commutations*, *Works Satisfactory* and *Supererogatory*, the *Merit* and *Intercession* of *Saints departed*, with especial *Devotions* and *Applications* to this or that particular *Saint* or *Angel*, *Purgatory*, yea on the matter the whole of *Monastick Devotion*, do depend thereon. They are all nothing but ways invented to pacifie the Consciences of men, or divert them from attending to the Charge which is given in against them by the Law of God; sorry supplies they are of a *Righteousness of their own*, for them who know not how to submit themselves to the *Righteousness* of God. And if the Doctrine of free *Justification* by the *Blood* of *Christ* were once again exploded, or corrupted and made *unintelligible*; unto these things as absurd and foolish as now unto some they seem to be, or what is not one jot better, men must and will again betake themselves. For if once they are diverted from putting their *Trust* in the *Righteousness* of *Christ* and *Grace* of *God* alone, and do practically thereon follow after, take up with, or rest in that which is their own, the first impressions of a sense of sin which shall befall their Consciences; will drive them from their present hold, to seek for shelter in any thing that tenders unto them the least Appearance of Relief. Men may talk and dispute what they please whilst they are at *peace* in their own minds without a real sense either of sin or *Righteousness*; yea and scoff at them who are not under the power of the same security. But when they shall be awakened with other Apprehensions of things then yet they are aware of, they will be put on new Resolutions. And it is in vain to dispute with any about *Justification*, who have not been duly convinced of a state of sin, and of its *Guilt*; for such men neither understand what they say, nor that whereof they *dogmatize*.

We have therefore the same Reasons that the first Reformers

mers had to be careful about the preservation of this Doctrine of the Gospel pure and entire; though we may not expect the like success with them in our Endeavours unto that End. For the minds of the Generality of men are in *another posture* then they were, when they dealt with them. Under the power of Ignorance and Superstition they were, but yet multitudes of them affected with a sense of the Guilt of sin. With us for the most part things are quite otherwise. Notional Light, accompanied with a senselessnes of sin, leads men unto a contempt of this Doctrine, indeed of the whole mystery of the Gospel. We have had Experience of the fruits of the Faith which we now plead for in this Nation for many years, yea now for some Ages. And it cannot well be denied but that those who have been most severely tenacious of the Doctrine of Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, have been the most exemplary in an Holy Life; I speak of *former days*. And if this Doctrine be yet further corrupted, debased, or unlearned among us, we shall quickly fall into one of the Extrems wherewith we are at present urged on either side. For although the Reliefs provided in the Church of *Rome*, for the satisfaction of the consciences of men are at present by the most disliked, yea despised; yet if they are once brought to a loss how to place their whole trust and confidence in the Righteousness of Christ and Grace of God in him, they will not always live at such an uncertainty of mind, as the best of their own Personal Obedience will hang them on the Briars of; but betake themselves unto somewhat that tenders them certain peace and security, though at present it may seem foolish unto them. And I doubt not but that some out of a meer *Ignorance of the Righteousness of God*, which either they have not been taught, or had no mind to learn, have with some Integrity in the Exercise of their Consciences, betaken themselves unto that *pretended Rest* which the *Church of Rome* offers unto them.

For being troubled about their sins, they think it better to betake themselves unto that great variety of means for the ease and discharge of their Consciences which the *Roman Church* affords, then to abide where they are, without the least pretence of Relief, as men will find in due time, there is no such thing to be found or obtained in themselves. They may go on for a time with good satisfaction unto their own minds; but if once they are brought unto a loss through the Conviction of sin, they must look beyond themselves for peace and satisfaction, or sit down without them to Eternity. Nor are the principles and ways which others take up withall in another Extream upon the Rejection of this Doctrine, although more plausible, yet at all more really useful unto the Souls of men, then those of the *Roman Church* which they reject as obsolete, and unsuited unto the Genius of the present Age. For they all of them arise from, or lead unto the want of a due sense of the Nature and Guilt of sin, as also of the Holiness and Righteousness of God with respect thereunto. And when such principles as these do once grow prevalent in the minds of men, they quickly grow careless, negligent, secure in sinning, and End for the most part in *Atheism*, or a great *Indifferency* as unto all Religion, and all the Duties thereof.

---

## CHAP. I.

*Justifying Faith, the Causes, Object, and Nature of it, declared.*

THE means of Justification on our part is *Faith*. That we are *justified by Faith* is so frequently, and so expressly affirmed in the Scripture, as that it cannot directly and in terms by any be denied. For whereas some begin, by an excess of partiality which controversial Engagements and Provocations do encline them unto, to affirm that our *Justification* is *more frequently* ascribed unto other things, Graces or Duties, than unto *Faith*, it is to be passed by in silence, and not contended about. But yet also the Explanation which some others make of this general concession, That *we are justified by Faith*, doth as fully overthrow what is affirmed therein, as if it were in terms rejected. And it would more advantage the understandings of men, if it were plainly refused upon its first proposal, than to be lead about in a *maze of Words*, and Distinctions unto its real Exclusion; as is done both by the *Romanists* and *Socinians*. At present we may take the Proposition as granted, and only enquire into the true genuine sense and meaning of it. That which first occurs unto our Consideration is *Faith*; and that which doth concern it may be reduced unto two Heads; ( 1 ) Its *Nature*. ( 2 ) Its *Use* in our Justification.

Of the Nature of *Faith* in general, of the especial Nature of justifying *Faith*, of its *Characteristical* Distinctions from that which is called *Faith*, but is not justifying, so many Discourses ( divers of them the effects of sound Judgment and good Experience ) are already extant, as it is altogether need-

needless to engage at large into a farther discussion of them. However something must be spoken to declare in what sense we understand these things; *what is that Faith* which we ascribe our Justification unto, and what is its Use therein.

The Distinctions that are usually made concerning Faith, (as it is a word of various significations) I shall wholly pre-termit; not only as obvious and known, but as not belonging unto our present Argument. That which we are concerned in is, That in the Scripture there is mention made plainly of a *twofold Faith* whereby men believe the Gospel. For there is a *Faith* whereby we are justified, which he who hath shall be assuredly saved, which purifieth the heart, and worketh by Love. And there is a *Faith* or Believing which doth nothing of all this; which who hath, and hath no more, is not justified, nor can be saved. Wherefore every Faith, whereby men are said to believe, is not justifying. Thus it is said of *Simon the Magician* that he *believed*, *Act.* 8. 13. When he was in the *Gall of Bitterness and bond of Iniquity*, and therefore did not believe with that Faith which *purifieth the Heart*, *Act.* 15. 9. And, that many *believed on the name of Jesus* when they saw the Miracles that he did, but *Jesus* did not commit himself unto them because he knew what was in man, *Joh.* 2. 23, 24. They did not believe on his Name as those do, or with that kind of Faith, who thereon *receive power to become the Sons of God*, *Joh.* 1. 12. And some when they *hear the Word receive it with joy, believing for a while, but have no Root*; *Luke* 8. 13. And Faith without a Root in the Heart will not justify any. For with the *Heart Men believe unto Righteousness*, *Rom.* 10. 10. So is it with them who shall cry, *Lord, Lord*, (at the last day) *we have prophesied in thy name*, whilst yet they were always workers of Iniquity, *Math.* 7. 22, 23.

This Faith is usually called *Historical Faith*. But this Denomination is not taken from the *Object* of it, as though it were

94 *Justifying Faith, the Causes, Object,*

were only the *History* of the Scripture, or the *Historical* things contained in it. For it respects the whole Truth of the Word, yea of the Promises of the Gospel as well as other things. But it is so called from the *nature of the Assent* wherein it doth consist. For it is such as we give unto *Historical* things that are credibly testified unto us.

And this Faith hath divers differences or degrees, both in respect unto the Grounds or Reasons of it; and also its Effects. For as unto the first, all Faith is an *Assent* upon Testimony; and divine Faith is an Assent upon a divine Testimony. According as this Testimony is received, so are the Differences or Degrees of this Faith. Some apprehend it on humane motives only, and their credibility unto the Judgment of Reason; and their Assent is a meer natural Act of their Understanding, which is the lowest degree of this *Historical* Faith. Some have their minds enabled unto it by *spiritual Illumination*, making a discovery of the Evidences of Divine Truth whereon it is to be believed; the Assent they give hereon is more firm and operative than that of the former sort.

Again, It hath its Differences or Degrees with respect unto its *Effects*. With some it doth no way or very little, influence the Will or the Affections, or work any Change in the lives of men. So is it with them that *profess they believe the Gospel*, and yet live in all manner of sins. In this Degree it is called by the Apostle *James* a *dead Faith*, and compared unto a dead Carcase, without life or motion, and is an Assent of the very same nature and kind with that which *Devils* are compelled to give. And this Faith abounds in the World. With others it hath an effectual work upon the Affections, and that in many degrees also, represented in the several *sorts of Ground* whereinto the *Seed of the Word* is cast, and produceth many effects in their lives. In the utmost improvement of it, both as to the Evidence it proceeds from, and the

the Effects it produceth, it is usually called *temporary Faith*; for it is neither permanent against all oppositions, nor will bring any unto Eternal Rest. The name is taken from that Expression of our Saviour, concerning him who believeth with this Faith, *πιστευεις εντι, Math. 13. 21.*

This Faith I grant to be true in its kind, and not merely to be equivocally so called; it is not *πιστις λευδωριμου*; It is so as unto the general nature of Faith; but of the same special nature with justifying Faith it is not. Justifying Faith is not an higher, or the highest degree of this Faith, but is of another kind or nature. Wherefore sundry things may be observed concerning this Faith in the utmost improvement of it unto our present purpose. As,

1. This *Faith* with all the effects of it, men may have and not be justified; and if they have not a Faith of another kind they cannot be justified. For Justification is no where ascribed unto it, yea it is affirmed by the Apostle *James*, That none can be justified by it.

2. It may produce *great Effects* in the Minds, Affections, and Lives of Men, although not one of them that are peculiar unto justifying Faith. Yet such they may be, as that those in whom they are wrought may be, and ought in the Judgment of Charity to be looked on as true Believers.

3. This is that Faith which may be *alone*. We are justified by Faith *alone*. But we are not justified by that Faith which *can be alone*. Alone, respects its influence into our Justification, not its nature and existence. And we absolutely deny that we can be justified by that Faith which *can be alone*, that is without a principle of spiritual Life and universal Obedience, operative in all the works of it, as Duty doth require.

These things I have observed, only to obviate that Calumny and Reproach which some endeavour to fix on the Doctrine of *Justification by Faith only*, through the Mediation of Christ.

For those who assert it must be *Solifidians*, *Antinomians*, and I know not what; such as oppose or deny the *necessity* of universal Obedience, or Good Works. Most of them who manage it cannot but know in their own Consciences that this Charge is false. But this is the way of *handling Controversies* with many. They can aver any thing that seems to advantage the cause they plead, to the great scandal of Religion. If by *Solifidians* they mean those who believe that Faith alone is on our part, the Means, Instrument or Condition (of which afterwards) of our Justification, all the *Prophets and Apostles* were so, and were so taught to be by Jesus Christ, as shall be proved. If they mean, those who affirm that the Faith whereby we are justified is *alone*, separate or separable, from a principle and the fruit of Holy Obedience, they must find them out themselves, we know nothing of them. For we allow no Faith to be of the *same kind or nature* with that whereby we are justified, but what virtually and radically contains in it universal Obedience, as the effect is in the cause, the fruit in the Root, and which acts it self in all particular Duties, according as by Rule and Circumstances they are made so to be. Yea we allow no Faith to be *justifying*, or to be of the *same kind* with it, which is not its self and in its own nature a *spiritually vital principle* of Obedience and Good Works. And if this be not sufficient to prevail with some not to seek for advantages by such shameful calumnies, yet is it so with others, to free their minds from any concernment in them.

For the especial nature of *Justifying Faith* which we enquire into, the things whereby it is evidenced may be reduced unto these four Heads. (1) The *Causes* of it on the part of God. (2) What is in us *previously* required unto it. (3) The proper Object of it. (4) Its proper peculiar Acts and Effects. Which shall be spoken unto so far as is necessary unto our present design.

1. The Doctrine of the *Causes of Faith* as unto its first Original in the Divine Will, and the way of its communication unto us, is so large, and so immixed-with that of the way and manner of the operation of efficacious Grace in Conversion ( which I have handled elsewhere ) as that I shall not here insist upon it. For as it cannot in a few words be spoken unto according unto its weight and worth, so to engage into a full handling of it, would too much divert us from our present Argument. This I shall only say, that from thence it may be uncontrollably evidenced, That the Faith whereby we are justified, is of an *especial kind or nature*, wherein no other Faith which Justification is not inseparable from, doth partake with it.

2. Wherefore our first Enquiry is concerning what was proposed in the second place, namely, *what is on our part in a way of Duty previously required thereunto* ; or what is necessary to be found in us antecedaneously unto our Believing unto the Justification of Life. And I say there is supposed in them in whom this Faith is wrought, on whom it is bestowed, and whose Duty it is to believe therewith ; the *work of the Law in the Conviction of sin*, or Conviction of sin is a necessary Antecedent unto Justifying Faith. Many have disputed what belongs hereunto, and what effects it produceth in the mind, that dispose the Soul unto the receiving of the Promise of the Gospel. But whereas there are different Apprehensions about these effects or concomitants of Conviction, ( in Compunction, Humiliation, Self-judging, with sorrow for sin committed, and the like ) as also about the *Degrees* of them, as ordinarily pre-required unto Faith and Conversion unto God ; I shall speak very briefly unto them, so far as they are inseparable from the Conviction asserted. And I shall first consider this Conviction it self with what is essential thereunto, and then the effects of it in conjunction with that *temporary Faith* before spoken of. I shall do so, not as

unto their nature, the knowledge whereof I take for granted, but only as they have respect unto our Justification.

As to the first I say, The work of *Conviction* in general, whereby the Soul of man hath a practical understanding of the nature of sin, its Guilt and the Punishment due unto it, and is made sensible of his own interest therein, both with respect unto sin original and actual, with his own utter disability to deliver himself out of the state and condition, wherein on the account of these things he findeth himself to be, is that which we affirm to be *antecedaneously necessary* unto Justifying Faith; that is in the *Adult*, and of whose Justification the Word is the external means and instrument.

A *Convinced sinner* is only *Subiectum capax Justificationis*; not that every one that is convinced is or must necessarily be justified. There is not any such *disposition* or preparation of the subject by this *Conviction*, its effects and consequents, as that the *form of Justification*, as the *Papists* speak, or justifying Grace must necessarily ensue or be introduced thereon. Nor is there any such preparation in it, as that by virtue of any divine Compact or Promise, a Person so convinced, shall be pardoned and justified. But as a man may believe with any kind of Faith that is not justifying, such as that before mentioned, without this *Conviction*; so it is ordinarily *previous*, and necessary so to be, unto that Faith which is unto the Justification of Life. The motive is not unto it, that thereon a man shall be assuredly justified; but that without it he cannot be so.

This I say is required in the Person to be justified in order of nature antecedaneously unto that Faith whereby we are justified, which we shall prove with the ensuing Arguments. For (1) without the due consideration and supposition of it, the true nature of Faith can never be understood. For as we have shewed before, Justification is Gods way of the Deliverance of the convinced sinner, or one whose *mouth is stopped,*

stopped, and who is guilty before God, obnoxious to the Law, and shut up under Sin. A sense therefore of this estate and all that belongs unto it, is required unto Believing. Hence *Le Blanc* who hath searched with some diligence into these things, commends the Definition of Faith given by *Mestrezat*; that it is the flight of a penitent sinner unto the mercy of God in Christ. And there is indeed more Sense and Truth in it, than in twenty other that seem more accurate. But without a supposition of the Conviction mentioned, there is no understanding of this definition of Faith. For it is that alone which puts the Soul upon a flight unto the mercy of God in Christ, to be saved from the wrath to come, *Heb. 6. 18. fled for Refuge.*

2ly. The Order, Relation, and use of the Law and the Gospel do uncontrollably evince the necessity of this Conviction previous unto Believing. For that which any man hath first to deal withall, with respect unto his Eternal Condition, both naturally and by Gods Institution is the Law. This is first presented unto the Soul, with its Terms of Righteousness and Life, and with its Curse in case of failure. Without this the Gospel cannot be understood, nor the Grace of it duely valued. For it is the Revelation of Gods way for the relieving the Souls of men from the sentence and curse of the Law, *Rom. 1. 17.* That was the Nature, that was the Use and End of the first Promise, and of the whole work of Gods Grace revealed in all the ensuing Promises, or in the whole Gospel. Wherefore the Faith which we treat of being Evangelical, that which in its especial nature and use, not the Law but the Gospel requireth, that which hath the Gospel for its Principle, Rule, and Object, it is not required of us, cannot be acted by us, but on a supposition of the work and effect of the Law in the conviction of sin, by giving the knowledge of it, a sense of its Guilt, and the state of the sinner on the Account thereof. And that Faith which hath

not respect hereunto, we absolutely deny to be that Faith whereby we are justified, *Gal. 3. 22, 23, 24. Rom. 10. 4.*

3ly. This our *Saviour* himself directly teacheth in the Gospel. For he calls unto him only those who are *wearry and heavy laden*, affirms that the *whole have no need of the Physician* but the sick; and that he came not to call the *Righteous* but *sinners to Repentance*. In all which he intends not those who were *really sinners*, as all men are, for he makes a difference between them, offering the Gospel unto some and not unto others, but such as were *convinced of sin*, burdened with it, and sought after deliverance.

So those unto whom the Apostle *Peter* proposed the Promise of the Gospel with the pardon of sin thereby as the Object of Gospel Faith, were *pricked to the Heart* upon the conviction of their sin, and cried *what shall we do*; *Act. 2. 37, 38, 39.* Such also was the state of the *Faylor* unto whom the Apostle *Paul* proposed Salvation by Christ, as what he was to believe for his Deliverance, *Act. 16. 30, 31.*

4ly. The state of *Adam* and Gods dealing with him therein, is the best Representation of the order and method of these things. As He was after the *Fall*, so are we by nature in the very same state and condition. Really he was utterly lost by sin, and *convinced* he was both of the nature of his sin, and of the effects of it in that Act of God by the Law on his mind, which is called the *the opening of his Eyes*. For it was nothing but the communication unto his mind by his conscience of a sense of the nature, guilt, effects, and consequents of sin, which the Law could then teach him, and could not do so before. This fills him with *shame and fear*; against the former whereof he provided by *Figg-leaves*, and against the latter by *hiding himself* among the Trees of the Garden. Nor, however they may please themselves with them, are any of the contrivances of men, for freedom and safety from sin, either wiser or more likely to have success. In this  
con-

condition, God by an immediate *Inquisition* into the matter of fact, sharpeneth this Conviction by the Addition of his own Testimony unto its Truth, and casteth him actually under the Curse of the Law, in a juridical denunciation of it. In this lost, forlorn, hopeless condition God proposeth the *Promise* of Redemption by Christ unto him. And this was the Object of that Faith whereby he was to be justified.

Although these things are not thus eminently and distinctly transacted in the minds and consciences of all who are called unto Believing by the Gospel, yet for the *substance* of them, and as to the previousness of the Conviction of sin unto Faith, they are found in all that sincerely believe.

These things are known, and for the substance of them generally agreed unto. But yet are they such as being duely considered will discover the vanity and mistakes of many definitions of Faith that are obtruded on us. For any definition or description of it which hath not express, or at least *virtual* respect hereunto, is but a deceit, and no way answers the Experience of them that truly believe. And such are all those who place it meerly in an *Assent* unto divine Revelation, of what Nature soever that Assent be, and whatever Effects are ascribed unto it. For such an Assent there may be without any respect unto this work of the Law. Neither do I, to speak plainly, at all value the most accurate Disputations of any about the Nature and Act of Justifying Faith, who never had in themselves an Experience of the work of the Law in Conviction and Condemnation for sin, with the Effects of it upon their Consciences; or do omit the due consideration of their own Experience, wherein what they truly believe is better stated than in all their Disputations. That Faith whereby we are justified is in general the acting of the Soul towards God, as revealing himself in the Gospel for deliverance out of this state and condition, or from under the Curse of the Law applied unto the Conscience, according

ording to his mind, and by the ways that he hath appointed. I give not this as any definition of Faith, but only express, what hath a necessary influence into it, whence the nature of it may be discerned.

2. The Effects of this *Conviction* with their respect unto our Justification real or pretended may also be briefly considered. And whereas this Conviction is a meer work of the Law, it is not with respect unto these *Effects* to be considered alone, but in conjunction with, and under the conduct of that *temporary Faith* of the Gospel before described. And these two, *Temporary Faith* and *Legal Conviction* are the principles of all Works or Duties in Religion antecedent unto Justification, and which therefore we must deny to have in them any *Causality* thereof. But it is granted that many Acts and Duties both internal and external, will ensue on real Convictions. Those that are internal may be reduced unto three Heads. (1) *Displeasancy and Sorrow* that we have sinned. It is impossible that any one should be really convinced of sin in the way before declared, but that a dislike of sin, and of himself that he hath sinned, shame of it, and sorrow for it, will ensue thereon. And it is a sufficient Evidence that he is not really *convinced of sin*, whatever he profess, or whatever confession he make, whose mind is not so affected, *Jer.* 36. 24. (2) *Fear of punishment* due to sin. For Conviction respects not only the instructive and preceptive part of the Law, whereby the Being and Nature of sin are discovered, but the Sentence and Curse of it also whereby it is judged and condemned, *Gen.* 4. 13, 14. Wherefore, where *fear of the punishment* threatned doth not ensue, no person is really convinced of sin; nor hath the Law had its proper Work towards him, as it is previous unto the Administration of the Gospel. And whereas by Faith we *fly from the wrath to come*, where there is not a Sense and Apprehension of that wrath as due unto us, there is no Ground or Reason for our Believing.

lieving. (3) A *desire of Deliverance from that state* wherein a convinced sinner finds himself upon his Conviction, is unavoidable unto him. And its naturally the first thing that Conviction works in the minds of men, and that in various degrees of care, fear, solicitude and restlessness, which from Experience and the conduct of Scripture Light, have been explained by many, unto the great benefit of the Church, and sufficiently derided by others. (2) These internal Acts of the mind will also produce sundry external Duties which may be referred unto two Heads. (1) *Abstinence from known sin* unto the utmost of mens power. For they who begin to find that it is an evil thing and a bitter that they have sinned against God, cannot but endeavour a future *Abstinence* from it. And as this hath respect unto all the former internal Acts, as Causes of it, so it is a peculiar exurgency of the *last* of them or a *desire of deliverance* from the state wherein such persons are. For this they suppose to be the best expedient for it, or at least that without which it will not be. And herein usually do their Spirits act by *Promises* and *Vows*, with renewed sorrow on surprisals into sin, which will befall them in that condition. (2) *The Duties of Religious Worship* in prayer and hearing of the Word, with diligence in the use of the Ordinances of the Church, will ensue hereon. For without these they know that no deliverance is to be obtained. *Reformation of Life and Conversation* in various degrees doth partly consist in these things, and partly follow upon them. And these things are always so, where the Convictions of men are real and abiding.

But yet it must be said, that they are neither severally nor jointly, though in the *highest degree*, neither necessary dispositions, preparations, previous congruities in a way of merit, nor conditions of our Justification. For,

1. They are not *Conditions* of Justification. For where one thing is the Condition of another, that other thing must fol-

follow the fulfilling of that Condition. Otherwise the Condition of it, it is not. But they may be all found where Justification doth not ensue. Wherefore there is no Covenant, Promise, or Constitution of God, making them to be such *Conditions* of Justification, though in their own nature they may be subservient unto what is required of us with respect thereunto. But a certain infallible connexion with it by virtue of any Promise or Covenant of God (as it is with Faith) they have not. And other Condition, but what is constituted and made to be so by divine compact or promise, is not to be allowed. For otherwise Conditions might be endlessly multiplied, and all things natural as well as moral made to be so. So the meat we eat may be a Condition of Justification. Faith and Justification are inseparable, but so are not Justification and the things we now insist upon, as Experience doth evince.

2. Justification may be where the *outward Acts* and Duties mentioned, proceeding from Convictions under the conduct of temporary Faith are not. For *Adam* was Justified without them, so also were the Converts in the *Acts*, chap. 2. For what is reported concerning them is all of it Essentially included in Conviction; *ver.* 37. And so likewise was it with the *Jaylor*; *Acts* 16. 30, 31. And as unto many of them, it is so with most that do believe. Therefore they are not Conditions. For a Condition suspends the Event of that whereof it is a Condition.

3. They are not *formal dispositions* unto Justification, because it consisteth not in the Introduction of any new form or inherent Quality in the Soul, as hath been in part already declared, and shall yet afterwards be more fully evinced. Nor (4) are they *moral preparations* for it; for being antecedent unto Faith Evangelical, no man can have any design in them, but only to *seek for Righteousness by the Works of the Law*, which is no preparation unto Justification. All Discoveries

veries

veries of the Righteousness of God, with the Souls adherence unto it, belong to Faith alone. There is indeed a Repentance which accompanieth Faith, and is included in the nature of it, at least radically. This is required unto our Justification. But that legal Repentance which precedes Gospel Faith and is without it, is neither a Disposition, Preparation, nor Condition of our Justification.

In brief; The order of these things may be observed in the dealing of God with *Adam*, as was before intimated. And there are three degrees in it. (1) The *Opening of the Eyes* of the sinner, to see the filth and guilt of sin in the Sentence and Curse of the Law applied unto his Conscience; *Rom. 7. 9, 10.* This effects in the mind of the sinner the things before mentioned, and puts him upon all the Duties that spring from them. For Persons on their first Convictions ordinarily judge no more but that their state being evil and dangerous, it is their Duty to better it, and that they can or shall do so accordingly, if they apply themselves thereunto. But all these things as to a Protection or Deliverance from the sentence of the Law, are no better then *Figg-leaves* and *hiding*. (2) Ordinarily God by his Providence, or in the Dispensation of the Word, gives life and power unto this Work of the Law in a peculiar manner; in answer unto the charge which he gave unto *Adam* after his Attempt to hide himself. Hereby the *mouth of the sinner is stopped*, and he becomes, as throughly sensible of his Guilt before God, so satisfied that there is no Relief or Deliverance to be expected from any of those ways of sorrow or duty that he hath put himself upon. (3) In this condition it is a *meer Act of Sovereign Grace*, without any respect unto these things foregoing, to call the sinner unto Believing, or Faith in the Promise unto the Justification of Life. This is Gods order; yet so as that what precedeth his call unto Faith, hath no causality thereof.

3. The next thing to be enquired into is the *proper Object*

of *Justifying Faith*, or of true Faith, in its office, work, and duty, with respect unto our Justification. And herein we must first consider what we cannot so well close withall. For besides other Differences that seem to be about it, which indeed are but different Explanations of the same thing for the substance, there are *two Opinions* which are looked on as Extreams, the one in an Excess, and the other in Defect. The first is that of the *Roman Church*, and those who comply with them therein. And this is, That the *Object of Justifying Faith* as such, is all Divine Verity, all Divine Revelation, whether written in the Scripture, or delivered by Tradition represented unto us by the Authority of the Church. In the latter part of this Description we are not at present concerned. That the whole Scripture and all the parts of it, and all the Truths of what sort soever they be that are contained in it, are *equally the Object of Faith* in the discharge of its Office in our Justification, is that which they maintain. Hence as to the nature of it they cannot allow it to consist in any thing but an *Assent of the mind*. For supposing the whole Scripture, and all contained in it, Laws, Precepts, Promises, Threatnings, Stories, Prophecies and the like, to be the *Object* of it, and these not as containing in them things Good or Evil unto us, but under this formal consideration as *divinely revealed*, they cannot assign or allow any other Act of the mind to be required hereunto but *Assent* only. And so confident are they herein, namely, That Faith is no more then an *Assent unto divine Revelation*, as that *Bellarmin* in opposition unto *Calvin*, who placed *knowledge* in the description of Justifying Faith, affirms that it is better defined by *Ignorance* than by *Knowledge*.

This Description of Justifying Faith and its Object, hath been so discussed, and on such evident Grounds of Scripture and Reason rejected by *Protestant Writers* of all sorts, as that it is needless to insist much upon it again. Some things I shall observe

observe in relation unto it, whereby we may discover what is of *Truth* in what they assert, and wherein it falls short thereof. Neither shall I respect only them of the *Roman Church*, who require no more to Faith or Believing, but only a *bare Assent* of the mind unto divine Revelations, but them also who place it wholly in such a *firm Assent* as produceth Obedience unto all divine Commands. For as it doth both these, as both these are included in it, so unto the especial nature of it more is required. It is as justifying neither a meer Assent nor any such firm degree of it, as should produce such effects.

1. All Faith whatever is an Act of that power of our Souls in general, whereby we are able firmly to *assent* unto the Truth upon Testimony, in things not evident unto us by Sense or Reason. It is the *Evidence of things not seen*. And all divine Faith is in general an *Assent* unto the Truth that is proposed unto us upon divine Testimony. And hereby as it is commonly agreed, it is distinguished from Opinion and moral certainty on the one hand, and Science or Demonstration on the other.

2. Wherefore in *Justifying Faith*, there is an Assent unto all divine Revelation upon the Testimony of God the Revealer. By no other Act of our mind, wherein this is not included or supposed, can we be justified; not because it is not justifying, but because it is not Faith. This *Assent* I say is included in Justifying Faith. And therefore we find it often spoken of in the Scripture (the Instances whereof are gathered up by *Bellarmin* and others) with respect unto other things, and not restrained unto the especial promise of Grace in Christ, which is that which they oppose. But besides, that in most places of that kind, the proper Object of Faith as Justifying is included and referred ultimately unto, though diversly expressed by some of its *Causes* or concomitant *Adjuncts*, it is granted that we believe all divine Truth,

with that very Faith whereby we are justified, so as that other things may well be ascribed unto it.

3. On these Concessions we yet say two things. (1) That the whole nature of Justifying Faith doth not consist meerly in an *Affent* of the mind, be it never so firm and stedfast, nor whatever Effects of Obedience it may produce. (2) That in its *Duty* and Office in Justification, whence it hath that especial denomination, which alone we are in the Explanation of, it doth not *equally respect* all divine Revelation as such, but hath a peculiar Object proposed unto it in the Scripture. And whereas both these will be immediately evinced in our description of the proper Object and Nature of Faith, I shall at present oppose some few things unto this Description of them, sufficient to manifest how *aliene* it is from the Truth.

1. This *Affent* is an Act of the *understanding only*. An Act of the mind with respect unto Truth evidenced unto it, be it of what nature it will. So we believe the worst of things and the most grievous unto us, as well as the best and the most useful. But Believing is an *Act of the Heart*, which in the Scripture comprizeth all the Faculties of the Soul, as one entire principle of moral and spiritual Duties. *With the Heart Man believeth unto Righteousness*, Rom. 10. 10. And it is frequently described by an Act of the Will, though it be not so alone. But without an Act of the Will no man can believe as he ought. See *Joh. 5. 40. Joh. 1. 12. chap. 6. 35.* We come to Christ in an Act of the Will; and *let whosoever will, come*. And to be willing is taken for to believe, *Psal. 110. 3.* and Unbelief is Disobedience, *Heb. 3. 18, 19.*

2. *All Divine Truth* is equally the Object of this Affent. It respects not the especial nature or use of any one Truth, be it of what kind it will, more than another; nor can it do so, since it regards only Divine Revelation. Hence that *Judas* was the Traytor must have as great an influence into our Justification, as that *Christ* died for our sins. But how contra-

ry this is unto the Scripture, the *Analogy* of Faith, and the Experience of all that believe, needs neither Declaration nor Confirmation.

3. This Assent unto all Divine Revelation may be true and sincere, where there hath been no *previous work* of the Law, nor any Conviction of sin. No such thing is required thereunto, nor are they found in many who yet do so assent unto the Truth. But, as we have shewed, this is necessary unto *Evangelical* Justifying Faith; and to suppose the contrary is to overthrow the order and use of the Law and Gospel, with their mutual Relation unto one another in subserviency unto the design of God in the Salvation of Sinners.

4. It is not a way of *seeking Relief* unto a convinced sinner, whose *mouth is stopped*, in that he is become guilty before God. Such alone are capable Subjects of Justification, and do or can seek after it in a due manner. A meer Assent unto Divine Revelation is not peculiarly suited to give such persons Relief. For it is that which brings them into that condition from whence they are to be relieved. For the knowledge of sin is by the Law. But Faith is a peculiar acting of the Soul for Deliverance.

5. It is no more then what the *Devils themselves* may have, and have, as the *Apostle James* affirms. For that Instance of their *Believing one God*, proves that they believe also whatever this one God who is the first Essential Truth doth reveal, to be true. And it may consist with all manner of wickedness, and without any Obedience; and so make God a liar, 1 *Joh.* 2. 4. And it is no wonder if men deny us to be justified by Faith, who know no other Faith but this.

6. It no way answers the Descriptions that are given of justifying Faith in the Scripture. Particularly it is by Faith as it is justifying that we are laid to *receive Christ*; *Joh.* 1. 12. *Col.* 2. 6. To *receive the Promise*, the *Word*, the *Grace of God*, the *Attonement*, *Jam.* 1. 21. *Joh.* 3. 33. *Act.* 2. 43.

chap. 11. 1. Rom. 5. 11. Heb. 11. 17. To cleave unto God, Deut. 4. 4. Act. 11. 23. And so in the Old Testament it is generally expressed by *Trust* and *Hope*. Now none of these things are contained in a *meer Assent* unto the Truth; but they require other actings of the Soul than what are peculiar unto the understanding only.

7. It answers not the *Experience* of them that truly believe. This all our Enquiries and Arguments in this matter must have respect unto. For the sum of what we aim at, is only to discover what they do, who really believe unto the Justification of Life. It is not what notions men may have hereof, nor how they express their Conceptions, how defensible they are against Objections by accuracy of Expressions and subtile Distinctions; but only what we our selves do, if we truly believe, that we enquire after. And although our Differences about it, do argue the great imperfection of that state wherein we are, so as that those who *truly believe* cannot agree what they do in their so doing, which should give us a mutual tenderness and forbearance towards each other; yet if men would attend unto their own Experience in the Application of their Souls unto God, for the pardon of Sin and Righteousness to Life, more than unto the notions which on various occasions their minds are influenced by or prepossessed withall, many differences and unnecessary disputations about the nature of Justifying Faith would be prevented or prescinded. I deny therefore that this general Assent unto the Truth, how firm soever it be, or what effects in the way of Duty or Obedience soever it may produce, doth answer the *Experience* of any one true Believer, as containing the entire Actings of his Soul towards God for pardon of sin and Justification.

8. That Faith alone is Justifying which hath Justification actually accompanying of it. For thence alone it hath that denomination. To suppose a man to have Justifying Faith,  
and

and not to be justified is to suppose a Contradiction. Nor do we enquire after the nature of any other Faith but that whereby a Believer is actually justified. But it is not so with all them in whom this *Affent* is found; nor will those that plead for it, allow that upon it alone any are immediately justified. Wherefore it is sufficiently evident that there is somewhat more required unto Justifying Faith than a *real Affent* unto all Divine Revelations, although we do give that Affent by the Faith whereby we are justified.

But on the other side, it is supposed that by some the *Object of Justifying Faith* is so much restrained, and the nature of it thereby determined unto such a peculiar Acting of the mind, as compriseth not the whole of what is in the Scripture ascribed unto it. So some have said, that it is the *pardon of our sins* in particular that is the Object of Justifying Faith; Faith therefore they make to be a full perswasion of the forgiveness of our sins through the Mediation of Christ; or that what Christ did and suffered as our Mediator, he did it for us in particular. And a particular Application of especial mercy unto our own Souls and Consciences is hereby made the Essence of Faith. Or to believe that our own sins are forgiven, seems hereby to be the first and most proper Act of *Justifying Faith*. Hence it would follow, that whosoever doth not believe, or hath not a firm perswasion of the forgiveness of his own sins in particular, hath no saving Faith, is no true Believer; which is by no means to be admitted. And if any have been or are of this Opinion, I fear that they were in the asserting of it, neglective of their own *Experience*; Or it may be rather, that they knew not how in their Experience, all the other Actings of Faith wherein its *Essence* doth consist, were included in this perswasion, which in an especial manner they aimed at; whereof we shall speak afterwards. And there is no doubt unto me but that this which they propose, Faith is suited unto, aimeth at, and doth ordinarily;

dinarily effect in true Believers, who improve it, and grow in its exercise in a due manner.

Many great Divines at the first *Reformation*, did (as the *Lutherans* generally yet do) thus make the mercy of God in Christ, and thereby the forgiveness of our own sins, to be the proper Object of Justifying Faith, as such; whose Essence therefore they placed in a *fiducial Trust* in the Grace of God by Christ declared in the Promises, with a certain *unwavering Application* of them unto our selves. And I say with some confidence, that those who endeavour not to attain hereunto, either understand not the nature of Believing, or are very neglective both of the Grace of God, and of their own Peace.

That which enclined those great and holy Persons so to express themselves in this matter, and to place the *Essence* of Faith in the *highest Acting* of it, (wherein yet they always included and supposed its other Acts) was the state of the Consciences of men with whom they had to do. Their Contest in this *Article* with the *Roman Church*, was about the way and means whereby the Consciences of convinced troubled sinners might come to rest and peace with God. For at that time they were no otherwise instructed, but that these things were to be obtained, not only by *works of Righteousness* which men did themselves in Obedience unto the Commands of God, but also by the strict observance of many *Inventions* of what they called the Church; with an Ascription of a strange Efficacy to the same Ends, unto *missatical Sacrifices, Sacramentals, Absolutions, Penances, Pilgrimages*, and other the like Superstitions. Hereby they observed that the *Consciences* of men were kept in perpetual disquietments, perplexities, fears and bondage, exclusive of that Rest, Assurance, and Peace with God through the Blood of Christ, which the Gospel proclaims and tenders. And when the *Leaders* of the People in that Church had observed this, that

in-

indeed the ways and means which they proposed and presented, would never bring the Souls of men to Rest, nor give them the least *Assurance of the pardon of sins*, they made it a part of their Doctrine, that the *belief of the pardon of our own sins*, and *Assurance of the Love of God in Christ*, were false and pernicious. For what should they else do, when they knew well enough, that in their way, and by their propositions they were not to be attained? Hence the principal Controversie in this matter which the *Reformed Divines* had with those of the *Church of Rome* was this, *whether there be according unto, and by the Gospel, a state of Rest and assured Peace with God to be attained in this life*. And having all Advantages imaginable for the proof hereof, from the very nature, use, and end of the Gospel, from the Grace, Love, and Design of God in Christ, from the Efficacy of his Mediation in his Oblation and Intercession, they assigned these things to be the especial Object of Justifying Faith, and that Faith it self to be a *fiduciary Trust* in the especial Grace and Mercy of God, through the blood of Christ, as proposed in the Promises of the Gospel. That is, they directed the Souls of men to seek for peace with God, the pardon of sin, and a Right unto the Heavenly Inheritance, by placing their sole *Trust and Confidence* in the mercy of God by Christ alone. But yet withall I never read any of them, (I know not what others have done) who affirmed that every true and sincere Believer always had a *full Assurance of the Especial Love of God in Christ*, or of the pardon of his own sins; though they plead that this the Scripture requires of them in a way of Duty, and that this they ought to aim at the Attainment of.

And these things I shall leave as I find them, unto the use of the Church. For I shall not contend with any about the way and manner of expressing the Truth, where the *Substance* of it is retained. That which in these things is aimed at, is

## 114 *Justifying Faith, the Causes, Object,*

the Advancement and Glory of the *Grace of God in Christ*, with the conduct of the Souls of men unto Rest and Peace with him. Where this is attained or aimed at, and that in the way of Truth for the substance of it, variety of Apprehensions and Expressions concerning the same things, may tend unto the useful exercise of the Faith and Edification of the Church. Wherefore neither opposing nor rejecting what hath been delivered by others as their Judgments herein, I shall propose my *own thoughts* concerning it; not without some hopes that they may tend to communicate Light in the knowledge of the thing it self enquired into, and the Reconciliation of some differences about it amongst Learned and Holy men. I say therefore, That *the Lord Jesus Christ himself, as the Ordinance of God in his work of Mediation for the Recovery and Salvation of lost sinners, and as unto that End proposed in the Promise of the Gospel, is the adequate proper Object of Justifying Faith*, or of saving Faith in its Work and Duty with respect unto our Justification.

The Reason why I thus state the *Object* of Justifying Faith, is because it compleatly answers all that is ascribed unto it in the Scripture, and all that the nature of it doth require. What belongs unto it as Faith in *general* is here supposed; and what is *peculiar* unto it as Justifying is fully expressed. And a few things will serve for the Explication of the *Thesis* which shall afterwards be confirmed.

1. The *Lord Jesus Christ himself* is asserted to be the proper Object of Justifying Faith. For so it is required in all those Testimonies of Scripture where that Faith is declared to be our *believing in him, on his name, our receiving of him, or looking unto him*, whereunto the Promise of Justification and Eternal Life is annexed; whereof afterwards. See *Joh. 1. 12. chap. 3. 16, 36. chap. 6. 29, 47. chap. 7. 38. chap. 15. 25. Act. 10. 41. Act. 13. 38, 39. Act. 16. 31. Act. 26. 18. &c.*

2. He is not proposed as the *Object* of our Faith unto the Justification of Life *absolutely*, but as the *Ordinance of God* even the Father unto that end, who therefore also is the immediate Object of Faith as Justifying; in what respects we shall declare immediately. So Justification is frequently ascribed unto Faith as peculiarly acted on him, *Joh. 5. 24. He that believeth on him that sent me, hath Everlasting Life, and shall not come into Judgment, but is passed from Death into Life.* And herein is comprized that Grace, Love and Favour of God, which is the principal moving cause of our Justification, *Rom. 3. 23, 24.* Add hereunto *Joh. 6. 29.* and the Object of Faith is compleat. *This is the Work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.* God the Father as *sending*, and the Son as *sent*, that is, Jesus Christ in the work of his Mediation, as the Ordinance of God for the Recovery and Salvation of lost sinners, is the Object of our Faith. See *1 Pet. 1. 21.*

3. That he may be the Object of our Faith whose general nature consisteth in *Assent*, and which is the Foundation of all its other Acts, He is proposed in the *promises* of the Gospel, which I therefore place as concurring unto its compleat Object. Yet do I not herein consider the *Promises* merely as peculiar *divine Revelations*, in which sense they belong unto the *formal Object* of Faith; but as they contain, propose, and exhibit Christ as the Ordinance of God and the Benefits of his Mediation unto them that do believe. There is an especial *Assent* unto the Promises of the Gospel, wherein some place the nature and essence of Justifying Faith, or of Faith in its Work and Duty with respect unto our Justification. And so they make the *Promises* of the Gospel to be the proper Object of it. And it cannot be, but that in the Actings of Justifying Faith there is a *peculiar Assent* unto them. Howbeit this being only an *Act of the mind*, neither the whole nature, nor the whole work of Faith can

# 116 *Justifying Faith, the Causes, Object,*

consist therein. Wherefore so far as the Promises concur to the compleat *Object of Faith*, they are considered *materially* also, namely, as they contain, propose, and exhibit Christ unto Believers. And in that sense are they frequently affirmed in the Scripture to be the *Object of our Faith* unto the Justification of Life, *Act.* 2. 39. *Act.* 26. 6. *Rom.* 4. 16, 20. *chap.* 15. 8. *Gal.* 3. 16, 18. *Heb.* 4. 1. *chap.* 6. 13. *chap.* 8. 6. *chap.* 10. 36.

4. The *End* for which the Lord Christ in the Work of his Mediation is the Ordinance of God, and as such proposed in the Promises of the Gospel, namely, the *Recovery and Salvation* of lost sinners, belongs unto the Object of Faith as Justifying. Hence the *forgiveness of sin* and *Eternal Life* are proposed in the Scripture as things that are to be believed unto Justification, or as the Object of our Faith, *Math.* 9. 2. *Act.* 2. 38, 39. *chap.* 5. 31. *chap.* 26. 18. *Rom.* 3. 25. *chap.* 4. 7, 8. *Col.* 2. 13. *Tit.* 1. 2. &c. And whereas the Just is to *live by his Faith*, and every one is to believe for himself, or make an Application of the things believed unto his own behoof, some from hence have affirmed the *pardon of our own sins*, and our own Salvation to be the proper Object of Faith, and indeed it doth belong thereunto when in the way and order of God and the Gospel we can attain unto it, *1 Cor.* 15. 3, 4. *Gal.* 2. 20. *Ephef.* 1. 6, 7.

Wherefore asserting the *Lord Jesus Christ in the Work of his Mediation to be the Object of Faith unto Justification*, I include therein the Grace of God which is the Cause, the pardon of sin which is the Effect, and the Promises of the Gospel which are the means of communicating Christ and the benefit of his Mediation unto us.

And all these things are so united, so intermixed in their mutual Relations and Respects, so concatenated in the purpose of God, and the Declaration made of his Will in the Gospel, as that the Believing of *any one of them* doth virtually

include the belief of the rest. And by whom any one of them is disbelieved, they frustrate and make void all the rest, and so Faith it self.

The due Consideration of these things solveth all the *Difficulties* that arise about the nature of Faith, either from the Scripture, or from the Experience of them that believe, with respect unto its *Object*. Many things in the Scripture are we said to believe with it and by it, and that unto *Justification*. But two things are hence evident. (1) That no one of them can be asserted to be the *complete adequate Object* of our Faith. (2) That none of them are so *absolutely*, but as they relate unto the Lord Christ, as the Ordinance of God for our Justification and Salvation.

And this answereth the *Experience* of all that do truly believe. For these things being united and made inseparable in the constitution of God, all of them are virtually included in every one of them. (1) Some fix their Faith and Trust *principally* on the *Grace, Love, and Mercy of God*; especially they did so under the Old Testament, before the clear Revelation of Christ and his Mediation. So did the *Psalmist*, Psal. 130. 34. Psal. 33. 18, 19. And the *Publican*, Luke 18. 13. And these are in places of the Scripture innumerable proposed as the Causes of our Justification. See *Rom.* 3. 24. *Ephes.* 2. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8. *Tit.* 3. 5, 6, 7. But this they do not absolutely, but with respect unto the *Redemption that is in the Blood of Christ*; Dan. 9. 17. Nor doth the Scripture any where propose them unto us, but under that consideration. See *Rom.* 3. 24, 25. *Ephes.* 1. 6, 7, 8. For this is the cause, way and means of the communication of that Grace, Love, and Mercy unto us. (2) Some place and fix them *principally* on the Lord Christ, his Mediation and the Benefits thereof. This the Apostle *Paul* proposeth frequently unto us in his own Example. See *Gal.* 2. 20. *Phil.* 3. 8, 9, 10. But this they do not *absolutely*, but with respect unto  
the

## 118 *Justifying Faith, the Causes, Object,*

the Grace and Love of God whence it is that they are given and communicated unto us, *Rom.* 8. 32. *Joh.* 3. 16. *Epkes.* 1. 6, 7, 8. Nor are they otherwise any where proposed unto us in the Scripture as the Object of our Faith unto Justification.

(3) Some in a *peculiar* manner fix their Souls in Believing on the Promises. And this is exemplified in the Instance of *Abraham*, *Gen.* 15. 16. *Rom.* 4. 20. And so are they proposed in the Scripture as the Object of our Faith, *Act.* 2. 39. *Rom.* 4. 16. *Heb.* 4. 1, 2. *chap.* 6. 12, 13. But this they do not merely as they are Divine Revelations, but as they contain and propose unto us the Lord Christ and the Benefits of his Mediation, from the Grace, Love, and Mercy of God. Hence the Apostle disputes at large in his *Epistle unto the Galatians*, That if Justification be any way but by the *Promise*, both the Grace of God, and the death of Christ are evacuated and made of none effect. And the Reason is, because the *Promise* is nothing but the way and means of the Communication of them unto us. (4) Some fix their Faith on the things themselves which they aim at; namely, the *pardon of sin* and *Eternal Life*. And these also in the Scripture are proposed unto us as the Object of our Faith, or that which we are to believe unto Justification, *Psal.* 130. 4. *Act.* 26. 18. *Tit.* 1. 2. But this is to be done in its proper order, especially as unto the *Application* of them unto our own Souls. For we are no where required to believe them, or our own Interest in them, but as they are effects of Grace, and Love of God, through Christ and his Mediation proposed in the Promises of the Gospel. Wherefore the Belief of them is included in the Belief of these, and is in order of nature antecedent thereunto. And the Belief of the *forgiveness* of sins and *Eternal Life*, without the due Exercise of Faith in those Causes of them, is but Presumption.

I have therefore given the entire *Object of Faith* as Justifying, or in its Work and Duty with respect unto our Justification,

fication, in compliance with the Testimonies of the Scripture, and the Experience of them that believe.

Allowing therefore their proper place unto the *Promises*, and unto the Effect of all in the pardon of sins and Eternal Life; that which I shall farther confirm is, That *the Lord Christ in the Work of his Mediation, as the Ordinance of God for the Recovery and Salvation of lost sinners, is the proper adequate Object of Justifying Faith*. And the true nature of *Evangelical Faith* consisteth in the Respect of the Heart (which we shall immediately describe) unto the Love, Grace, and Wisdom of God, with the Mediation of Christ, in his Obedience, with the Sacrifice, Satisfaction, and Attonement for sin which he made by his Blood. These things are impiously opposed by some as inconsistent. For the second Head of the *Socinian Impiety* is, That the *Grace of God, and Satisfaction of Christ* are opposite and inconsistent, so as that if we allow of the one we must deny the other. But as these things are so proposed in the Scripture, as that without granting them both, neither can be believed; so Faith which respects them as *subordinate*, namely, the *Mediation of Christ* unto the *Grace of God*, that fixeth it self on the Lord Christ and that Redemption which is in his blood, as the Ordinance of God, the Effect of his Wisdom, Grace and Love, finds rest in both, and in nothing else.

For the proof of the Assertion I need not labour in it; it being not only abundantly declared in the Scripture, but that which contains in it a principal part of the Design and Substance of the Gospel. I shall therefore only refer unto some of the Places wherein it is taught, or the Testimonies that are given unto it.

The whole is expressed in that place of the Apostle, wherein the Doctrine of Justification is most eminently proposed unto us, *Rom. 3. 24, 25. Being justified freely by his Grace through the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus; whom God hath*

set forth to be a Propitiation through Faith in his Blood; to declare his Righteousness for the Remission of sins. Whereunto we may add *Ephes. 1. 6, 7.* He hath made us accepted in the Beloved, in whom we have Redemption through his Blood, according to the Riches of his Grace. That whereby we are justified is the especial Object of our Faith unto Justification. But this is the Lord Christ in the Work of his Mediation. For we are justified by the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ; for in him we have Redemption through his Blood, even the forgiveness of sin. Christ as a Propitiation is the Cause of our Justification, and the Object of our Faith, or we attain it by Faith in his Blood. But this is so under this formal Consideration, as he is the Ordinance of God for that End, appointed, given, proposed, set forth from and by the Grace, Wisdom, and Love of God. God set him forth to be a Propitiation. He makes us accepted in the Beloved. We have Redemption in his Blood, according to the Riches of his Grace, whereby he makes us accepted in the Beloved. And herein he abounds towards us in all wisdom; *Ephes. 1. 8.* This therefore is that which the Gospel proposeth unto us, as the especial Object of our Faith unto the Justification of Life.

But we may also in the same manner confirm the several parts of the Assertion distinctly.

1. The Lord Jesus Christ as proposed in the Promise of the Gospel, is the peculiar Object of Faith unto Justification. There are three sorts of Testimonies whereby this is confirmed.

1. Those wherein it is positively asserted. As *Act. 10. 41.* To him give all the Prophets witness, that through his Name, whosoever believeth in him shall receive the Remission of sins. Christ believed in as the means and cause of the Remission of sins, is that which all the Prophets give witness unto, *Act. 16. 31.* Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved. It is the Answer of the Apostles unto the *Jaylors* enquiry;  
Sirs,

Sirs, *What must I do to be saved?* His Duty in Believing, and the Object of it, *the Lord Jesus Christ*, is what they return thereunto, *Act. 4. 12. Neither is there Salvation in any other; for there is none other Name under Heaven given unto men whereby we must be saved.* That which is proposed unto us as the *only way* and means of our Justification and Salvation, and that in opposition unto all other ways, is the *Object of Faith* unto our Justification; But this is *Christ alone*, exclusively unto all other things. This is testified unto by *Moses* and the *Prophets*; the Design of the whole Scripture being to direct the Faith of the Church unto the Lord Christ alone, for Life and Salvation, *Luke 24. 25, 26, 27.*

2. All those wherein *Justifying Faith* is affirmed to be, our *Believing in him*, or *Believing on his name*, which are multiplied. *Joh. 1. 12. He gave power to them to become the Sons of God, who believed on his name, chap. 3. 16. That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life, ver. 36. He that believeth on the Son hath Everlasting Life, chap. 6. 29. This is the work of God that ye believe on him whom he hath sent, ver. 47. He that believeth on me hath Everlasting Life, chap. 7. 38. He that believeth on me, out of his Belly shall flow Rivers of Living Water. So chap. 9. 35, 36, 37. chap. 11. 25. Act. 26. 18. That they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them that are sanctified, by Faith that is in me, 1 Pet. 2. 6, 7.* In all which places, and many other, we are not only directed to place and affix our Faith on him, but the Effect of Justification is ascribed thereunto. So expressly, *Act. 13. 38, 39.* which is what we design to prove.

3. Those which give us such a description of the Acts of Faith, as make him the direct and proper Object of it. Such are they wherein it is called a *receiving of him*, *Joh. 1. 12. To as many as received him, Col. 2. 6. As you have received Christ Jesus the Lord.* That which we receive by Faith is the

proper Object of it. And it is represented their *looking* unto the Brazen Serpent when it was lifted up, who were stung by fiery Serpents, *Joh. 3. 14, 15. chap. 12. 32.* Faith is that Act of the Soul whereby Convinced sinners, ready otherwise to perish, do *look* unto Christ as he was made a Propitiation for their sins; and who so do shall not perish but have Everlasting Life. He is therefore the Object of our Faith.

2ly. He is so as he is the *Ordinance of God* unto this End, which consideration is not to be separated from our Faith in him. And this also is confirmed by several sorts of Testimonies.

1. All Those wherein the *Love and Grace of God* are proposed as the only *Cause* of giving Jesus Christ to be the way and means of our Recovery and Salvation, whence *they* become, or *God* in them, the supream Efficient Cause of our Justification, *Joh. 3. 16. God so loved the World that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life, So Rom. 5. 8. 1 Joh. 4. 9, 10. Being justified freely by his Grace, through the Redemption that is in Christ, Rom. 3. 23. Ephes. 1. 6, 7, 8.* This the Lord Christ directs our Faith unto continually, referring all unto him that sent him, and whose Will he came to do, *Heb. 10. 5.*

2. All those wherein God is said to *set forth* and *propose* Christ, and to *make him* be for us, and unto us, what he is so, unto the Justification of Life, *Rom. 3. 25. Whom God hath proposed to be a Propitiation, 1 Cor. 1. 30. Who of God is made unto us Wisdom and Righteousness, and Sanctification and Redemption, 2 Cor. 5. 21. He hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him. Act. 5. 35. &c.* Wherefore in the acting of Faith in Christ unto Justification, we can no otherwise consider him but as the Ordinance of God to that End; he brings nothing unto us, does nothing for us, but what God appointed, designed,

signed, and *made* him to be. And this must diligently be considered, that by our regard by Faith unto the Blood, the Sacrifice, the Satisfaction of Christ, we take off nothing from the free Grace, Favour and Love of God.

3. All those wherein the *Wisdom of God*, in the contrivance of this way of Justification and Salvation is proposed unto us; Ephes. 1. 7, 8. *In whom we have Redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the Riches of his Grace, wherein he hath abounded towards us in all Wisdom and Understanding.* See chap. 3. 10, 11. 1 Cor. 1. 24.

The whole is comprized in that of the Apostle; *God was in Christ reconciling the World unto himself, not imputing their Trespases unto them,* 2 Cor. 5. 19. All that is done in our Reconciliation unto God, as unto the pardon of our sins, and Acceptance with him unto Life, was by the presence of God in his Grace, Wisdom, and Power in Christ, designing and effecting of it.

Wherefore the Lord Christ proposed in the Promise of the Gospel as the Object of our Faith unto the Justification of Life, is considered as the Ordinance of God unto that End. Hence the Love, the Grace, and the Wisdom of God in the sending and giving of him, are comprized in that Object; and not only the Actings of God in Christ towards us, but all his Actings towards the Person of Christ himself unto the same End belong thereunto. So as unto his *Death*; God *set him forth* to be a Propitiation; *Rom. 3. 24.* He *spared him not,* but delivered him up for us all, *Rom. 8. 32.* And therein *laid all our sins upon him,* Isa. 53. 6. So he was raised for our Justification, *Rom. 4. 25.* And our Faith is in God who *raised him from the dead,* Rom. 10. 9. And in his Exaltation, *Act. 5. 31.* Which things compleat the record that God hath given of his Son, 1 *Joh. 5. 10, 11, 12.*

The whole is confirmed by the Exercise of Faith in prayer, which is the Souls Application of it self unto God for the

participation of the Benefits of the Mediation of Christ. And it is called our *Access through him* unto the Father; *Eph. 2. 18.* Our coming through him *unto the Throne of Grace*, that we may obtain Mercy, and find Grace to help in time of need, *Heb. 4. 15, 16.* and through him, as both an High Priest and Sacrifice, *Heb. 10. 19, 20, 21.* So do we bow our Knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, *Ephes. 3. 14.* This answereth the Experience of all who know what it is to pray. We come therein in the name of Christ, by him, through his Mediation, unto God even the Father, to be through his Grace, Love and Mercy, made partakers of what he hath designed and promised to communicate unto poor sinners by him. And this represents the compleat Object of our Faith.

The due Consideration of these things will reconcile and reduce into a perfect Harmony, whatever is spoken in the Scripture concerning the Object of Justifying Faith, or what we are said to believe therewith. For whereas this is affirmed of sundry things distinctly, they can none of them be supposed to be the *entire adequate Object* of Faith. But consider them all in their Relation unto Christ, and they have all of them their proper place therein; namely, the Grace of God, which is the Cause; the pardon of sin, which is the Effect; and the Promises of the Gospel, which are the Means of communicating the Lord Christ and the benefits of his Mediation unto us.

The Reader may be pleased to take notice that I do in this place not only neglect, but despise the late Attempt of some, to wrest all things of this nature spoken of the Person and Mediation of Christ unto the Doctrine of the Gospel, exclusively unto them; and that not only as what is noisome and impious in it self, but as that also which hath not yet been endeavoured to be proved, with any Appearance of Learning, Argument, or Sobriety.

## CHAP. II.

*The Nature of Justifying Faith.*

**T**Hat which we shall now enquire into, is the *Nature of Justifying Faith*; or of Faith in that Act and Exercise of it whereby we are justified, or whereon Justification according unto Gods Ordination and Promise doth ensue. And the *Reader* is desired to take along with him a supposition of those things which we have already ascribed unto it, as it is *sincere Faith* in general; as also of what is required previously thereunto, as unto its especial Nature, Work and Duty in our Justification. For we do deny that ordinarily and according unto the method of Gods proceeding with us declared in the Scripture, wherein the Rule of our Duty is prescribed, that any one doth, or can truly believe with Faith unto Justification, in whom the Work of *Conviction* before described, hath not been wrought. All Descriptions or Definitions of Faith that have not a respect thereunto, are but vain speculations. And hence some do give us such Definitions of Faith, as it is hard to conceive, that they ever asked of themselves, what they do in their Believing on Jesus Christ for Life and Salvation.

The Nature of Justifying Faith with respect unto that Exercise of it whereby we are justified, consisteth in the *Hearts Approbation of the way of Justification and Salvation of sinners by Jesus Christ proposed in the Gospel, as proceeding from the Grace, Wisdom, and Love of God, with its Acquiescency therein, as unto its own Concernment and Condition.*

There needs no more for the Explanation of this Declaration of the Nature of Faith, than what we have before proved concerning its *Object*; and what may seem wanting there-

thereunto, will be fully supplied in the ensuing Confirmation of it. The Lord Christ and his Mediation, as the Ordinance of God for the Recovery, Life and Salvation of sinners, is supposed as the *Object* of this Faith. And they are all considered as an Effect of the Wisdom, Grace, Authority and Love of God, with all their actings in and towards the Lord Christ himself in his susception and discharge of his Office. Hereunto he constantly refers all that he did and suffered, with all the Benefits redounding unto the Church thereby. Hence as we observed before, sometimes the Grace, or Love, or especial Mercy of God, sometimes his actings in or towards the Lord Christ himself, in sending him, giving him up unto Death, and raising him from the dead, are proposed as the *Object* of our Faith unto Justification. But they are so always with respect unto his Obedience and the Atonement that he made for sin. Neither are they so altogether absolutely considered, but as proposed in the Promises of the Gospel. Hence a sincere Assent unto the divine Veracity in those Promises, is included in this Approbation.

What belongs unto the Confirmation of this *Description of Faith* shall be reduced unto these four Heads. (1) The Declaration of its contrary, or the nature of *privative unbelief* upon the proposal of the Gospel. For these things do mutually illustrate one another. (2) The Declaration of the *Design and End of God* in and by the Gospel. (3) The Nature of *Faiths compliance* with that Design, or its Actings with respect thereunto. (4) The *Order, Method, and Way* of Believing as declared in the Scripture.

1. The *Gospel* is the Revelation or Declaration of that way of Justification and Salvation for sinners by Jesus Christ, which God in infinite Wisdom, Love and Grace, hath prepared. And upon a supposition of the *Reception* thereof, it is accompanied with *Precepts* of Obedience, and Promises of Rewards. Therein the *Righteousness of God*, that which he requires,

requires, accepts and approves unto Salvation, *is revealed from Faith unto Faith*, Rom. 1. 17. This is the Record of God therein *that he hath given unto us Eternal Life, and this Life is in his Son*, 1 Joh. 5. 10. So Joh. 3. 14, 15, 16, 17. The Words of this Life, Act. 5. 20. All the Counfel of God, Act. 20. 27. Wherefore in the Dispensation or Preaching of the Gospel, this *way of Salvation* is proposed unto sinners, as the great Effect of divine Wisdom and Grace. *Unbelief* is the Rejection, Neglect, Non-admission, or *Disapprobation* of it, on the Terms whereon, and for the Ends for which it is so proposed. The Unbelief of the *Pharisees* upon the preparatory Preaching of *John the Baptist* is called the *rejecting of the Counfel of God against themselves*, that is, unto their own Ruine, Luke 7. 30. They *would none of my Counfel*, is an Expression to the same purpose, Prov. 1. 30. so is, the *neglecting of this great Salvation*, Heb. 2. 3. Not giving it that Admission which the Excellency of it doth require. A disallowing of Christ; The Stone *ὃν ἀπεδοκίμασαν οἱ οἰκοδομῆντες*, 1 Pet. 2. 7. The *Builders disapproved of*, as not meet for that Place and Work whereunto it was designed, Act. 4. 14. This is Unbelief. To disapprove of Christ and the Way of Salvation by him, as not answering Divine Wisdom nor suited unto the End designed. So is it described by the *refusing* or not *receiving* of him, all to the same purpose.

What is intended will be more Evident, if we consider the proposal of the Gospel where it issued in *Unbelief*, in the first preaching of it, and where it continueth still so to do.

1. Most of those who rejected the Gospel by their *Unbelief*, did it under this notion, that the *way of Salvation* and Blessedness proposed therein, was not a way answering Divine Goodness and Power, such as they might safely Confide in and Trust unto. This the Apostle declares at large, 1 Cor. 1. so he expresseth it, ver. 23, 24. *We Preach Christ crucified unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness.*

But

But unto them that are called both Jews and Greeks, Christ the Power of God, and the Wisdom of God. That which they declared unto them in the preaching of the Gospel was, That Christ died for our sins according to the Scripture, chap. 15. 3. Herein they proposed him as the Ordinance of God, as the great effect of his *Wisdom and Power* for the Salvation of sinners. But as unto those who continued in their *Unbelief*, they rejected it as any such way, esteeming it both *Weakness* and *Folly*. And therefore he describeth the Faith of them that are called by their *Approbation of the Wisdom and Power of God* herein. The want of a comprehension of the Glory of God in this way of Salvation, rejecting it thereon, is that *Unbelief* which ruins the Souls of men, 2 Cor. 4. 3, 4.

So is it with all that continue *Unbelievers* under the proposal of the Object of Faith in the Preaching of the Gospel. They may give an *Assent* unto the Truth of it, so far as it is a meer Act of the mind; at least they find not themselves concerned to reject it. Yea they may Assent unto it with that *Temporary Faith* which we described before, and perform many Duties of Religion thereon. Yet do they manifest that they are not sincere Believers, that they do not *believe with the Heart unto Righteousness*, by many things that are irreconcilable unto, and inconsistent with Justifying Faith. The Enquiry therefore is, wherein the *Unbelief* of such persons on the Account whereof they perish, doth consist, and what is the formal nature of it. It is not as was said, in the want of an *Assent* unto the Truths of the Doctrine of the Gospel; for from such an *Assent* are they said in many places of the Scripture to believe, as hath been proved. And this Assent may be so firm, and by various means so radicated in their minds, as that in Testimony unto it they may give their Bodies to be burned; as men also may do in the confirmation of a false persuasion. Nor is it the want of an *especial fiduciary Application* of the Promises of the Gospel unto themselves,

selves, and the belief of the pardon of their own sins in particular. For this is not proposed unto them in the first preaching of the Gospel, as that which they are first to believe; and there may be a believing unto Righteousness where this is not attained, *Isa.* 50. 10. This will evidence Faith not to be true, but it is not formal unbelief. Nor is it the want of *Obedience* unto the precepts of the Gospel in Duties of Holiness and Righteousness. For these commands as formally given in and by the Gospel, belong only unto them that truly believe and are justified thereon. That therefore which is required unto *Evangelical Faith*, wherein the nature of it doth consist, as it is the foundation of all future Obedience, is the *Hearts Approbation of the way of Life and Salvation* by Jesus Christ, proposed unto it as the Effect of the infinite Wisdom, Love, Grace, and Goodness of God; and as that which is suited unto all the wants and whole design of Guilty Convinced sinners. This such Persons have not, and in the want thereof consists the formal Nature of *Unbelief*. For without this, no man is, or can be influenced by the Gospel unto a Relinquishment of sin, or encouraged unto Obedience, whatever they may do on other grounds and motives that are forraign unto the Grace of it. And wherever this Cordial sincere Approbation of the way of Salvation by Jesus Christ proposed in the Gospel doth prevail, it will infallibly produce both Repentance and Obedience.

If the Mind and Heart of a Convinced sinner (for of such alone we treat) be able spiritually to discern the Wisdom, Love, and Grace of God in this way of Salvation, and be under the power of that perswasion, he hath the ground of Repentance and Obedience which is given by the Gospel. The receiving of Christ mentioned in the Scripture, and whereby the Nature of Faith in its exercise is expressed, I refer unto the latter part of the Description given concern-

ning the Souls' *Acquiescency* in God, by the way proposed.

Again, Some there were at first, and such still continue to be, who rejected not this way *absolutely*, and in the notion of it, but *comparatively*, as reduced to practice, and so perished in their unbelief. They judged the way of their own Righteousness to be better, as that which might be more safely trusted unto, as more according unto the mind of God and unto his Glory. So did the *Jews* generally, the frame of whose minds the Apostle represents, *Rom. 10. 3, 4.* And many of them assented unto the Doctrine of the Gospel in general as true, howbeit they liked it not in their Hearts as the best way of Justification and Salvation, but sought for them by the works of the Law.

Wherefore *Unbelief* in its formal nature consists in the want of a spiritual discerning, and *Approbation* of the way of salvation by Jesus Christ, as an Effect of the infinite Wisdom, Goodness and Love of God. For where these are, the Soul of a convinced sinner cannot but embrace it, and adhere unto it. Hence also all *Acquiescency* in this Way, and Trust and Confidence in committing the Soul unto it, or unto God in it, and by it, without which whatever is pretended of Believing is but a shadow of Faith, is impossible unto such persons. For they want the *foundation* whereon alone they can be built. And the consideration hereof doth sufficiently manifest wherein the *nature of true Evangelical Faith* doth consist.

2. The *Design of God* in and by the Gospel with the Work and Office of Faith with respect thereunto, farther confirms the Description given of it. That which God designeth herein in the *first place*, is not the Justification and Salvation of sinners. His utmost compleat End in all his Counsels, is his own Glory; he *doth all things for himself*, nor can he who is infinite do otherwise. But in an especial manner he expresseth this concerning this way of Salvation by Jesus Christ.

Particularly, He designed herein the Glory of his *Righteousness*. To declare his *Righteousness*; Rom. 3. 25. Of his Love; God so loved the world, Joh. 3. 16. Herein we perceive the Love of God that he laid down his life for us, 1 Joh. 3. 16. Of his Grace; accepted to the praise of the Glory of his Grace, Ephes. 1. 5, 6. Of his Wisdom; Christ Crucified, the *Wisdom of God*, 1 Cor. 1. 24. might be known by the Church the *manifest wisdom of God*, Ephes. 3. 10. Of his Power; It is the *Power of God unto Salvation*, Rom. 1. 16. Of his *Faithfulness*, Rom. 4. 16. For God designed herein, not only the Reparation of all that Glory, whose Declaration was impeached and obscured by the Entrance of sin, but also a farther Exaltation and more eminent Manifestation of it, as unto the *Degrees of its Exaltation*, and some especial Instances before concealed, Ephes. 3. 9. And all this is called the *Glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ*, whereof Faith is the beholding, 2 Cor. 4. 6.

3. This being the principal Design of God in the way of Justification and Salvation by Christ proposed in the Gospel, that which on our part is required unto a participation of the Benefits of it, is the *Ascription of that Glory unto God which he designs* so to Exalt. The Acknowledgment of all these glorious properties of the Divine Nature, as manifested in the provision and proposition of this way of life, Righteousness and Salvation, with an *Approbation* of the way it self as an effect of them, and that which is safely to be trusted unto, is that which is required of us; and this is *Faith* or Believing. *Being strong in Faith he gave Glory to God*, Rom. 4. 22. And this is in the nature of the weakest degree of sincere Faith. And no other Grace, Work or Duty, is suited hereunto, or firstly and directly of that tendency, but only consequentially and in the way of Gratitude. And although I cannot wholly Assent unto him who affirms that Faith in the Epistles of *Paul*, is nothing but, *Existimatio*  
S 2 *magnificæ*

*magnifice sentiens de Dei Potentia, Justitia, Bonitate, & si quid promiserit in eo prestando constantia*; because it is too general and not limited unto the way of Salvation by Christ, his *Elect in whom he will be glorified*, yet hath it much of the Nature of Faith in it. Wherefore I say, that hence we may both learn the Nature of Faith, and whence it is that Faith alone is required unto our Justification. The Reason of it is, because this is that Grace or Duty *alone* whereby we do or can give unto God that Glory which he designeth to manifest and exalt in and by Jesus Christ. This, only Faith is suited unto, and this it is to believe. Faith in the sense we enquire after, is the Hearts Approbation of, and consent unto the way of Life and Salvation of sinners by Jesus Christ, as that, wherein the Glory of the Righteousness, Wisdom, Grace, Love, and Mercy of God is exalted, the praise whereof it ascribes unto him, and resteth in it, as unto the Ends of it, namely, Justification, Life and Salvation. It is to give *Glory to God*, Rom. 4. 20. *to behold his Glory as in a Glass*, or the Gospel wherein it is represented unto us, 2 Cor. 3. 18. To have in our Hearts the *Light of the Knowledge of the Glory of God in the Face of Jesus Christ*, 2 Cor. 4. 6. The contrary whereunto makes God a liar, and thereby despoileth him of the Glory of all those holy properties which he this way designed to manifest, 1 Joh. 5. 10.

And if I mistake not, this is that which the Experience of them that truly believe, when they are out of the Heats of *Disputation* will give Testimony unto.

4. To understand the Nature of Justifying Faith aright, or the Act and Exercise of saving Faith in order unto our Justification, which are properly enquired after, we must consider the order of it, first the things which are necessarily previous thereunto, and then what it is to believe with respect unto them. As,

1. The state of a *Convinced sinner*; who is the only *Subiectum*

*jectum capax Justificationis.* This hath been spoken unto already ; and the necessity of its precedency unto the orderly proposal and receiving of Evangelical Righteousness unto Justification, demonstrated. If we lose a respect hereunto, we lose our best Guide towards the Discovery of the Nature of Faith. Let no man think to understand the Gospel, who knoweth nothing of the Law. Gods constitution and the nature of the things themselves, have given the Law the precedency with respect unto sinners ; for by the *Law is the knowledge of sin.* And Gospel Faith is the Souls acting according to the mind of God for deliverance from that state and condition which it is cast under by the Law. And all those Descriptions of Faith which abound in the Writings of *Learned men*, which do not at least include in them a *virtual* respect unto this state and condition, or the Work of the Law on the Consciences of sinners, are all of them vain speculations. There is nothing in this whole Doctrine that I will more firmly adhere unto, than the necessity of the *Convictions* mentioned previous unto true Believing, without which not one line of it can be understood aright, and men do but beat the Air in their contentions about it. See *Rom. 3. 21, 22, 23, 24.*

2. We suppose herein a *sincere Assent* unto all Divine Revelations, whereof the Promises of Grace and Mercy by Christ are an especial part. This *Paul* supposed in *Agrippa* when he would have won him over unto Faith in Christ Jesus. *King Agrippa believest thou the Prophets, I know that thou believest,* Act. 26. 27. And this Assent which respects the Promises of the Gospel, not as they contain, propose, and exhibit the Lord Christ and the Benefits of his Mediation unto us, but as *Divine Revelations* of infallible Truth, is true and sincere in its kind, as we described it before under the notion of Temporary Faith. But as it proceeds no farther, as it includes no Act of the Will or Heart, it is *not that Faith* whereby

whereby we are Justified. However it is required thereunto, and is included therein.

3. The *proposal of the Gospel* according unto the Mind of God is hereunto supposed. That is, that it be preached according unto Gods Appointment. For not only the Gospel it self, but the Dispensation or Preaching of it in the Ministry of the Church is ordinarily required unto Believing. This the Apostle asserts, and proves the necessity of it at large, *Rom. 10. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17.* Herein the Lord Christ and his Mediation with God, the only way and means for the Justification and Salvation of lost convinced sinners, as the product and effect of Divine Wisdom, Love, Grace, and Righteousness, is revealed, declared, proposed, and offered unto such sinners. For therein is the Righteousness of God revealed from Faith unto Faith, *Rom. 1. 17.* The Glory of God is represented as in a *Glass*, *2 Cor. 3. 18.* and *Life and Immortality are brought to Light through the Gospel*, *2 Tim. 1. 10.* *Heb. 2. 3.* Wherefore,

4. The Persons who are required to believe, and whose immediate Duty it is so to do, are such who really in their own Consciences are brought unto, and do make the Enquiries mentioned in the Scripture; *What shall we do? What shall we do to be saved? How shall we fly from the wrath to come? Wherewithall shall we appear before God? How shall we answer what is laid unto our Charge?* Or such as being sensible of the Guilt of sin do seek for a Righteousness in the sight of God, *Act. 2. 38. Act. 16. 30, 31. Micah 6. 6, 7. Isa. 35. 4. Heb. 6. 18.*

On these suppositions the Command and Direction given unto men being, *Believe and you shall be saved*, the Enquiry is, what is that *Act or Work of Faith*, whereby they may obtain a real interest or propriety in the Promises of the Gospel, and the things declared in them unto their Justification before God.

And 1. It is evident from what hath been discoursed, that it doth not consist in, that it is not to be fully expressed by any *one single habit* or Act of the Mind or Will distinctly whatever. For there are such Descriptions given of it in the Scripture, such things are proposed as the Object of it, and such is the *Experience* of all that sincerely believe, as no one *single Act* either of the Mind or Will, can answer unto. Nor can an exact method of those Acts of the Soul which are concurrent therein be prescribed. Only what is *Essential* unto it is manifest.

2. That which in order of Nature seems to have the *precedency* is the *Assent* of the Mind unto that which the *Psalmist* betakes himself unto in the first place for relief, under a sense of sin and trouble, *Psal. 130. 3, 4. If thou Lord shouldst mark Iniquity, O Lord, who shall stand.* The Sentence of the Law and Judgment of Conscience lye against him as unto any Acceptation with God. Therefore he despairs in himself, of *standing in Judgment*, or being acquitted before him. In this state that which the Soul first fixeth on as unto its relief is, that there is *forgiveness with God*. This as declared in the Gospel, is, that God in his Love and Grace will pardon and justify guilty sinners through the blood and Mediation of Christ. So it is proposed, *Rom. 3. 23, 24.* The *Assent* of the Mind hereunto as proposed in the Promise of the Gospel, is the *root of Faith*, the foundation of all that the Soul doth in believing. Nor is there any *Evangelical Faith* without it. But yet consider it abstractedly as a meer Act of the Mind, the Essence and Nature of Justifying Faith doth not consist solely therein, though it cannot be without it. But,

2. This is accompanied in sincere Believing with an *Approbation* of the way of Deliverance and Salvation proposed, as an effect of Divine Grace, Wisdom and Love, whereon the *Heart* doth rest in it, and apply it self unto it, according to the Mind of God. This is *that Faith* whereby we are justified.

fied; which I shall farther evince by shewing what is included in it, and inseparable from it.

1. It includeth in it a *sincere Renunciation* of all other ways and means for the attaining of Righteousness, Life and Salvation. This is Essential unto Faith, Act. 4. 12. Hof. 14. 2, 3. Jerem. 3. 23. Psal. 71. 16. *I will make mention of thy Righteousness, of thine only.* When a person is in the condition before described, (and such alone are called immediately to believe, *Math. 9. 13. chap. 11. 28. 1 Tim. 1. 15.*) many things will present themselves unto him for his relief; particularly his own Righteousness, *Rom. 10. 3.* A Renunciation of them all as unto any hope or expectation of Relief from them, belongs unto sincere Believing, *Isa. 50. 10, 11.*

2. There is in it the *Wills consent*, whereby the Soul betakes it self cordially and sincerely, as unto all its expectation of pardon of sin and Righteousness before God, unto the way of Salvation proposed in the Gospel. This is that which is called *coming unto Christ, and receiving of him*, whereby true Justifying Faith is so often expressed in the Scripture; or as it is peculiarly called believing in him, or believing on his name. The whole is expressed, *Joh. 14. 6. Jesus saith unto him, I am the Way, the Truth and the Life, no Man cometh unto the Father but by me.*

3. An *Acquiescency* of the Heart in God, as the Author and principal Cause of the way of Salvation prepared; as acting in a way of Sovereign Grace and Mercy towards sinners; *Who by him do believe in God who raised him up from the dead, and gave him Glory, that your faith and hope might be in God,* 1 Pet. 1. 21. The Heart of a sinner doth herein give unto God the Glory of all those holy properties of his Nature which he designed to manifest in and by Jesus Christ. See *Isa. 42. 1. chap. 49. 3.* And this *Acquiescency* of the Heart in God, is that which is the immediate root of that waiting, patience, long-suffering and hope, which are the proper Acts

Acts and Effects of Justifying Faith, *Heb.* 6. 12, 15, 18, 19.

4. *Trust in God*, or the Grace and Mercy of God in and through the Lord Christ as set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his Blood, doth belong hereunto, or necessarily ensue hereon. For the person called unto Believing, is (1) *convinced* of sin, and exposed unto wrath. (2) Hath *nothing* else to trust unto for Help and Relief. (3) Doth actually *renounce* all other things that tender themselves unto that End; and therefore without some Act of *Trust* the Soul must lye under actual Despair, which is utterly inconsistent with Faith, or the Choice and Approbation of the way of Salvation before described. 5. The most frequent Declaration of the Nature of Faith in the Scripture, especially in the Old Testament, is by this *Trust*, and that because it is that Act of it which *composeth* the Soul, and brings it unto all the Rest it can attain. For all our Rest in this world is from Trust in God. And the especial Object of this Trust, so far as it belongs unto the Nature of that Faith whereby we are Justified, is *God in Christ* reconciling the World unto himself. For this is respected where his Goodness, his Mercy, his Grace, his Name, his Faithfulness, his Power, are expressed, or any of them, as that which it doth immediately rely upon. For they are no way the Object of our Trust, nor can be, but on the account of the Covenant which is confirmed and ratified in and by the Blood of Christ alone.

Whether this *Trust* or Confidence shall be esteemed of the *Essence* of Faith, or as that which on the first fruit and working of it we are found in the exercise of, we need not positively determine. I place it therefore as that which belongs unto Justifying Faith, and is inseparable from it. For if all we have spoken before concerning Faith may be comprised under the notion of a firm Assent and Perswasion, yet it cannot be so, if any such Assent be conceivable exclusive of this Trust.

This *Trust* is that whereof many Divines do make *special*  
T *mercy*

*mercy* to be the peculiar Object ; and that especial mercy to be such as to include in it the pardon of our own sins. This by their Adversaries is fiercely opposed, and that on such Grounds as manifest that they do not believe that there is any such state attainable in this Life ; and that if there were, it would not be of any use unto us, but rather be a means of security and negligence in our Duty ; wherein they betray how great is the Ignorance of these things in their own Minds. But Mercy may be said to be *Especial* two ways. (1) In it self, and in opposition unto common mercy. (2) With respect unto him that believes. In the first sense *Especial mercy* is the Object of Faith as Justifying. For no more is intended by it, but the Grace of God setting forth Christ to be a propitiation through Faith in his Blood, *Rom. 3. 23, 24.* And Faith in this Especial mercy, is that which the Apostle calls our *Receiving of the Atonement*, *Rom. 5. 11.* That is our Approbation of it, and Adherence unto it, as the great Effect of Divine Wisdom, Goodness, Faithfulness, Love and Grace, which will therefore never fail them who put their Trust in it. In the latter sense it is looked on as the *pardon of our own sins* in particular, the especial mercy of God unto our Souls. That this is the Object of Justifying Faith, That a man is bound to believe this in order of Nature antecedent unto his Justification I do deny ; neither yet do I know of any Testimony or safe Experience whereby it may be confirmed. But yet for any to deny that an *undeceiving belief* hereof is to be attained in this life ; or that it is our duty to believe the pardon of our own sins, and the especial Love of God in Christ, in the order and method of our duty and privileges limited and determined in the Gospel, so as to come to the full assurance of them, ( though I will not deny but that Peace with God which is inseparable from Justification may be without them ) seem not to be much acquainted with the Design of God in the Gospel, the Efficacy of the  
Sacrifice

Sacrifice of Christ, the Nature and Work of Faith or their own Duty, nor the professed Experience of Believers recorded in the Scripture. See *Rom.* 5. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. *Heb.* 10. 2, 10, 21, 20. *Psal.* 46. 1, 2. *Psal.* 138. 7, 8. &c. Yet it is granted that all these things are rather fruits or effects of Faith, as under Exercise and Improvement, than of the *Essence* of it, as it is the Instrument in our Justification.

And the Trust before mentioned, which is either Essential to Justifying Faith, or inseparable from it, is excellently expressed by *Bernard*, De Evangel. Ser. 3. *Tria considero in quibus tota mea spes consistit; charitatem adoptionis, veritatem promissionis, potestatem redditionis. Murmuret jam quantum voluerit, inspiens cogitatio mea, dicens Quis enim es tu, & quanta est illa gloria, quibusve meritis hanc obtinere speras? & ego fiducialiter respondebo, Scio cui credidi, & certus sum quia in charitate adoptavit me, quia verax in promissione, quia potens in exhibitione; licet enim ei facere quod voluerit. Hic est funiculus triplex, qui difficulter rumpitur, quem nobis ex patria nostra in hanc terram usq; demissum, firmiter obsecro teneamus, & ipse nos sublevet, ipse nos trahat & pertrahat usq; ad conspectum gloriae magni Dei, qui est benedictus in secula.*

Concerning this Faith and Trust it is earnestly pleaded by many, that *Obedience* is included in it. But as to the way and *manner thereof* they variously express themselves. *Socinus* and those who follow him absolutely, do make *Obedience* to be the Essential form of Faith, which is denied by *Episcopius*. The Papists distinguish between Faith *informed*, and Faith *formed* by Charity, which comes to the same purpose. For both are built on this supposition, that there may be true *Evangelical Faith*, that which is required as our Duty, and consequently is accepted of God, that may contain all in it which is comprised in the name and duty of Faith, that may be without Charity or Obedience, and so be useless. For the *Socinians* do not make *Obedience* to be the *Essence* of Faith

absolutely, but as it justifieth. And so they plead unto this purpose, that Faith without works is dead. But to suppose that a *dead Faith*, or that Faith which is dead, is that Faith which is required of us in the Gospel in the way of Duty, is a monstrous Imagination. Others plead for *Obedience, Charity, the Love of God* to be included in the Nature of Faith; but plead not directly that this *Obedience* is the *form* of Faith, but that which belongs unto the perfection of it, as it is justifying. Neither yet do they say that by this *Obedience*, a *continued course* of Works and Obedience, as though that were necessary unto our first Justification, is required; but only a sincere active purpose of Obedience; and thereon, as the manner of our days is, load them with reproaches who are otherwise minded, if they knew who they were. For how impossible it is according unto their principles who believe Justification by Faith alone, that justifying Faith should be without a *sincere purpose of Heart* to obey God in all things, I shall briefly declare. For (1) They believe that Faith is *not of our selves*, it is the *Gift of God*; yea that it is a Grace wrought in the Hearts of men by the exceeding greatness of his Power. And to suppose such a Grace dead, unactive, unfruitful, not operative unto the Great End of the Glory of God, and the transforming of the Souls of them that receive it into his Image, is a Reflection on the Wisdom, Goodness, and Love of God himself. (2) That this Grace is in them a *principle of spiritual Life*; which in the habit of it as resident in the Heart, is not *really distinguished* from that of all other Grace whereby we live to God. So that there should be Faith habitually in the Heart, I mean that Evangelical Faith we enquire after, or actually exercised, where there is not an habit of all other Graces, is utterly impossible. Neither is it possible that there should be any Exercise of this Faith unto Justification, but where the mind is prepared, disposed, and determined unto universal Obedience. And therefore (3) It

is denied, that any Faith, Trust, or Confidence which may be imagined, so as to be absolutely separable from, and have its whole nature consistent with the absence of all other Graces, is *that Faith* which is the especial Gift of God, and which in the Gospel is required of us in a way of Duty. And whereas some have said, That *Men may believe, and place their firm Trust in Christ for Life and Salvation, and yet not be justified*; it is a position so destructive unto the Gospel, and so full of scandal unto all pious Souls, and contains such an express denial of the Record that God hath given concerning his Son Jesus Christ, as I wonder that any person of Sobriety and Learning should be surpris'd unto it. And whereas they plead the Experience of multitudes *who profess this firm Faith and Confidence in Christ,* and yet are not *justified*; it is true indeed, but nothing unto their purpose. For *whatever they profess,* not only, not one of them do so in the sight and judgment of God, where this matter is to be tried; but it is no difficult matter to evict them of the folly and falseness of this profession, by the Light and Rule of the Gospel, even in their own Consciencés if they would attend unto Instruction.

Wherefore we say the Faith whereby we are justified is such as is not found in any but those who are made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and by him united unto Christ, whose Nature is renewed, and in whom there is a principle of all Grace and purpose of Obedience. Only we say it is not any other Grace, as *Charity* and the like, nor any *Obedience* that gives life and form unto this Faith; but it is this Faith that gives life and efficacy unto all other Graces, and *form* unto all Evangelical Obedience. Neither doth any thing hence accrue unto our Adversaries, who would have all those Graces which are in their Root and Principle at least, present in all that are to be justified, to have the *same influence* unto our Justification as Faith hath; or that we are said to be justified by Faith alone, and in Explication of it in answer unto the

Reproaches of the *Romanists*, do say we are justified by Faith alone, but not by that Faith which is alone, that we intend by Faith all other Graces and Obedience also. For besides that, the nature of no other Grace is capable of that Office which is assigned unto Faith in our Justification, nor can be assumed into a society in operation with it, namely, to receive Christ, and the promises of life by him, and to give Glory unto God on their Account; so when they can give us any Testimony of Scripture assigning our Justification unto any other Grace, or all Graces together, or all the Fruits of them, so as it is assigned unto Faith, they shall be attended unto.

And this in particular is to be affirmed of *Repentance*, concerning which it is most vehemently urged, that it is of the same necessity unto our Justification as Faith is. For this they say is easily proved from Testimonies of Scripture innumerable, which call all men to *Repentance* that will be saved; especially those two eminent places are insisted on; *Act.* 2. 38, 39. *chap.* 3. 16. but that which they have to prove, is not that it is of the same *necessity* with Faith unto them that are to be justified, but that it is of the same *use* with Faith in their Justification. *Baptism* in that place of the Apostle, *Act.* 2. 38, 39. is joined with Faith no less than *Repentance*. And in other places it is expressly put into the same condition. Hence most of the Antients concluded that it was no less necessary unto Salvation than Faith or *Repentance* it self. Yet never did any of them assign it the same *use* in Justification with Faith. But it is pleaded, whatever is a *necessary condition of the new Covenant* is also a necessary Condition of Justification. For otherwise a man might be justified, and continuing in his justified estate not be saved, for want of that necessary condition. For by a *necessary Condition* of the new Covenant they understand that, without which a man cannot be saved. But of this Nature is *Repentance* as well as Faith, and

and so is equally a condition of our Justification. The Ambiguity of the signification of the word *Condition*, doth cast much disorder on the present enquiry, in the Discourses of some men. But to pass it by at present, I say *final perseverance* is a necessary condition of the New Covenant; wherefore by this Rule it is also of Justification. They say some things are *Conditions absolutely*, such as are *Faith and Repentance*, and a *purpose of Obedience*, some are so on some supposition only; namely, that a *mans life be continued in this world*, such is a course in Obedience and Good Works, and Perseverance unto the End. Wherefore I say then, that on supposition that a man lives in this World, *perseverance* unto the End is a necessary Condition of his Justification. And if so, no man can be justified whilst he is in this World. For a Condition doth suspend that whereof it is a Condition from Existence, until it be accomplished. It is then to no purpose to dispute any longer about Justification, if indeed no man is nor can be justified in this life. But how contrary this is to Scripture and Experience is known.

If it be said that *final perseverance*, which is so express a Condition of Salvation in the New Covenant, is not indeed the *Condition of our first Justification*, but it is the Condition of the Continuation of our Justification; then they yield up their grand position, that whatever is a necessary Condition of the New Covenant, is a necessary Condition of Justification; for it is that which they call the *first Justification* alone which we treat about. And that the Continuation of our Justification depends solely on the same causes with our Justification it self, shall be afterwards declared. But it is not yet proved, nor ever will be, that whatever is required in them that are to be justified, is a *Condition* whereon their Justification is immediately suspended. We allow that alone to be a Condition of Justification which hath an influence of *causality* thereunto, though it be but the *causality* of an Instrument.

strument. This we ascribe unto Faith alone. And because we do so, it is pleaded that we ascribe *more* in our Justification unto our selves than they do by whom we are opposed. For we ascribe the efficiency of an *Instrument* herein unto our own Faith; when they say only that it is a *Condition*, or *Causa sine qua non*, of our Justification. But I judge that grave and wise men ought not to give so much to the defence of the Cause they have undertaken, seeing they cannot but know indeed the contrary. For after they have given the specious name of a *Condition*, and a *Causa sine qua non*, unto Faith, they immediately take all other Graces and Works of Obedience into the same state with it, and the same use in Justification; and after this *seeming Gold* hath been cast for a while into the fire of Disputation, there comes out the Calf of a personal inherent Righteousness, whereby Men are justified before God, *virtute fœderis Evangelici*; for as for the Righteousness of Christ to be imputed unto us, it is gone into Heaven, and they know not what is become of it.

Having given this brief Declaration of the Nature of Justifying Faith, and the Acts of it, (as I suppose sufficient unto my present Design) I shall not trouble my self to give an accurate *Definition* of it. What are my Thoughts concerning it, will be better understood by what hath been spoken, than by any precise definition I can give. And the Truth is, *definitions* of Justifying Faith have been so multiplied by Learned Men, and in so great variety, and such a manifest inconsistency among some of them, that they have been of no advantage unto the Truth; but occasions of new Controversies and Divisions, whilst every one hath laboured to defend the Accuracy of his own Definition, when yet it may be difficult for a true Believer to find any thing compliant with his own Experience in them; which kind of Definitions in these things, I have no esteem for. I know no man that hath laboured in this Argument about the Nature of Faith more than

than *Doctor Jackson*; yet when he hath done all, he gives us a definition of Justifying Faith which I know few that will subscribe unto; yet is it in the main scope of it both pious and sound. For he tells us; *Here at length we may define the Faith by which the just do live, to be a firm and constant Adherence unto the mercies and loving kindness of the Lord, or generally unto the spiritual food exhibited in his Sacred Word, as much better than this Life it self, and all the Contentments it is capable of, grounded on a taste or relish of their sweetness, wrought in the Soul or Heart of a Man by the spirit of Christ.* Whereunto he adds, *The terms for the most part are the Prophet Davids, not metaphorical as some may fancy, much less equivocal, but proper and homogeneal to the subject defined.* Tom. 1. Book 4. chap. 9. For the lively Scriptural Expressions of Faith, by receiving of Christ, leaning on him, rolling our selves or our burden on him, tasting how gracious the Lord is, and the like, which of late have been reproached, yea blasphemed by many, I may have occasion to speak of them afterwards; as also to manifest that they convey a better understanding of the Nature, Work, and Object of Justifying Faith, unto the minds of men spiritually enlightened, than the most accurate *Definitions* that many pretend unto; some whereof are destructive and exclusive of them all.

---

## CHAP. III.

*The Use of Faith in Justification; Its especial Object farther cleared.*

**T**He *Description* before given of Justifying Faith doth sufficiently manifest of what *Use* it is in Justification. Nor shall I in general add much unto what may be thence observed unto that purpose. But whereas this *Use* of it hath been expressed with some variety, and several ways of it asserted inconsistent with one another, they must be considered in our passage. And I shall do it with all brevity possible; for these things *lead* not in any part of the *Controversie* about the Nature of Justification, but are meerly subservient unto other Conceptions concerning it. When Men have fixed their Apprehensions about the principal matters in Controversie, they express what concerneth the *Use of Faith* in an Accommodation thereunto. Supposing such to be the Nature of Justification as they assert, it must be granted that the *Use of Faith* therein, must be what they plead for. And if what is peculiar unto any in the substance of the Doctrine be disproved, they cannot deny but that their Notions about the *Use of Faith* do fall unto the Ground. Thus is it with all who affirm Faith to be either the *Instrument*, or the *Condition*, or the *Causa sine qua non*, or the *preparation and disposition* of the Subject, or a *meritorious cause* by way of condecency or congruity, in and of our Justification. For all these notions of the *Use of Faith* are suited and accommodated unto the Opinions of Men concerning the nature and principal causes of Justification. Neither can any Trial or Determination be made, as unto their Truth and Propriety, but

but upon a previous Judgment concerning those causes, and the whole Nature of Justification it self. Whereas therefore it were vain and endless to plead the principal matter in Controversie upon every thing that occasionally belongs unto it; and so *by the Title* unto the whole *Inheritance* on every Cottage that is built on the *premises*, I shall briefly speak unto these various Conceptions about the *Use of Faith* in our Justification, rather to find out and give an understanding of what is intended by them, than to argue about their Truth and Propriety, which depends on that wherein the *substance* of the Controversie doth consist.

*Protestant Divines* until of late, have unanimously affirmed Faith to be the *instrumental cause* of our Justification. So it is expressed to be in many of the *publick Confessions* of their Churches. This Notion of theirs concerning the Nature and *Use of Faith*, was from the first opposed by those of the *Roman Church*. Afterwards it was denied also by the *Socinians*, as either false or improper. *Socin. Miscellun. Smalcius adv. Frantz. disput. 4 Schlicting. adver. Meisner. de Justificat.* And of late this expression is disliked by some among our selves; wherein they follow *Episcopus Curcellius* and others of that way. Those who are sober and moderate do rather decline this Notion and Expression as *improper* than reject them as *untrue*. And our safest course in these cases is to consider what is the thing or matter intended. If that be agreed upon, he deserves best of Truth, who parts with strife about propriety of Expressions, before it be medled with. Tenacious pleading about them will surely render our Contentions Endless; and none will ever want an Appearance of probability to give them countenance in what they pretend. If our design in teaching be the same with that of the Scripture, namely, to inform the Minds of Believers, and convey the *Light of the knowledge of God in Christ* unto them, we must be contented sometimes to make use of such Expressions, as

will scarce pass the *Ordeal* of arbitrary Rules and Distinctions through the whole compass of notional and artificial Sciences. And those who without more ado reject the *instrumentality* of Faith in our Justification as an *unscriptural Notion*, as though it were easie for them with one breath to blow away the Reasons and Arguments of so many Learned Men as have pleaded for it, may not I think do amiss to review the Grounds of their Confidence. For the Question being only concerning *what is intended* by it, it is not enough that the Term or Word it self of an *instrument* is not found unto this purpose in the Scripture. For on the same Ground we may reject a *Trinity of Persons* in the Divine Essence, without an acknowledgment whereof, not one Line of the Scripture can be rightly understood.

Those who assert Faith to be as *the Instrumental cause* in our Justification, do it with respect unto two Ends. For first they design thereby to declare the meaning of those expressions in the Scripture, wherein we are said to be justified *πιστι*, *absolutely*, which must denote, either *instrumentum aut formam, aut modum actionis*. *δοξολογῆσα οὖν πιστι διὰ τῆς ἀνθερωπων*; Rom. 3. 28. *Therefore we conclude that a Man is justified by Faith*. So *διὰ πίστεως*, ver. 22. *ἐκ πίστεως*; Rom. 1. 17. *Gal. 3. 8. διὰ τῆς πίστεως*; Ephes. 2. 8. *ἐκ πίστεως καὶ διὰ τῆς πίστεως*. Rom. 3. 22, 30. That is *fide*; *ex fide, per fidem*; which we can express only by Faith or through Faith. *Propter fidem*, or *διὰ τίσιν*; for our Faith we are no where said to be justified. The Enquiry is, what is the most proper, lightsome, and convenient way of declaring the meaning of these Expressions. This the *Generality of Protestants* do judge to be by an *instrumental cause*. For some kind of causality they do plainly intimate, whereof the lowest and meanest is that which is instrumental. For they are used of Faith in our Justification before God, and of no other Grace or Duty whatever. Wherefore the proper Work or Office of Faith in our Justification is intended by them. And *διὰ* is no where used

In the whole New Testament with a *genitive case*, (nor in any other good Author) but it denotes an *instrumental Efficiency* at least. In the divine Works of the Holy Trinity, the operation of the second Person, who is in them a principal Efficient, yet is sometimes expressed thereby; it may be to denote the order of Operation in the Holy Trinity answering the order of Subsistence, though it be applied unto God absolutely or the Father; *Rom. 11. 35. δι' αὐτοῦ, by him are all things.* Again, ἐξ ἔργων νόμου; and ἐκ πίστεως are directly opposed, *Gal. 3. 2.* But when it is said that a man is *not justified*, ἐξ ἔργων νόμου, *by the works of the Law*, it is acknowledged by all that the meaning of the Expression is to exclude all *efficiency* in every kind of such works from our Justification. It follows therefore that where in opposition hereunto, we are said to be justified ἐκ πίστεως, *by Faith*; an *instrumental efficiency* is intended. Yet will I not therefore make it my controversy with any, that Faith is properly an *instrument*, or the *instrumental cause* in or of our Justification; and so divert into an impertinent contest about the nature and kinds of Instruments and Instrumental causes as they are *metaphysically* hunted with a confused Cry of futile terms and distinctions. But this I judge, that among all those notions of things which may be taken from common use and understanding to represent unto our minds the meaning and intention of the scriptural Expressions so often used, πίστις, ἐκ πίστεως, διὰ πίστεως, there is none so proper as this of an *Instrument* or *Instrumental cause*, seeing a *causality* is included in them, and that of any other kind certainly excluded; nor hath it any of its own.

But it may be said, that if Faith be the *Instrumental cause* of Justification; it is either the Instrument of God, or the Instrument of Believers themselves. That it is not the *Instrument* of God is plain, in that it is a duty which he prescribeth unto us; it is an Act of our own; and it is *we that believe* not God; nor can any Act of ours be the Instrument of his Work.

Work. And if it be our Instrument, seeing an Efficiency is ascribed unto it, then are we the *efficient causes* of our own Justification in some sense, and may be said to *justify our selves*, which is derogatory to the Grace of God, and the Blood of Christ.

I confess that I lay not much weight on Exceptions of this nature. For (1) notwithstanding what is said herein, the Scripture is express, that *God justifieth us by Faith*. It is one *God which shall justify the Circumcision ἐκ πίστεως*, (by Faith) and the *uncircumcision, διὰ τῆς πίστεως*, through or by Faith, Rom. 3. 30. The Scripture foreseeing that God would justify the Heathen through Faith, Gal. 3. 8. As he purifieth the Hearts of men by Faith, Act. 15. 9. Wherefore Faith in some sense may be said to be the *Instrument of God* in our Justification; both as it is the means and way ordained and appointed by him on our part whereby we shall be justified, as also because he bestoweth it on us, and works it in us unto this end that we may be justified; For by Grace we are saved, through Faith, and that not of our selves, it is the Gift of God, Ephes. 3. 8. If any one shall now say, that on these accounts, or with respect unto Divine Ordination and Operation concurring unto our Justification, that Faith is the Instrument of God in its place and way, (as the Gospel also is, Rom. 1. 16. and the Ministers of it, 2 Cor. 5. 18. 1 Tim. 4. 6. and the Sacraments also, Rom. 4. 11. Tit. 3. 5. in their several places and kinds) unto our Justification, it may be he will contribute unto a right conception of the work of God herein, as much as those shall by whom it is denied.

But that which is principally intended is, that it is the *Instrument of them that do believe*. Neither yet are they said hereon to *justify themselves*. For whereas it doth neither really produce the effect of Justification by a *physical* operation, nor can do so, it being a pure Sovereign Act of God; nor is *morally* any way meritorious thereof, nor doth *dispose* the subject wherein it is unto the Introduction of an inherent for-

formal cause of Justification, there being no such thing in *rerum natura*, nor hath any other *Physical* or *moral* respect unto the effect of Justification, but what ariseth meerly from the constitution and appointment of God, there is no Colour of Reason from the *Instrumentality* of Faith asserted, to ascribe the *Effect of Justification* unto any, but unto the principal efficient cause, which is God alone, and from whom it proceedeth in a way of free and sovereign Grace, disposing the Order of things, and the Relation of them one unto another, as seemeth good unto him. *Δικαιώματα δωρεάν τῆ αὐτοῦ χάριτι, Rom. 3. 24. διὰ τῆς πίστεως ἐν τῷ ᾧ χεῖρα ἁμαρτίας, ver. 25.* It is therefore the Ordinance of God prescribing our duty, that we may be justified freely by his Grace, having its use and operation towards that End after the manner of an *Instrument*, as we shall see farther immediately. Wherefore so far as I can discern, they contribute nothing unto the real understanding of this Truth, who deny Faith to be the *instrumental cause* of our Justification, and on other Grounds assert it to be the *Condition* thereof, unless they can prove that this is a more natural exposition of those expressions, *πίστι, ἐκ πίστεως, διὰ τῆς πίστεως*, which is the first thing to be enquired after. For all that we do in this matter is but to endeavour a right understanding of *Scripture propositions* and expressions, unless we intend to wander *extra oleas*, and lose our selves in a maze of uncertain conjectures.

Secondly, They designed to declare the use of Faith in Justification, expressed in the Scripture by *apprehending and receiving of Christ*, or his *Righteousness*, and *Remission of sins* thereby. The words whereby this use of Faith in our Justification is expressed are *λαμβάνω, πιάσλαμβάνω, and καταλαμβάνω*. And the constant use of them in the Scripture is to *take or receive* what is offered, tendered, given or granted unto us; or to apprehend and lay hold of any thing thereby to make it our own, as *ἐπιλαμβάνομαι* is also used in the same sense, *Heb.*

## 152 *The Use of Faith in Justification;*

2. 16. So are we said by Faith to receive Christ, *Joh. 1. 12. Col. 2. 6. The Abundance of Grace and the Gift of Righteousness, Rom. 5. 17. The word of Promise, Act. 2. 41. The word of God, Act. 8. 14. 1 Thef. 1. 6. chap. 2. 13. The Atonement made by the blood of Christ, Rom. 5. 11. The forgiveness of sins, Act. 10. 43. chap. 26. 18. The Promise of the spirit, Gal. 3. 14. The Promises, Heb. 9. 15.* There is therefore nothing that concurrerth unto our Justification, but we receive it by Faith. And unbelief is expressed by *not receiving, Joh. 1. 11. chap. 3. 11. chap. 12. 48. chap. 14. 17.* Wherefore the Object of Faith in our Justification, that whereby we are justified, is tendered, granted and given unto us of God, the use of Faith being to *lay hold* upon it, to receive it, so as that it may be our own. What we receive of outward things that are so given unto us, we do it by *our hand* which therefore is the *instrument* of that reception, that whereby we apprehend or lay hold of any thing to appropriate it unto our selves; and that because this is the peculiar Office which by nature it is assigned unto among all the members of the body. Other *Uses* it hath, and other members on other Accounts may be as *useful* unto the *body* as it; but it alone is the *instrument* of receiving and apprehending that which being given, is to be made our own and to abide with us. Whereas therefore the Righteousness wherewith we are justified is the *Gift of God*, which is tendered unto us in the *Promise* of the Gospel, the Use and Office of Faith being to receive, apprehend, or lay hold of and appropriate this Righteousness, I know not how it can be better expressed than by an *Instrument*, nor by what notion of it more light of understanding may be conveyed unto our minds. Some may suppose other Notions are meet to express it by on other Accounts; and it may be so with respect unto other uses of it. But the sole present Enquiry is, how it shall be declared, as that which *receiveth* Christ, the *Atonement*, the *Gift of*  
*Righ-*

*Righteousness*, which will prove its only use in our Justification. He that can better express this than by an *Instrument*, ordained of God unto this End, all whose use depends on that Ordination of God, will deserve well of the Truth. It is true that all those who place the formal Cause or Reason of our Justification in our selves, or our *inherent Righteousness*, and so either directly or by just consequence deny all Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto our Justification, are not capable of admitting Faith to be an *Instrument* in this work, nor are pressed with this consideration. For they acknowledge not that we receive a Righteousness which is not our own by way of *Gift*, whereby we are justified, and so cannot allow of any *Instrument* whereby it should be received. The Righteousness it self being as they phrase it, *putative, imaginary, a chimera, a fiction*, it can have no real accidents, nothing that can be really predicated concerning it. Wherefore as was said at the Entrance of this Discourse, the Truth and Propriety of this declaration of the *Use of Faith* in our Justification by an *Instrumental cause*, depends on the substance of the Doctrine it self concerning the nature and principal causes of it, with which they must stand or fall. If we are justified through the *Imputation of the Righteousness* of Christ, which Faith alone apprehends and receives, it will not be denied but that it is rightly enough placed as the *Instrumental cause* of our Justification. And if we are justified by an *inherent Evangelical Righteousness* of our own, Faith may be the *Condition* of its Imputation, or a *disposition* for its Introduction, or a *congruous* merit of it, but an *Instrument* it cannot be. But yet for the present it hath this double advantage; (1) That it best and most appositely answers what is affirmed of the *Use of Faith* in our Justification, in the Scripture, as the Instances given do manifest; (2) That no other *notion* of it can be so stated, but that it must be apprehended in order of time to be previous

unto Justification, which *Justifying Faith* cannot be, unless a man may be a true Believer with *Justifying Faith*, and yet not be justified.

Some do plead that Faith is the *Condition* of our Justification, and that otherwise it is not to be conceived of. As I said before, so I say again, I shall not contend with any man about Words, Terms, or Expressions, so long as what is intended by them, is agreed upon. And there is an *obvious sense* wherein Faith may be called the *Condition of our Justification*. For no more may be intended thereby, but that it is the *Duty* on our part which God requireth, that we may be justified. And this the whole Scripture beareth witness unto. Yet this hindereth not, but that as unto its *Use*, it may be the *Instrument* whereby we apprehend or receive Christ and his Righteousness. But to assert it the *Condition* of our Justification, or that we are justified by it as the Condition of the New Covenant, so as from a pre-conceived signification of that word, to give it *another use in Justification* exclusive of that pleaded for, as the *Instrumental Cause* thereof, is not easily to be admitted ; because it supposeth an Alteration in the substance of the Doctrine it self.

The Word is no where used in the Scripture in this matter ; which I argue no farther, but that we have no certain Rule or Standard to try and measure its *signification* by. Wherefore it cannot first be introduced in what sense men please, and then *that sense* turned into Argument for other Ends. For thus on a supposed concession, that it is the *Condition* of our Justification, some heighten it into a *subordinate Righteousness*, imputed unto us, antecedently as I suppose, unto the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ in any sense, whereof it is the Condition. And some who pretend to lessen its efficiency or dignity in the use of it in our Justification say, it is only *causa sine qua non*, which leaves us at as great an uncertainty as to the nature and efficacy of this Condition.

as we were before. Nor is the true sense of things at all illustrated, but rather darkened by such notions.

If we may introduce Words into Religion no where used in the Scripture ( as we may and must if we design to bring light, and communicate proper apprehensions of the things contained unto the minds of men ) yet are we not to take along with them arbitrary pre-conceived senses, forged either among *Lawyers*, or in the *Peripatetical School*. The use of them in the most approved Authors of the Language whereunto they do belong, and their common vulgar acceptation among our selves, must determine their sense and meaning. It is known what confusion in the minds of men, the Introduction of words into *Ecclesiastical Doctrines*, of whose signification there hath not been a certain determinate Rule agreed on, hath produced. So the word *Merit* was introduced by some of the Ancients, ( as is plain from the design of their Discourses where they use it ) for impetration or acquisition *quovis modo*; by any means whatever. But there being no cogent Reason to confine the Word unto that precise signification, it hath given occasion to as great a Corruption as hath befallen Christian Religion. We must therefore make use of the best means we have to understand the meaning of this word, and what is intended by it, before we admit of its use in this case.

*Conditio* in the best *Latine Writers* is variously used; answering *κατάστασις, τύχη, ἀξία, αἰτία, συνθήκη* in the *Greek*: That is, *Status, Fortuna, Dignitas, Causa, Pactum initum*. In which of their significations it is here to be understood is not easie to be determined. In *common use* among us, it sometimes denotes the State and Quality of men, that is, *κατάστασις* and *ἀξία*, and sometimes a *valuable consideration* of what is to be done; that is, *αἰτία* or *συνθήκη*. But herein it is applied unto things in great variety; sometimes the *principal* procuring purchasing cause is so expressed. As the *Condition* whereon a man lends

156 *The Use of Faith in Justification;*

another an *hundred pound*, is that he be paid it again with *Interest*. The *Condition* whereon a man conveyeth his Land unto another, is, that he receive so much money for it. So a *Condition* is a valuable consideration. And sometimes it signifies such things as are added to the principal cause whereon its operation is suspended. As a man bequeaths an *hundred pound* unto another, on condition that he come or go to such a place to demand it. This is no *valuable consideration*, yet is the effect of the principal cause, or the Will of the Testator suspended thereon. And as unto Degrees of respect unto that whereof any thing is a *Condition*, as to purchase, procurement, valuable consideration, necessary presence, the variety is endless. We therefore cannot obtain a determinate sense of this word *Condition*, but from a particular declaration of what is intended by it, wherever it is used. And although this be not sufficient to *exclude the Use* of it from the Declaration of the way and manner how we are justified by Faith; yet is it so to exclude the imposition of any precise signification of it, any other than is given it by the matter treated of. Without this every thing is left ambiguous and uncertain whereunto it is applied.

For Instance; It is commonly said that *Faith and New Obedience* are the Condition of the New Covenant. But yet because of the ambiguous signification and various use of that term (Condition) we cannot certainly understand what is intended in the Assertion. If no more be intended, but that God *in and by* the New Covenant doth indispensibly require these things of us, that is, the *Restipulation of a good Conscience towards God by the Resurrection of Christ from the dead*, in order unto his own Glory, and our full enjoyment of all the Benefits of it, it is unquestionably true. But if it be intended, that they are such a Condition of the Covenant, as to be by us performed *antecedently* unto the participation of any Grace, Mercy, or Priviledge of it, so as that they should

should be the consideration and procuring causes of them, that they should be all of them as some speak, the *Reward of our Faith and Obedience*, it is most false, and not only contrary to express Testimonies of Scripture, but destructive of the nature of the Covenant it self. If it be intended that these things, though promised in the Covenant and wrought in us by the Grace of God, are yet *Duties* required of us in order unto the participation and enjoyment of the *full End* of the Covenant in Glory, it is the Truth which is asserted. But if it be said that Faith and New Obedience, that is the *Works of Righteousness which we do*, are so the Condition of the Covenant, as that whatever the one is ordained of God as a means of, and in order to such or such an End, as *Justification*, that the other is likewise ordained unto the same End, with the same kind of Efficacy, or with the same respect unto the effect, it is expressly contrary to the whole scope and express Design of the Apostle on that Subject. But it will be said that a *Condition* in the sense intended, when Faith is said to be the Condition of our Justification, is no more but that it is *causa sine qua non*; which is easie enough to be apprehended. But yet neither are we so delivered out of uncertainties, into a plain understanding of what is intended. For these *causæ sine quibus non*, may be taken largely or more strictly and precisely. So are they commonly distinguished by the *Masters in these Arts*. Those so called in a *larger sense*, are all such *causes* in any kind of efficiency or merit, as are inferiour unto principal Causes, and would operate nothing without them, but in *conjunction* with them have a real effective influence, *Physical* or *Moral*, into the production of the effect. And if we take a Condition to be a *causa sine qua non*, in this sense, we are still at a loss what may be its Use, Efficiency or Merit, with respect unto our Justification. If it be taken more strictly for that which is necessarily present, but hath no *causality* in any kind, not that

that of a *receptive Instrument*, I cannot understand how it should be an Ordinance of God. For every thing that he hath appointed unto any end *Moral* or *Spiritual*, hath by virtue of that Appointment, either a *symbolical* instructive efficacy, or an *active efficiency*, or a *rewardable condecency* with respect unto that End. Other things may be generally and remotely necessary unto such an End, so far as it partakes of the order of natural beings, which are not Ordinances of God with respect thereunto, and so have no kind of *causality* with respect unto it, as it is *Moral* or *Spiritual*. So the *Air* we breath is needful unto the preaching of the Word, and consequently a *causa sine qua non* thereof; but an Ordinance of God with especial respect thereunto it is not. But every thing that he appoints unto an especial spiritual End, hath an Efficacy or Operation in one or other of the ways mentioned. For they either *concur* with the principal cause in its internal Efficiency, or they operate externally in the removal of Obstacles and Hinderances that oppose the principal cause in its Efficiency. And this excludes all causes *sine quibus non* strictly so taken from any place among Divine Ordinances. God appoints nothing for an End that shall do nothing. His *Sacraments* are not *ἀργὰ σκνῆα*, but by virtue of his Institution do exhibit that Grace which they do not in themselves contain. The *preaching of the Word* hath a real Efficiency unto all the Ends of it; so have all the Graces and Duties that he worketh in us, and requireth of us; by them all are we made meet for the *Inheritance of the Saints in Light*; And our whole Obedience through his gracious Appointment hath a *rewardable condecency* with respect unto Eternal Life. Wherefore as Faith may be allowed to be the *condition of our Justification*, if no more be intended thereby, but that it is what God requires of us that we may be justified; so to confine the declaration of its *Use* in our Justification unto its being the *condition of it*, when so much as a determinate signifi-

tion of it cannot be agreed upon, is subservient only unto the Interest of unprofitable strife and contention.

To close these Discourses concerning Faith and its Use in our Justification, some things must yet be added concerning its *especial Object*. For although what hath been spoken already thereon, in the description of its nature and object in general, be sufficient in general to state its *especial Object* also; yet there having been an Enquiry concerning it, and debate about it in a peculiar notion, and under some especial terms, that also must be considered. And this is whether *Justifying Faith* in our Justification or its Use therein, do respect Christ as a *King* and *Prophet*, as well as a *Priest* with the satisfaction that as such he made for us, and that in the same manner, and unto the same Ends and Purposes. And I shall be brief in this Enquiry, because it is but a *late controversie*, and it may be hath more of Curiosity in its Disquisition, than of Edification in its Determination. However being not, that I know of, under these terms stated in any *publick Confessions* of the Reformed Churches, it is free for any to express their Apprehensions concerning it. And to this purpose I say;

1. Faith whereby we are justified in the receiving of Christ, principally respects his Person for all those Ends for which he is the Ordinance of God. It doth not in the first place as it is Faith in general, respect his Person absolutely, seeing its formal Object as such, is the *Truth* of God in the Proposition, and not the thing it self proposed. Wherefore it so respects and receives *Christ as proposed in the Promise*; the Promise it self being the formal Object of its Assent.

2. We cannot so receive Christ in the Promise, as in that Act of receiving him to *exclude* the consideration of any of his Offices. For as he is not at any time to be considered by us, but as vested with all his Offices, so a distinct conception of the mind to receive *Christ as a Priest, but not as a King or Prophet*;

## 160 *The Use of Faith in Justification;*

*Prophet*, is not Faith but unbelief, not the receiving but the rejecting of him.

3. In the receiving of Christ for Justification formally, our distinct express Design is to be *justified* thereby, and no more. Now to be justified is to be freed from the Guilt of sin, or to have all our sins pardoned, and to have a Righteousness wherewith to appear before God, so as to be accepted with him, and a Right to the Heavenly Inheritance. Every Believer hath *other designs* also, wherein he is equally concerned with this; as namely, the Renovation of his Nature, the Sanctification of his Person, and Ability to live unto God in all holy Obedience. But the things before mentioned are all that he aimeth at or designeth in his Applications unto Christ, or his receiving of him unto Justification. Wherefore,

4. *Justifying Faith* in that Act or Work of it whereby we are justified, respecteth Christ in his Priestly Office alone, as he was the surety of the Covenant, with what he did in the discharge thereof. The Consideration of his other Offices is not *excluded*, but it is not formally comprised in the Object of Faith as Justifying.

5. When we say that the *Sacerdotal Office of Christ*, or the *Blood of Christ*, or the *satisfaction of Christ* is that alone which Faith respects in Justification, we do not *exclude*, yea we do really *include* and comprise in that Assertion, all that depends thereon, or concurs to make them effectual unto our Justification. As (1) The *free Grace* and Favour of God in giving of Christ for us and unto us, whereby we are frequently said to be justified, *Rom.* 3. 24. *Ephes.* 2. 8. *Tit.* 3. 7. His *Wisdom*, Love, Righteousness and Power, are of the same Consideration as hath been declared. (2) Whatever in Christ himself was necessary antecedently unto his discharge of that Office, or was consequential thereof, or did necessarily accompany it. Such was his *Incarnation*, the whole  
*course*

course of his Obedience, his Resurrection, Ascension, Exaltation and Intercession. For the Consideration of all these things is inseparable from the Discharge of his Priestly Office. And therefore is Justification either expressly or virtually assigned unto them also, *Gen. 3. 15.* 1 *Joh. 3. 8.* *Heb. 2. 13, 14, 15, 16.* *Rom. 4. 25.* *Act. 5. 31.* *Heb. 7. 27.* *Rom. 8. 34.* But yet wherever our Justification is so assigned unto them, they are not *absolutely* considered, but with respect unto their relation to his Sacrifice and Satisfaction. (3) All the means of the Application of the Sacrifice and Righteousness of the Lord Christ unto us are also included therein. Such is the *principal Efficient* cause thereof which is the Holy Ghost, whence we are said to be *justified in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by the Spirit of our God,* 1 *Cor. 6. 11.* and the instrumental cause thereof on the part of God, which is the *Promise of the Gospel,* *Rom. 1. 17.* *Gal. 3. 22, 23.* It would therefore be unduly pretended, that by this Assertion we do narrow or straiten the Object of Justifying Faith as it Justifies. For indeed we assign a respect unto the *whole Mediatorial Office of Christ,* not excluding the Kingly and Prophetical parts thereof; but only such a notion of them, as would not bring in *more* of Christ, but *much* of our selves into our Justification. And the Assertion as laid down may be proved.

1. From the Experience of all that are justified, or do seek for Justification according unto the Gospel. For under this notion of *seeking* for Justification, or a Righteousness unto Justification, they were all of them to be considered, and do consider themselves as *υπεθικωι τῷ Θεῷ,* *guilty before God,* subject, obnoxious, liable unto his wrath in the curse of the Law; as we declared in the Entrance of this Discourse, *Rom. 3. 19.* They were all in the same state that *Adam* was in after the *Fall,* unto whom God proposed the Relief of the Incarnation and Suffering of Christ, *Gen. 3. 15.* And to seek after Justification, is to seek after a discharge from this woful

state and condition. Such persons have and ought to have other designs and desires also. For whereas the state wherein they are antecedent unto their Justification, is not only a state of *Guilt and Wrath*, but such also as wherein through the Depravation of their Nature, the *power of sin* is prevalent in them, and their whole Souls are defiled, they design and desire not only to be *justified*, but to be *sanctified* also. But as unto the Guilt of sin, and the want of a Righteousness before God, from which Justification is their Relief, herein I say they have respect unto Christ *as set forth to be a Propitiation through Faith in his Blood*. In their Design for *Sanctification* they have respect unto the *Kingly and Prophe-tical* Offices of Christ, in their especial exercise. But as to their freedom from the Guilt of sin, and their Acceptance with God, or their *Justification* in his sight, that they may be freed from condemnation, that they may *not come into judgment*; it is Christ crucified, it is Christ lifted up as the *brazen Serpent* in the Wilderness, it is the Blood of Christ, it is the Propitiation that he was, and the Atonement that he made, it is his bearing their sins, his being made sin and the curse for them, it is his Obedience, the End which he put unto sin, and the Everlasting Righteousness which he brought in, that alone their Faith doth fix upon and acquiesce in. If it be otherwise in the Experience of any, I acknowledge I am not acquainted with it. I do not say that *Conviction* of sin is the only antecedent Condition of actual Justification. But this it is that makes a sinner *subjectum capax Justificationis*. No man therefore is to be considered as a person to be Justified, but he who is actually under the power of the Conviction of sin, with all the necessary consequents thereof. Suppose therefore any sinner in this Condition, as it is described by the Apostle, *Rom. 3. Guilty before God, with his mouth stopped* as unto any pleas, defences or excuses; suppose him to seek after a Relief and Deliverance out of this

this estate, that is to be justified according to the Gospel; he neither doth, nor can *wisely* take any other course than what he is there directed unto by the same Apostle, ver. 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25. *Therefore by the Deeds of the Law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight; for by the Law is the knowledge of sin. But now the Righteousness of God without the Law is manifested, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets. Even the Righteousness of God, which is by Faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that believe, for there is no difference; For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of God, Being justified freely by his Grace, through the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ; whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his Blood, to declare his Righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.* Whence I argue;

That which a Guilty condemned sinner finding no hope, nor Relief from the Law of God the *sole Rule* of all his Obedience, doth betake himself unto by Faith that he may be delivered or justified, that is the especial Object of Faith as Justifying. But this is the *Grace of God* alone through the Redemption that is in Christ, or Christ proposed as a Propitiation through Faith in his Blood. Either this is so, or the Apostle doth not aright guide the Souls and Consciences of men in that condition wherein he himself doth place them. It is the *Blood of Christ* alone that he directs the Faith unto of all them that would be justified before God. Grace, Redemption, Propitiation, all through the Blood of Christ, Faith doth peculiarly respect and fix upon. This is that, if I mistake not, which they will confirm by their *Experience*, who have made any distinct observation of the actings of their Faith in their Justification before God.

2. The Scripture plainly declares that *Faith as Justifying*, respects the *sacerdotal Office* and Actings of Christ alone. In the great Representation of the Justification of the Church of Old

## 164 *The Use of Faith in Justification;*

in the *Expiatory Sacrifice*, when all their sins and iniquities were pardoned, and their persons accepted with God, the acting of their Faith was limited unto the Imposition of all their sins on the *head of the Sacrifice* by the high Priest, *Lev. 16.* By his knowledge, that is Faith in him, shall *my righteous Servant justify many, for he shall bear their iniquities, Isa. 53. 11.* That alone which Faith respects in Christ as unto the Justification of sinners, is his *bearing their iniquities.* *Guilty convicted sinners* look unto him by Faith, as those who were stung with *fiery Serpents* did to the *Brazen Serpent*; that is, as he was lifted up on the Cross, *Joh. 3. 14, 15.* So did he himself express the nature and actings of Faith in our Justification, *Rom. 3. 24, 25.* *Being justified freely by his Grace through the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ, whom God hath set forth to be a Propitiation through Faith in his Blood.* As he is a Propitiation, as he shed his Blood for us, as we have Redemption thereby, he is the peculiar Object of our Faith, with respect unto our Justification. See to the same purpose, *Rom. 5. 9, 10. Ephes. 1. 7. Col. 1. 14. Ephes. 2. 13, 14, 15, 16. Rom. 8. 3, 4.* *He was made sin for us who knew no sin, that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him, 2 Cor. 5. 21.* That which we seek after in Justification is a Participation of the Righteousness of God; to be made the Righteousness of God, and that not *in our selves* but *in another*, that is in Christ Jesus. And that alone which is proposed unto our Faith as the means and cause of it, is, his *being made sin* for us, or a Sacrifice for sin, wherein all the *Guilt* of our sins was laid on him, and he bare all our Iniquities. This therefore is its peculiar Object herein. And wherever in the Scripture we are directed to seek for the *forgiveness of sins* by the Blood of Christ, receive the Atonement, to be justified through the Faith of him as crucified, the Object of Faith in Justification is limited and determined.

But it may be pleaded in Exception unto the Testimonies,  
that

that no one of them doth affirm, that we are justified by Faith in the Blood of Christ alone; so as to exclude the consideration of the other Offices of Christ and their actings, from being the Object of Faith in the same manner, and unto the same ends, with his *Sacerdotal Office*, and what belongs thereunto, or is derived from it.

*Ans.* This exception derives from that common Objection against the Doctrine of *Justification by Faith alone*; namely that, That *exclusive term alone*, is not found in the Scripture, or in any of the Testimonies that are produced for Justification by Faith. But it is replied with sufficient evidence of Truth, that although the word be not found *Syllabically* used unto this purpose; yet there are exceptive Expressions *equivalent* unto it, as we shall see afterwards. It is so in this particular instance also. For: ( 1 ) whereas our Justification is expressly ascribed unto our *Faith in the Blood of Christ*, as the Propitiation for our Sins, unto our believing in him as *Crucified* for us, and it is no where ascribed unto our receiving of him as King, Lord, or Prophet; it is plain, that the former Expressions are virtually exclusive of the later consideration. ( 2 ) I do not say, That the consideration of the *Kingly and Prophetical Offices* of Christ is *excluded* from our Justification, as *works* are excluded in Opposition unto Faith and Grace. For they are so excluded, as that we are to exercise an act of our minds in their *positive Rejection*, as saying, Get you hence, you have no Lot nor Portion in this matter. But as to these Offices of Christ, as to the Object of Faith as Justifying, we say only that they are not *included* therein. For so to believe to be justified by his Blood, as to exercise a positive act of the mind, excluding a compliance with his other Offices, is an impious Imagination.

3. Neither the Consideration of these *Offices* themselves, nor of any of the *peculiar Acts* of them, are suited to give the Souls and Consciences of convinced Sinners, that *Relief* which

which they seek after in Justification. We are not in this whole cause to lose out of our Eye, the *state of the Person* who is to be justified, and what it is he doth seek after, and ought to seek after, therein. Now this is *Pardon of Sin*, and *Righteousness before God alone*. That therefore, which is no way suited to give or tender this *Relief* unto him, is not, nor can be the Object of his Faith, whereby he is justified in that exercise of it, whereon his justification doth depend. This Relief it will be said, is to be had in Christ alone; it is true, but under what Consideration? For the sole design of the Sinner, is how he may *be accepted with God*, be at peace with him, have *all his wrath turned away*, by a Propitiation or Attonement. Now this can no otherwise be done, but by the acting of some one, *towards God*, and with God on his behalf; for it is about the turning away of Gods Anger, and Acceptance with him, that the enquiry is made. It is by the Blood of Christ, that we are *made nigh*, who were *far off*; Eph. 2. 13. By the Blood of Christ are we *Reconciled* who were *Enemies*; v. 16. By the *Blood of Christ* we have Redemption. Rom. 3. 24, 25. Eph. 1. 7. &c. This therefore, is the Object of Faith.

All the actings of the Kingly and Prophetical Offices of Christ, are all of them *from God*, that is in the Name and Authority of God *towards us*. Not any one of them is *towards God on our behalf*, so as that by vertue of them, we should expect *Acceptance with God*. They are all *Good, Blessed, Holy*, in themselves, and of an eminent tendency unto the Glory of God in our Salvation: Yea, they are no less necessary unto our Salvation to the praise of Gods Grace, then are the Attonement for Sin and Satisfaction which he made; for from them is the way of life Revealed unto us, Grace communicated, our Persons sanctified, and the Reward bestowed. Yea, in the exercise of his *Kingly power* doth the

the

the Lord Christ doth pardon and justifie Sinners. Not that he did as a *King* constitute the Law of Justification, for it was given and established in the first Promise, and he came to put it in Execution; *Joh. 3. 16.* But in the vertue of his Attouement and Righteousness imputed unto them, he doth both pardon and justifie Sinners. But they are the acts of his *Sacerdotal Office alone*, that respect God on our behalf. Whatever he did on Earth with God for the Church, in Obedience, Suffering, and Offering up of himself, whatever he doth in Heaven in Intercession, and Appearance in the presence of God for us, it all entirely belongs unto his *Priestly Office*. And in these things alone doth the Soul of a convinced Sinner find *Relief*, when he seeks after Deliverance from the state of Sin and Acceptance with God. In these therefore alone the peculiar Object of his Faith, that which will give him Rest and Peace, must be comprized. And this last consideration is of it self sufficient to determine this difference.

Sundry things are Objected against this Assertion, which I shall not here at large discuss, because what is material in any of them, will occur on other occasions, where its consideration will be more proper. In general it may be pleaded, that *Justifying Faith* is the same with *saving Faith*; nor is it said, that we are justified by this or that part of Faith, but by Faith in General, that is, as taken essentially for the entire Grace of Faith. And as unto Faith in this sense, not only a respect unto Christ in all his Offices, but *Obedience* it self also is included in it, as is evident in many places of the Scripture. Wherefore there is no Reason why we should limit the Object of it, unto the Person of Christ as acting in the discharge of his Sacerdotal Office, with the Effects and Fruits thereof.

*Ans. 1.* *Saving Faith*, and *Justifying Faith* in any Believer are one and the same, and the Adjuncts of Saving and Justifying are but external Denominations, from its distinct

Operations and Effects. But yet *Saving Faith* doth act in a peculiar manner, and is of peculiar use in Justification, such as it is not of under any other Consideration whatever. Wherefore ( 2 ) Although *Saving Faith* as it is described in General, do ever include *Obedience*, not as its Form or Essence, but as the necessary *Effect* is included in the *cause*, and the Fruit in the Fruit-bearing juyce, and is often mentioned as to its Being and Exercise, where there is no express mention of Christ, his Blood, and his Righteousness, but is applied unto all the Acts, Duties, and Ends of the Gospel; yet this proves not at all, but that as unto its *Duty*, Place, and acting in our *Justification*, it hath a peculiar Object. If it could be proved, that where Justification is ascribed unto Faith, that there it hath any other Object assigned unto it, as that which it rested in for the pardon of Sin and Acceptance with God, this Objection were of some force. But this cannot be done. ( 3 ) This is not to say, that we are justified by *a part of Faith*, and not by it as considered essentially; for we are justified by the *entire Grace of Faith*, acting in such a peculiar way and manner; as others have observed. But the Truth is, we need not insist on the Discussion of this Enquiry. For the true meaning of it is, not whether any thing of Christ is to be excluded from being the Object of Justifying Faith, or of Faith in our Justification, but what *in and of our selves* under the name of *receiving Christ*, as our Lord and King is to be admitted unto an *Efficiency* or *Conditionality* in that work. As it is granted, that justifying Faith is the *receiving of Christ*, so whatever belongs unto the Person of Christ, or any Office of his, or any Acts in the discharge of any Office, that may be reduced unto any cause of our Justification, the meritorious, procuring, material, formal, or manifesting cause of it, is so far as it doth so, freely admitted to belong unto the Object of Justifying Faith. Neither will I contend with any upon this disadvantageous stating

stating of the Question, *What of Christ is to be esteemed the Object of Justifying Faith*, and what is not so. For the thing intended is only this; whether our *own Obedience*, distinct from Faith, or included in it, and in like manner as *Faith*, be the condition of our Justification before God. This being that which is intended, which the other question is but invented to lead unto a compliance with, by a more specious pretence than in it self it is capable of under those terms, it shall be examined and no otherwise.

## CHAP. IV.

### *Of Justification, the notion and signification of the Word in the Scripture.*

UNTO the right understanding of the *nature of Justification*, the proper sense and signification of these words themselves, *Justification* and to *justify*, is to be enquired into. For until that is agreed upon, it is impossible that our Discourses concerning the thing it self should be freed from equivocation. Take words in various senses, and all may be true that is contradictorily affirmed or denied concerning what they are supposed to signifie. And so it hath actually fallen out in this case, as we shall see more fully afterwards. Some taking these words in *one sense*, some in *another*, have appeared to deliver contrary Doctrines concerning the thing it self, or our Justification before God; who yet have *fully agreed* in what the proper determinate sense or signification of the words doth import. And therefore the true meaning of them hath been declared and vindicated already by many. But whereas the right stating hereof, is of more mo-

ment unto the Determination of what is principally controverted about the Doctrine it self, or the thing signified, than most do apprehend; and *something at least* remains to be added for the Declaration and Vindication of the import and only signification of these words in the Scripture, I shall give an account of my observations concerning it, with what diligence I can.

The *Latine Derivation* and Composition of the word *Justificatio* would seem to denote an internal change from inherent Unrighteousness, unto Righteousness likewise inherent; by a Physical motion, and Transmutation, as the *Schoolmen* speak. For such is the signification of words of the same Composition. So *Sanctification*, *Mortification*, *Vivification*, and the like do all denote a real internal Work on the Subject spoken of. Hereon in the whole *Roman School*, Justification is taken for *Justifaction*, or the making of a man to be *inherently* Righteous by the infusion of a principle or habit of Grace, who was before *inherently* and habitually unjust and unrighteous. Whilst this is taken to be the proper signification of the word; we neither do, nor can speak *ad idem* in our Disputations with them about the cause and nature of that Justification, which the Scripture teacheth.

And this appearing sense of the Word possibly deceived some of the Antients, as *Austin* in particular, to declare the Doctrine of free *gratuitous sanctification*, without respect unto any Works of our own, under the name of *Justification*. For neither he nor any of them, ever thought of a *Justification* before God, consisting in the pardon of our sins and the Acceptation of our Persons as Righteous, by vertue of any *inherent habit of Grace* infused into us, or acted by us. Wherefore the subject matter must be determined by the *Scriptural use* and signification of these words, before we can speak properly or intelligibly concerning it. For if to *Justifie* men in the Scripture, signifie to make them *subjectively*  
and

and inherently Righteous, we must acknowledge a mistake in what we Teach concerning the nature, and causes of Justification. And if it signifie no such thing, all their Disputations about Justification by the *infusion of Grace* and inherent Righteousness thereon fall to the Ground. Wherefore all Protestants ( and the Socinians all of them comply therein ) do affirm that the use and signification of these words is *Forensick*, denoting an Act of Jurisdiction. Only the Socinians, and some others would have it to consist in the pardon of sin only, which indeed the word doth not at all signifie. But the sense of the word, is to Assoil, to Acquit, to Declare and pronounce Righteous upon a Trial, which in this case, the pardon of Sin doth necessarily accompany.

*Justificatio* and *Justifico* belong not indeed unto the *Latine Tongue*; nor can any good Authour be produced who ever used them, for the *making of him inherently Righteous* by any means who was not so before. But whereas these words were coyned and framed to signifie such things as are intended, we have no way to determine the signification of them, but by the consideration of the nature of the things, which they were invented to declare and signifie. And whereas in this *Language* these words are derived from *Jus* and *Justum*, they must respect an *Act of Jurisdiction*, rather than a *Physical Operation* or *infusion*. *Justificari* is *Justus censerī, pro justo haberi*; to be esteemed, accounted or adjudged Righteous. So a Man was made *Justus Filius* in Adoption unto him, by whom he was Adopted: Which what it is, is well declared by *Budæus. Cajus lib. 2. F. de Adopt. De Arrogatione loquens*——; *Is qui adoptat rogatur, id est, interrogatur, an velit eum quem adopturus sit, Justum sibi Filium esse. Justum (saith he) intelligo non verum, ut aliqui censent, sed omnibus partibus ut ita dicam Filiationis, veri Filij vicem obtinentem, naturalis & legitimi Filij loco sedentem.* Wherefore as by Adoption, there is no internal *inherent* change made in the

Person Adopted; but by vertue thereof he is *esteemed* and *adjudged* as a true Son, and hath all the rights of a legitimate Son; so by *Justification*, as to the importance of the word, a man is only esteemed, declared and pronounced Righteous, as if he were compleatly so. And in the present case, *Justification* and *gratuitous Adoption* are the same Grace for the substance of them, *Job. 1. 12.* only respect is had in their different denomination of the same Grace, unto different effects or priviledges that ensue thereon.

But the true and genuine signification of these words is to be determined from those in the Original languages of the Scripture which are expounded by them. In the *Hebrew* it is צַדִּיק This the *Lxx.* render by *δικαιον ἀποφαίνω Job. 27. 5. δικαιό-ἀποφαίνομαι, Chap. 13. 18. δικαιον κείνω Prov. 17. 15.* To shew or declare one Righteous; to appear Righteous; to judge any one Righteous. And the sense may be taken from any one of them, as *Chap. 13. 18. הִכָּה נָא עַרְכָּתִי מִשִּׁפְּט יָדַעְתִּי כִּי־אֲנִי צַדִּיק Behold now I have ordered my cause, I know that I shall be justified.* The ordering of his cause, ( his Judgment ) his cause to be judged on, is his preparation for a sentence, either of Absolution or Condemnation; and hereon his confidence was that he should be Justified, that is, *absolved, acquitted, pronounced Righteous.* And the sense is no less pregnant in the other places; commonly they render it by *δικαιωσις*, whereof I shall speak afterwards.

Properly it denotes an Action towards another, ( as Justification, and to justify do ) in *Hiphil* only: and a reciprocal Action of a man on himself in *Hithpael* הִצְדִּיק. Hereby alone is the true sense of these words determined. And I say that in no place, or on any occasion, is it used in that *Conjugation* wherein it denotes an *Action towards another*, in any other sense, but to absolve, acquit, esteem, declare, pronounce Righteous, or to *impute Righteousness*, which is the *Forensick sense* of the word we plead for; that is its constant use and signi-

signification, nor doth it ever once signifie to make inherently Righteous ; much less to pardon or forgive, so vain is the pretence of some that Justification consists only in the pardon of Sin, which is not signified by the Word in any one place of Scripture. Almost in all places this sense is absolutely unquestionable ; nor is there any more then *one* which will admit of any debate, and that on so faint a pretence as cannot prejudice its constant use and signification in all other places. Whatever therefore an *infusion of inherent Grace* may be, or however it may be called, *Justification it is not*, it cannot be ; the Word no where signifying any such thing. Wherefore those of the *Church of Rome* do not so much oppose Justification by Faith through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, as indeed deny that there is any such thing as *Justification*. For that which they call the *first Justification*, consisting in the *infusion of a principle of inherent Grace*, is no such thing as Justification. And their *second Justification* which they place in the merit of Works wherein Absolution or pardon of Sin, hath neither place nor consideration, is inconsistent with Evangelical Justification, as we shall shew afterwards.

This Word therefore, whether the act of God towards men, or of men towards God, or of men among themselves, or of one towards another be expressed thereby, is always used in a *Forensic sense*, and doth not denote a *Physical operation*, Transfusion or Transmutation. 2 Sam. 15. 4. If any man hath a *Suit or Cause* let him come to me, והצדקוי and I will do him Justice ; I will Justifie him, judge in his Cause and pronounce for him. Deut. 25. 1. If there be a *Controversie among men, and they come to Judgment, that the Judges may judgethem*, והצדיקו את הצריק they shall justifie the Righteous, pronounce sentence on his side, whereunto is opposed והרשינו את הרשע and they shall condemn the wicked ; make him wicked, as the Word signifies ; that is, judge, declare and pronounce.

nounce him wicked, whereby he becomes so judicially, and in the eye of the Law; as the other is made Righteous, by declaration and acquitment. He doth not say this shall pardon the Righteous, which to suppose would overthrow both the *Antithesis* and design of the place. And **הרשע** is as much to *infuse wickedness* into a man, as **הצדיק** is to *infuse a principle of Grace* or Righteousness into him. The same *Antithesis* occurs; *Præc.* 17. 15. **מצדיק רשע ומושיע צדיק** *He that justifieth the wicked, and condemneth the Righteous.* Not he that maketh the *wicked inherently Righteous*, not he that changeth him *inherently* from Unrighteous unto Righteousness: But he that without any Ground, Reason or Foundation acquits him in Judgment, or *declares* him to be Righteous, is an Abomination unto the Lord. And although this be spoken of the Judgment of men, yet the Judgment of God also is according unto this Truth. For although he *Justifieth the Ungodly*, those who are so in themselves; yet he doth it on the ground and consideration of a *perfect Righteousness* made theirs by Imputation; and by another act of his Grace, that they may be meet Subjects of this Righteous Favour, really and *inherently changeth* them from Unrighteousness unto Holiness, by the Renovation of their Natures: And these things are singular in the actings of God, which nothing amongst men hath any Resemblance unto or can represent. For the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, unto a Person in himself ungodly unto his Justification, or that he may be acquitted, absolved, and declared Righteous, is built on such Foundations, and proceedeth on such Principles of Righteousness, Wisdom, and Sovereignty, as have no place among the actions of men, nor can have so, as shall afterwards be declared. And moreover, when God doth Justify the ungodly on the account of the Righteousness imputed unto him, he doth at the same *instant*, by the power of his Grace, make him

him

him *inherently and subjectively Righteous or Holy*, which men cannot do one towards another. And therefore whereas mans *Justifying of the wicked*, is to justifie them in their wicked ways, whereby they are constantly made worse and more obdurate in evil; when God justifies the ungodly, their change from personal unrighteousness and unholiness, unto Righteousness and Holiness, doth necessarily and infallibly accompany it.

To the same purpose is the word used; Isa. 5. 23. *Which justifie the wicked for Reward.* Chap. 50.8. קרית מצריקו. *He is near that justifieth me, who shall contend with me, let us stand together, who is my Adversary, let him come near unto; Behold the Lord God will help me, who shall condemn me; Where we have a full Declaration of the proper sense of the Word, which is to acquit and pronounce Righteous on a Trial. And the same sense is fully expressed in the former Antithesis.* 1 Kings. 8. 31, 32. *If any man trespass against his Neighbour, and an Oath be laid upon him to cause him to swear, and the Oath came before thine Altar in this House; then hear thou in Heaven and do, and judge thy Servants, להרשיע רשע to condemn the wicked, to charge his wickedness on him, to bring his way on his head, ולהצדיק צדיק and to justifie the Righteous.* The same words are repeated 2 Chron. 6. 22, 23. Psal. 82. 3. ענוודש הצדיק Do justice to the Afflicted and Poor; that is, *justifie them* in their cause against Wrong and Oppression. Exod. 23. 7. לא מצדיק רשע *I will not justifie the wicked; absolve, acquit, or pronounce him Righteous.* Job. 27. 5. אצדיק אתכם הלוילת לי א *Be it far from me that I should justifie you, or pronounce sentence on your side, as if you were Righteous.* Isa. 53. 11. By his knowledge my Righteous servant יצדיק shall justifie many; the reason whereof is added: *For he shall bear their Iniquities*, whereon they are absolved and justified.

Once it is used in *Hithpael*, wherein a reciprocal action is denoted,

denoted, that whereby a man Justifieth himself. *Gen.* 44. 16. And *Judah* said, what shall we say unto my Lord? what shall we speak *ומהנצטרק* and how shall we justify our selves, God hath found out our Iniquity? they could plead nothing why they should be absolved from Guilt.

Once the Participle is used to denote the outward *instrumental* cause of the Justification of others, in which place alone there is any doubt of its sense. *Dan.* 12. 3. *ומצדוקו והרבו*; And they that justify many; namely, in the same sense that the Preachers of the Gospel are said to *save themselves and others.* *1 Tim.* 4. 16. For men may be no less the Instrumental causes of the Justification of others, than of their Sanctification.

Wherefore although *צדק* in *Kal*, signifies *justum esse*, and sometimes *juste agere*, which may relate unto *inherent Righteousness*; yet where any action towards another is denoted, this word signifies nothing, but to *esteem, declare, pronounce, and adjudge* any one absolved, acquitted, cleared, justified: There is therefore no other kind of Justification once mentioned in the Old Testament.

*Δικαίω* is the word used to the same purpose in the New Testament, and that alone. Neither is this word used in any good Author whatever, to signify the making of a *man Righteous* by any applications to produce internal Righteousness in him; but either to absolve and acquit, to judge, esteem, and pronounce Righteous, or on the contrary to condemn. So *Suidas* *Δικαίω* συν δὲ δολοῖ, τὸ τε κολάζειν, καὶ τὸ δικάζον νομίζειν. *It hath two significations, to punish, and to account Righteous.* And he confirms this sense of the word by Instances out of *Herodotus, Appianus, and Josephus.* And again, *δικαιῶσαι, αἰπαπκῆ, κατὰδικῶσαι, κολῶσαι, δικάζον νομῶσαι*; with an *Accusative case*, that is, when it respects and effects a Subject, a Person, it is *either to condemn and punish, or to esteem and declare Righteous*; and of this latter sense, he gives pregnant instances in the next words.

words. *Hesychius* mentions only the first signification. Δικαίωμενον, κολαζόμενον, δικαιοῦσαι, κολάσαι. They never thought of any sense of this word, but what is *Forensick*. And in our Language to be *Justified*, was commonly used formerly, for to be judged and sentenced; as it is still among the *Scots*. One of the Articles of Peace between the two Nations at the surrender of *Leith*, in the days of *Edward* the sixth was; *That if any one committed a crime, he should be justified by the Law, upon his Trial*. And in general δικαιοῦσαι, is *Jus in judicio auferre*; and δικαιοῦσαι, is *justum censere, declarare, pronuntiare*; and how in the Scripture it is constantly opposed unto *condemnare*, we shall see immediately.

But we may more distinctly consider the use of this Word in the New Testament, as we have done that of *קציק* in the Old. And that which we enquire concerning is, whether this word be used in the New Testament, in a *Forensick* sense to denote an Act of *Jurisdiction*, or in a *Physical* sense to express an internal change or mutation, the *infusion* of an *habit* of Righteousness, and the denomination of the person to be Justified thereon; or whether it signifieth not pardon of sin. But this we may lay aside; For surely no man was ever yet so fond, as to pretend that δικαιοῦσαι did signifie to pardon sin; yet is it the only word apply'd to express our Justification in the New Testament. For if it be taken only in the former sense, then that which is pleaded for by those of the *Roman Church*, under the name of Justification, whatever it be, however good, useful and necessary, yet Justification it is not, nor can be so called; seeing it is a thing quite of another nature than what alone is signified by that word. *Matth. II. 19.* ἐδικαιώθη ἡ σοφία; *Wisdom is justified* of her Children, not made just, but approved and declared. *Chap. 12. 37.* ἐκ τῶν λόγων σου δικαιοθήσῃ; *by thy words thou shalt be Justified*; not made just by them, but judged according to them, as is manifest in the *Antithesis*, καὶ ἐκ τῶν λόγων σου καταδικασθήσῃ; *and by thy*

## 178 *The Use of Faith in Justification ;*

words thou shalt be condemned. Luke. 7. 29. ἐδικαίωσαν τὸν Θεὸν ; they justified God ; not surely by making him Righteous in himself, but by owning, avowing and declaring his Righteousness ; Chap. 10. 29. ὁ δὲ θέλων δικαῖν ἑαυτὸν ; He willing to justify himself, to declare and maintain his own Righteousness. To the same purpose ; Chap. 16. 15. ὑμεῖς ἔτε οἱ δικαιοῦντες ἑαυτοὺς, ἐνώπιον τῶν ἀνθρώπων ; you are they that justify your selves before men, they did not make themselves internally Righteous, but approved of their own condition ; as our Saviour declares in the place ; Chap. 18. 14. The Publican went down <sup>δεδικαιω-</sup> ῥῆσι ⊕ Justified unto his House ; that is acquitted, absolved, pardoned, upon the confession of his sin, and supplication for Remission. Act. 13. 38, 39. with Rom. 2. 13. οἱ ποιῶνται τὸ νόμον δικαιοθήσονται. The doers of the Law shall be justified. The place declares directly the nature of our Justification before God, and puts the signification of the word out of question. For Justification ensues, as the whole effect of inherent Righteousness according unto the Law : And therefore it is not the making of us Righteous ; which is irrefragable. It is spoken of God ; Rom. 3. 4. ὅπως ἐν δικαιοῦσιν ἐν τοῖς λόγοις σου ; That thou mayest be justified in thy sayings, where to ascribe any other sense to the word is Blasphemy. In like manner the same word is used, and in the same signification ; 1 Cor. 4. 4. 1 Tim. 3. 16. Rom. 3. 20, 26, 28, 30. Chap. 4. 2, 5. Chap. 5. 1, 9. Chap. 6. 7. Chap. 8. 30. Gal. 2. 16, 17. Chap. 3. 11, 24. Chap. 5. 4. Tit. 3. 7. Jam. 2. 22, 24, 25. And in no one of these instances can it admit of any other signification, or denote the making of any man Righteous by the *infusion of an habit, or principle of Righteousness, or any internal mutation whatever.*

It is not therefore in many places of Scripture as *Bellarmino* grants, that the words we have insisted on, do signify the declaration or *juridical pronuntiation* of any one to be Righteous, but in all places where they are used, they are capable

capable of no other but a *Forensic* sense; especially, is this evident where mention is made of *Justification before God*. And because in my judgment this one consideration doth sufficiently defeat all the pretences of those of the *Roman Church* about the nature of Justification, I shall consider what is excepted against the observation insisted on, and remove it out of our way.

*Lud. de Blanc*. In his Reconciliatory endeavours on this Article of *Justification* (*Thes. de usu & acceptatione vocis, Justificandi*) grants unto the Papists, that the word *δικαιοσύνη* doth in sundry places of the New Testament, signifie to *renew*, to *sanctifie*, to *infuse an habit of Holiness or Righteousness* according as they plead. And there is no reason to think but he hath grounded that concession on those instances, which are most pertinent unto that purpose. Neither is it to be expected that a better countenance will be given by any unto this concession, then is given it by him. I shall therefore examine *all the instances* which he insists upon unto this purpose, and leave the determination of the difference unto the judgment of the Reader. Only I shall premise that which I judge not an unreasonable demand; namely, That if the signification of the word in any, or all the places which he mentions, should seem *doubtful* unto any (as it doth not unto me) that the uncertainty of a very few places, should not make us question the proper signification of a word, whose sense is determined in so many, wherein it is clear and unquestionable. The first place he mentioneth, is that of the Apostle *Paul himself*, Rom. 8. 30. *Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called; and whom he called, them he also justified, and whom he justified them he also glorified*. The reason whereby he pleads that by *justified* in this place, an *internal work of inherent Holiness* in them that are predestinated is designed, is this and no other. *It is not*, saith he, *likely that the Holy Apostle in this enumeration of gracious Priviledges,*

A a 2

would

## 180 *The Use of Faith in Justification;*

would omit the mention of our *Sanctification* by which we are freed from the service of sin, and adorned with true internal Holiness and Righteousness: But this is utterly omitted, if it be not comprized under the name and title of being Justified; For it is absurd with some, to refer it unto the Head of *Glorification*.

*Ans.* ( 1 ) The Grace of *Sanctification*, whereby our natures are spiritually washed, purified and endowed with a principle of life, Holiness and Obedience unto God, is a Priviledge unquestionably great and excellent, and without which none can be saved. Of the same nature also is our *Redemption* by the Blood of Christ. And both these doth this Apostle in other places without number, declare, commend, and insist upon. But that he *ought* to have introduced the mention of them, or either of them in this place, seeing he hath not done so, I dare not judge.

2. If our *Sanctification* be included or intended in any of the Priviledges here expressed, there is none of them, *Predestination* only excepted, but it is more probably to be reduced unto, than unto that of being justified. Indeed in *Vocation* it seems to be included expressely. For whereas it is *effe-ctual Vocation*, that is intended wherein an Holy principle of spiritual life, or Faith it self is communicated unto us, our *Sanctification* radically, and as the effect in its adæquate immediate cause is contained in it. Hence we are said to be called to be *Saints*; Rom. 1. 7. which is the same with being *Sanctified in Christ Jesus*. 1 Cor. 1. 2. And in many other places is *Sanctification* included in *Vocation*.

3. Whereas our *Sanctification* in the *infusion of a principle of spiritual life*, and the actings of it unto an encrease in duties of Holiness, Righteousness and Obedience, is that, whereby we are made meet for *Glory*, and is of the same nature essentially with *Glory* it self, whence its advances in us, are said to be from *Glory to Glory*; 2 Cor. 3. 18. and *Glory*.

Glory it self is called the *Grace of life*; 1 Pet. 3. 7. It is much more properly expressed by our being *Glorified*, than by being *Justified*, which is a Priviledge quite of another nature. However it is evident, that there is no reason why we should depart from the general use and signification of the Word, no circumstance in the Text compelling us so to do.

The next place that he gives up unto this signification is. 1 Cor. 6. 11. *Such were some of you, but you are washed, but ye are Sanctified, but ye are Justified in the name of our Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God; That by Justification here, the infusion of an inherent principle of Grace making us inherently Righteous, is intended, he endeavoureth to prove by three Reasons. (1) Because Justification is here ascribed unto the Holy Ghost, ye are justified by the Spirit of our God. But to renew us is the proper work of the Holy Spirit. (2) It is manifest, he says, That by Justification, the Apostle doth signifie some change in the Corinthians, whereby they ceased to be what they were before. For they were Fornicators and Drunkards, such as could not inherit the Kingdom of God, but now were changed, which proves a real inherent work of Grace, to be intended. (3) If Justification here signifie nothing, but to be absolved from the punishment of sin, then the reasoning of the Apostle will be infirm and frigid. For after he hath said that which is greater, as heightning of it, he addeth the less: For it is more to be washed, then merely to be freed from the punishment of sin.*

*Ans.* 1. All these reasons prove not, that it is the same to be *Sanctified* and to be *Justified*, which must be, if that be the sense of the latter, which is here pleaded for. But the Apostle makes an expresse distinction between them, and as this *Author* observes, proceeds from one to another by an ascent from the lesser to the greater. And the infusion of an habit or principle of Grace, or Righteousness Evangelical, whereby we are *inherently Righteous*, by which he explains

plains our being justified in this place, is our *Sanctification* and nothing else. Yea, and *Sanctification* is here distinguished from *washing*; *but ye are washed, but ye are Sanctified*; So as that it peculiarly in this place denotes positive habits of Grace and Holiness: Neither can he declare the nature of it, any way different from what he would have expressed by, being Justified.

2. *Justification* is ascribed unto the *Spirit of God*, as the principal efficient cause of the Application of the Grace of God and Blood of Christ, whereby we are Justified, unto our Souls and Consciences. And he is so also of the *operation* of that Faith whereby we are Justified; whence, although we are said to be justified by him, yet it doth not follow that our Justification consists in the Renovation of our natures.

3. The change and mutation that was made in these *Corinthians*, so far as it was *Physical* in effects inherent, (as such there was) the Apostle expressly ascribes unto their *washing* and *Sanctification*; So that there is no need to suppose this change to be expressed by their being *Justified*. And in the real change asserted, that is, in the *Renovation of our Natures*, consists the true entire work and nature of our *Sanctification*. But whereas by reason of the vitious habits and practices mentioned, they were in a state of *Condemnation*, and such as had no right unto the Kingdom of Heaven, they were by their *Justification* changed and transferred out of that state into another, wherein they had peace with God, and right unto life Eternal.

4. The third reason proceeds upon a mistake; namely, That to be *justified*, is only to be *freed from the punishment due unto sin*. For it comprizeth both the *Non-imputation* of sin, and the *Imputation of Righteousness*, with the privilege of Adoption and right unto the Heavenly Inheritance, which are inseparable from it. And although it doth not appear  
that

that the Apostle in the enumeration of these Priviledges, did intend a process from the *lesser* unto the *greater*; nor is it safe for us to compare the unutterable effects of the Grace of God by Christ Jesus, such as *Sanctification* and *Justification* are, and to determine which is *greatest*, and which is *least*; yet following the conduct of the Scripture, and the due consideration of the things themselves, we may say that in this life we can be made partakers of no greater Mercy or Priviledge, than what consists in our *Justification*. And the Reader may see from hence, how impossible it is to produce any one place wherein the words, *Justification*, and *to justify*, do signifie a real internal Work and Physical operation; in that this *learned man*, a person of more then ordinary perspicuity, candor and judgment, designing to prove it, insisted on such instances, as give so little countenance unto what he pretended. He adds, *Tit. 3. 5, 6, 7. Not by works of Righteousness which we have done, but according unto his Mercy he saved us, by the washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; that being justified by his Grace, we should be made Heirs according unto the hope of Eternal life.* The argument which he alone insists upon to prove, that by *Justification* here, an *infusion of internal Grace* is intended, is this; That the Apostle affirming first, *that God saved us, according unto his Mercy by the washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost, and afterwards affirming that we are Justified by his Grace, he supposes it necessary, that we should be Regenerate and renewed, that we may be justified; and if so, then our Justification contains and comprizeth our Sanctification also.*

*Ans.* The plain truth is, the Apostle speaks not one word of the *Necessity* of our *Sanctification*, or *Regeneration*, or *Renovation* by the Holy Ghost, *antecedently* unto our *Justification*, a supposition whereof contains the whole force of this Argument.

Argument. Indeed he assigns our *Regeneration, Renovation,* and *Justification* all the means of our Salvation, all equally unto Grace and Mercy, in opposition unto any works of our own, which we shall afterwards make use of. Nor is there intimated by him, any order of *precedency,* or connexion between the things that he mentions, but only between Justification and Adoption, Justification having the priority in order of nature; *that being justified by his Grace, we should be Heirs according to the hope of Eternal life.* All the things he mentions are inseparable. No man is Regenerate or renewed by the Holy Ghost, but withal he is justified. No man is justified, but withal he is renewed by the Holy Ghost. And they are all of them equally of Sovereign Grace in God in opposition unto any works of Righteousness that we have wrought. And we plead for the freedom of Gods Grace in Sanctification, no less then in Justification. But that it is necessary that we should be Sanctified that we may be justified before God, who justifieth the ungodly; the Apostle says not in this place, nor any thing to that purpose; neither yet if he did so, would it at all prove, that the *signification* of that expression to be justified, is to be sanctified, or to have inherent Holiness and Righteousness wrought in us. And these Testimonies would not have been produced to prove it, wherein these things are so expressly distinguished, but that there are none to be found of more force or evidence.

The last place wherein he grants this signification of the word *δικαίω* is *Revel. 22. 11. ὁ δίκαιος δικαιοσύνην ἔτι, qui Justus est, Justificetur adhuc;* which place is pleaded by all the *Romanists.* And our Author says, they are but few among the Protestants who do not acknowledge that the word cannot be here used in a *Forensick* sense, but that to be justified, is to go on and encrease in Piety and Righteousness.

*Ans.* But ( 1 ) There is a great objection lies in the way of any Argument from these words; namely, from the *vari-*

ous Reading of the place. For many antient Copies read not ὁ δίκαιος & δικαιθήτω ἐπι; which the vulgar renders *Justificetur adhuc*, but δικαιούσιντων ποιήτω ἐπι; *Let him that is Righteous work Righteousness still*, as doth the Printed Copy which now lyeth before me. So it was in the Copy of the *Complutenſian* Edition which *Stephens* commends above all others; and in one more antient Copy that he used. So it is in the *Syriack* and *Arabick* published by *Huterus*, and in our own *Polyglot*. So *Cyprian* reads the words *de bono patientia*; *Justus autem adhuc justiora faciat, similiter & qui sanctus sanctiora*. And I doubt not but that is the true reading of the place; δικαιθήτω being supplied by some to comply with ἀγαθήτω that ensues. And this phrase of δικαιούσιντων ποιῆν is peculiar unto this Apostle, being no where used in the New Testament, (nor it may be in any other Author) but by him. And he useth it expressly; 1 Epist. 2. 29. and Chap. 3. 7. where those words, ὁ ποιῶν δικαιοσύνην δίκαιος ἔστι, do plainly contain what is here expressed. (2) To be *justified*, as the word is rendred by the vulgar, *let him be justified more* (as it must be rendred, if the word δικαιθήτω be retained) respects an act of God, which neither in its beginning nor continuation is prescribed unto us as a duty, nor is capable of *increase in degrees* as we shall shew afterwards. (3) Men are said to be δίκαιοι generally from *inherent Righteousness*; and if the Apostle had intended Justification in this place, he would not have said ὁ δίκαιος & but ὁ δικαιθῆς. All which things prefer the *Complutenſian*, *Syriack*, and *Arabick*, before the vulgar reading of this place. If the vulgar reading be retained, no more can be intended, but that he who is *Righteous*, should so proceed in working Righteousness, as to secure his justified estate unto himself, and to manifest it before God and the World.

Now whereas the words δικαίω and δικαιοῦμαι are used 36 times in the *New Testament*, these are all the places, wherunto any exception is put in against their *Forensick* signification;

And how ineffectual these exceptions are, is evident unto any impartial Judge.

Some other Considerations may yet be made use of and pleaded to the same purpose: Such is the opposition that is made between *Justification* and *Condemnation*; So is it, *Isa.* 50. 8, 9. *Prov.* 17. 15. *Rom.* 5. 16, 18. *Chap.* 8. 33, 34. and in sundry other places, as may be observed in the preceding enumeration of them. Wherefore as *Condemnation* is not the infusing of an habit of wickedness into him that is condemned; nor the making of him to be *inherently wicked*, who was before Righteous; but the passing a sentence upon a man with respect unto his wickedness; no more is *Justification* the change of a person from inherent unrighteousness unto Righteousness, by the infusion of a principle of Grace, but a sentential Declaration of him to be Righteous.

Moreover, the thing intended is frequently declared in the Scripture by other *equivalent* terms, which are absolutely exclusive of any such sense, as the *infusion of an habit of Righteousness*; So the Apostle expresseth it by the *Imputation of Righteousness without Works*; *Rom.* 4. 6, 11. And calls it the *Blessedness*, which we have by the pardon of sin, and the covering of Iniquity in the same place. So it is called *Reconciliation with God*; *Rom.* 5. 9, 10. To be justified by the Blood of Christ, is the same with being *Reconciled by his Death*. *Being now justified by his Blood, we shall be saved from wrath by him. For if when we were Enemies we were reconciled to God by the Death of his Son, much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.* See 2 *Cor.* 5. 20, 21. *Reconciliation is not the infusion of an habit of Grace*, but the effecting of peace and love, by the removal of all enmity and causes of offence. To *save*, and *Salvation* are used to the same purpose. He shall *save his people from their sins*; *Matth.* 1. 21. is the same, with, *by him all that believe are justified from all things from which they could not be justified by the Law of Moses*,  
A.C.

Act. 13. 39. That of Gal. 2. 16. *We have believed that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law,* is the same with Act. 15. 11. *But we believe that through the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved even as they;* Ephes. 2. 8, 9. *By Grace ye are saved, through Faith, and not of Works;* is so to be justified. So it is expressed by pardon, or the *Remission of Sins*, which is the effect of it; Rom. 4. 5, 6. *By receiving the Atonement;* Chap. 5. 11. *not coming into Judgment or Condemnation;* Joh. 5. 24. *Blotting out sins and Iniquities;* Isa. 43. 25. *Psal. 51. 9. Isa. 44. 22. Jer. 18. 23. Act. 3. 19. Casting them into the bottom of the Sea;* Micah. 7. 19. and sundry other expressions of an alike importance. The Apostle declaring it by its effects, says, *δικαιοὶ κατασθῆσονται οἱ πολλοί* *Many shall be made Righteous*, Rom. 5. 19. *δικαιος γέμισται*, who on a juridical Trial in open Court, is absolved and declared Righteous.

And so it may be observed that all things concerning Justification are proposed in the Scripture under a *juridical Scheme*, or *Forensick Tryal* and Sentence. As ( 1 ) A *judgment* is supposed in it, concerning which, the *Psalmist* prays that it may not proceed on the terms of the Law, *Psal. 143. 2.* ( 2 ) The *Judge*, is God himself; Isa. 50. 7, 8. Rom. 8. 33. ( 3 ) The *Tribunal* whereon God sits in Judgment, is the *Throne of Grace*, Heb. 4. 16. Therefore will the Lord wait, that he may be gracious unto you, *and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you;* for the Lord is a God of Judgment Isa. 30. 18. ( 4 ) A *Guilty person*. This is the Sinner, who is *ὁ πῶς δίκιος τῷ Θεῷ*, so guilty of sin, as to be *obnoxious* to the Judgment of God; *τῷ δικαιοῦματι τῷ Θεῷ.* Rom. 3. 19. Chap. 1. 32. whose mouth is stopped by Conviction. ( 5 ) *Accusers* are ready to propose and promote the charge against the guilty person; These are the Law, Joh. 5. 45. and *Conscience*, Rom. 2. 15. and *Sathan* also, Zach. 3. 2. Rev. 12. 10. ( 6 ) The *Charge* is admitted and drawn up into an *Hand-*

writing in form of Law, and is laid before the Tribunal of the Judge in Bar, to the Deliverance of the Offender. Col. 2. 14. ( 7 ) A *Plea* is prepared in the Gospel for the guilty person. And this is Grace, through the Blood of Christ, the Ransome paid, the Atonement made, the Eternal Righteousness brought in by the Surety of the Covenant. Rom. 3. 23, 24, 25. Dan. 9. 24. Eph. 1. 7. ( 8 ) Hereunto alone the *Sinner betakes himself*, renouncing all other *Apologies* or defensatives whatever. Psal. 130. 2, 3. Psal. 143. 2. Job. 9. 2, 3. Chap. 42. 5, 6, 7. Luk. 18. 13. Rom. 3. 24, 25. Chap. 5. 11, 16, 17, 18, 19. Chap. 8. 1, 2, 3. ver. 32. 33. Isa. 53. 5, 6. Heb. 9. 13, 14, 15. Chap. 10. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13. 1 Pet. 2. 24. 1 Job. 1. 7. Other *Plea* for a *Sinner* before God there is none. He who knoweth God and himself, will not provide or betake himself unto any other. Nor will he as I suppose trust unto any other defence, were he sure of all the Angels in Heaven to plead for him. ( 9 ) To make this *Plea* effectual we have an *Advocate* with the Father, and he pleads his own propitiation for us. 1 Job. 2. 1, 2. ( 10 ) The *Sentence* hereon is Absolution, on the account of the Ransome, Blood or Sacrifice and Righteousness of Christ; with Acceptation into favour, as persons approved of God. Job. 33. 24. Psal. 32. 1, 2. Rom. 3. 23, 24, 25. Chap. 8. 1, 33, 34. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Gal. 3. 13, 14.

Of what use the Declaration of this Process in the Justification of a *Sinner* may be, hath been in some measure before declared. And if many did seriously consider, that all these things do concur and are required unto the *Justification* of every one that shall be saved, it may be they would not have such slight thoughts of sin, and the way of Deliverance from the guilt of it, as they seem to have. From this Consideration did the Apostle learn that *Terror of the Lord*, which made him so earnest with men to seek after *Reconciliation*; 2 Cor. 5. 10, 11.

I had not so long insisted on the signification of the words in the Scripture, but that a right understanding of it, doth not only exclude the pretences of the *Romanists* about the infusion of an habit of Charity, from being the *formal cause* of our Justification before God, but may also give occasion unto some to take advice, into what place or consideration they can dispose their own *personal inkerent Righteousness* in their Justification before him.

---

## CHAP. V.

### *The Distinction of a first and second Justification Examined. The Continuation of Justification whereon it doth depend.*

**B**Efore we enquire immediately into the *nature* and *causes* of Justification, there are some things yet previously to be considered, that we may prevent all Ambiguity and misunderstanding, about the Subject to be treated of. I say therefore that the *Evangelical Justification* which alone we plead about, is but one, and is at once completed. About any other Justification before God but *one*, we will not contend with any. Those who can find out another, may as they please ascribe what they will unto it, or ascribe it unto what they will. Let us therefore consider what is offered of this nature.

Those of the *Roman Church* do ground their whole Doctrine of Justification upon a distinction of a *double Justification*, which they call the *first* and the *second*. The first Justification, they say, is the infusion or the Communication  
unto.

unto us of an *inherent principle* or habit of Grace or Charity. Hereby they say Original sin is *extinguished*, and all habits of sin are expelled. This Justification they say is by *Faith*, the Obedience and Satisfaction of Christ being the only *meritorious* cause thereof. Only they dispute many things about *preparations* for it, and *dispositions* unto it. Under those terms the *Council of Trent* included the Doctrine of the *Schoolmen* about *meritum de congruo*, as both *Hosius* and *Andradius* confess in the defence of that Council. And as they are explained, they come much to one; however the *Council* warily avoided the name of *merit*, with respect unto this their first Justification. And the *use of Faith* herein, (which with them is no more but a general assent unto Divine Revelation) is to bear the principal part in these *preparations*. So that to be *Justified by Faith* according unto them, is to have the mind prepared by this kind of believing to receive *Gratiam gratum facientem*, an habit of Grace expelling sin, and making us acceptable unto God. For upon this believing with those other Duties of *Contrition* and *Repentance* which must accompany it, it is meet and *congruous* unto Divine Wisdom, Goodness, and Faithfulness to give us that Grace whereby we are justified. And this according unto them is that Justification, whereof the Apostle *Paul* treats in his Epistles, from the procurement whereof he excludes all the *Works of the Law*. The *second Justification* is an effect or consequent hereof. And the proper formal cause thereof is *Good Works*, proceeding from this Principle of Grace and Love. Hence are they the Righteousness wherewith Believers are Righteous before God: Whereby they merit eternal life. The Righteousness of Works they call it, and suppose it taught by the Apostle *James*. This they constantly affirm to make us *justos ex injustis*, wherein they are followed by others. For this is the way that most of them take to salve the seeming repugnancy between the Apostle *Paul* and *James*. *Paul* they

they say treats of the *first Justification* only, whence he excludes all Works, for it is by Faith in the manner before described. But *James* treats of the *second Justification*, which is by good Works. So *Bellar.* *lib. 2. cap. 16.* and *lib. 4. cap. 18.* And it is the exprefs Determination of those at *Trent. Sess. 6. cap. 10.* This distinction was covned unto no other end, but to bring in Confusion into the whole Doctrine of the Gospel. Justification through the free Grace of God by Faith in the Blood of Christ is *evacuated* by it. Sanctification is turned into a Justification, and corrupted by making the fruits of it *meritorious*. The whole nature of *Evangelical Justification* consisting in the gratuitous pardon of Sin and the Imputation of Righteousness, as the Apostle expressly affirms, and the declaration of a Believing Sinner to be Righteous thereon, as the Word alone signifies, is utterly defeated by it.

Howbeit others have embraced this distinction also, though not *absolutely* in their sense. So do the *Socinians*. Yea it must be allowed in some sense by all that hold *our inherent Righteousness* to be the cause of, or to have any influence into our Justification before God. For they do allow of a Justification which in order of nature is *antecedent* unto Works truly Gracious and *Evangelical*. But *consequent* unto such Works, there is a Justification differing at least *in degree*, if not *in nature* and kind upon the difference of its formal cause which is our new Obedience from the former. But they mostly say, it is only the *continuation* of our *Justification* and the encrease of it as to degrees, that they intend by it. And if they may be allowed to turn *Sanctification* into *Justification*, and to make a progress therein, or an encrease thereof, either in the root or fruit to be a *new Justification*, they may make twenty Justifications as well as two for ought I know. For therein the *inward man is renewed day by day.* 2 Cor. 4. 16. and Believers go *from strength to strength,*

strength, are charged from Glory to Glory; 2 Cor. 3. 18. by the Addition of one Grace unto another in their exercise. 2 Pet. 1. 5, 6, 7, 8. and increasing with the encrease of God. Col. 2. 19. do in all things grow up into him who is the Head. Ephes. 4. 15. And if their Justification consist herein, they are justified anew every day. I shall therefore do these two things. ( 1 ) Shew that this distinction is both *unscriptural* and *irrational*. ( 2 ) Declare what is the *continuation* of our Justification, and whereon it doth depend.

Justification by Faith in the Blood of Christ, may be considered either as to the *nature* and essence of it, or as unto its *Manifestation* and Declaration. The Manifestation of it is twofold. ( 1 ) *Initial* in this life. ( 2 ) *Solemn* and compleat at the day of Judgment, whereof we shall treat afterwards. The Manifestation of it in this life respects either, the *Souls* and *Consciences* of them that are justified, or others, that is the Church and the World. And each of these have the name of *Justification* assigned unto them, though our real Justification before God be always *one* and the same. But a man may be really justified before God, and yet not have the evidence or assurance of it in his own mind. Wherefore that evidence or assurance is not of the nature or essence of that Faith whereby we are Justified, nor doth necessarily accompany our Justification. But this *Manifestation* of a mans own Justification unto himself, although it depend on many especial causes, which are not necessary unto his Justification absolutely before God, is not a *second Justification* when it is attained; but only the Application of the former unto his Conscience by the Holy Ghost. There is also a *Manifestation* of it with respect unto others, which in like manner depends on other causes then doth our Justification before God absolutely; yet is it not a *second Justification*. For it depends wholly on the *visible effects* of that Faith whereby we are justified, as the Apostle *James* instructs us; yet is it only our  
single

single Justification before God, evidenced and declared, unto his Glory, the benefit of others, and encrease of our own Reward.

There is also a *twofold Justification* before God mentioned in the Scripture. ( 1 ) *By the works of the Law.* Rom. 2. 13. Chap. 10. 5. Matth. 19. 15, 16, 17, 18, 19. Hereunto is required an absolute conformity unto the whole Law of God in our natures, all the faculties of our Souls, all the principles of our moral operations, with perfect actual Obedience unto all its commands, in all instances of Duty, both for matter and manner. For he is *curst* who continueth not in *all things* that are written in the Law to do them. And he that breaks *any one Commandment* is guilty of the breach of the *whole Law*. Hence the Apostle concludes, that none can be Justified by the Law, because all have sinned. ( 2 ) There is a *Justification by Grace* through Faith in the Blood of Christ, whereof we treat. And these *ways* of Justification are contrary, proceeding on terms directly contradictory, and cannot be made consistent with, or subservient one to the other. But as we shall manifest afterwards the confounding of them both, by mixing them together, is that which is aimed at in this distinction of a *first and second Justification*. But whatever respects it may have, that Justification which we have before God, in his sight through Jesus. Christ, is but one, and at once full and compleat, and this distinction is a vain and fond invention: For

1. As it is explained by the *Papists* it is exceedingly derogatory to the merit of Christ. For it leaves it no effect towards us, but only the *infusion of an habit of Charity*. When that is done, all that remains with respect unto our Salvation is to be wrought by our selves. Christ hath only *merited the first Grace* for us, that wetherewith, and thereby may merit life eternal. The merit of Christ being confined in its effect unto the *first Justification*, it hath no immediate

influence into any Grace, Priviledge, Mercy, or Glory that follow thereon ; but they are all effects of that *second Justification* which is purely by works. But this is openly contrary unto the whole tenor of the Scripture. For although there be an order of Gods appointment, wherein we are to be made partakers of Evangelical Priviledges in Grace and Glory, one before another, yet are they all of them the immediate effects of the death and obedience of Christ ; who hath *obtained for us eternal Redemption*, Heb. 9. 12. and is the *Autour of eternal Salvation unto all that do obey him*, Chap. 5. 9. *Having by one offering for ever perfected them that are Sanctified.* And those who allow of a *secondary*, if not of a second Justification by our own inherent personal Righteousnesses, are also guilty hereof, though not in the same degree with them. For whereas they ascribe unto it, our acquitment from all charge of Sin after the first Justification, and a Righteousness accepted in Judgment, in the Judgment of God, as if it were compleat and perfect, whereon depends our final Absolution and Reward, it is evident that the immediate efficacy of the satisfaction and merit of Christ, hath its bounds assigned unto it in the *first Justification* ; which whether it be taught in the Scripture or no, we shall afterwards enquire.

2. More by this *distinction* is ascribed unto *our selves* working by vertue of *inherent Grace*, as unto the merit and procurement of spiritual and eternal good, than unto the *Blood of Christ*. For that only procures the *first Grace* and Justification for us. Thereof alone it is the meritorious cause ; or as others express it, we are made partakers of the effects of it in the pardon of Sins past. But by vertue of this Grace, we do our selves obtain, procure or merit *another*, a *second*, a *compleat*, *Justification* ; the continuance of the favour of God, and all the fruits of it, with life eternal and Glory. So do our works at least perfect and compleat the  
merit

merit of Christ, without which it is imperfect. And those who assign the *continuation of our Justification* wherein all the effects of Divine Favour and Grace are contained unto our own personal Righteousness, as also final Justification before God as the pleadable cause of it, do follow their steps unto the best of my understanding. But such things as these, may be disputed; in debates of which kind it is incredible almost what influence on the minds of men, Traditions, Prejudices, Subtilty of Invention and Arguing do obtain, to divert them from real thoughts of the things about which they contend, with respect unto themselves and their own condition. If by any means such persons can be called home unto *themselves*, and find leisure to think how, and by what means they shall come to appear before the High God, to be freed from the sentence of the Law, and the Curse due to Sin, to have a pleadable Righteousness at the Judgment Seat of God before which they stand, especially if a real sense of these things be implanted on their minds by the convincing power of the Holy Ghost, all their subtle Arguments and Pleas for the mighty efficacy of their own personal Righteousness, will sink in their minds like Water at the return of the Tide, and leave nothing but Mud and Defilement behind them.

3. This Distinction of *two Justifications* as used and improved by those of the *Roman Church*, leaves us indeed no Justification at all. Something there is in the branches of it, of *Sanctification*, but of *Justification* nothing at all. Their first Justification in the *infusion of an habit* or principle of Grace, unto the expulsion of all habits of Sin, is Sanctification and nothing else. And we never did contend that our Justification in such a sense, if any will take it in such a sense, doth consist in the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*. And this Justification, if any will needs call it so, is capable of degrees, both of increase in its self, and of exercise in its fruits, as was newly declared. But not only to call this our

*Justification*, with a general respect unto the notion of the word, as a making of us personally and inherently Righteous, but to plead that this is *the Justification through Faith in the Blood of Christ*, declared in the Scripture, is to exclude the only true Evangelical Justification from any place in Religion. The second Branch of the distinction hath much in it like unto *Justification by the Law*, but nothing of that which is declared in the Gospel. So that this Distinction instead of *coynings two Justifications* according to the Gospel, hath left us *none at all*. For

4. There is no countenance given unto this Distinction in the Scripture. There is indeed mention therein, as we observed before, of a double Justification; the one by the Law, the other according unto the Gospel. But that either of these should on any account be sub-distinguished into a *first* and *second* of the same kind, that is either according unto the Law or the Gospel, there is nothing in the Scripture to intimate. For this *second Justification* is no way applicable unto what the Apostle *James* discourseth on that Subject. He treats of Justification; but speaks not one word of an encrease of it, or addition unto it, of a first or second. Besides he speaks expressly of him that *boasts of Faith*, which being without works is a *dead Faith*. But he who hath the first Justification by the confession of our Adversaries, hath a true living Faith, formed and enlivened by Charity. And he useth the same Testimony concerning the Justification of *Abraham* that *Paul* doth, and therefore doth not intend another but the same, though in a divers respect. Nor doth any Believer learn the least of it in his own experience; nor without a design to serve a farther turn, would it ever have entered the minds of sober men on the reading of the Scripture. And it is the bane of spiritual Truth, for men in the pretended Declaration of it, to coin *arbitrary distinctions* without Scripture ground for them, and obtrude them as belonging

longing unto the Doctrine they treat of. They serve unto no other end or purpose, but only to lead the minds of men from the substance of what they ought to attend unto, and to engage all sorts of Persons in endless strifes and contentions. If the Authors of this Distinction would but go over the places in the Scripture where mention is made of our *Justification* before God, and make a distribution of them unto the respective parts of their Distinction, they would quickly find themselves at an unrelievable loss.

5. There is that in the Scripture ascribed unto our *first Justification*, if they will needs call it so, as leaves no room for their *second feigned Justification*. For the sole foundation and pretence of this Distinction, is a denial of those things to belong unto our *Justification by the Blood of Christ*, which the Scripture exprelly assigns unto it. Let us take out some instances of what belongs unto the *first*, and we shall quickly see how little it is, yea that there is nothing left for the pretended second Justification. For ( 1 ) Therein do we receive the compleat *pardon and forgiveness of our Sins*. Rom. 4. 4, 6, 7. Ephes. 1. 7. Chap. 4. 32. Act. 26. 18. ( 2 ) Thereby are we *made Righteous*; Rom. 5. 19. Chap. 10. 4. And ( 3 ) are freed from *Condemnation, Judgment, and Death*. Joh. 3. 16, 19. Chap. 5. 25. Rom. 8. 1. ( 4 ) Are *Reconciled unto God*; Rom. 5. 9, 10. 2 Cor. 5. 21, 22. And ( 5 ) have *peace with him*, and access into the favour wherein we stand by Grace, with the advantages and consolations that depend thereon in a sense of his Love. Rom. 5. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5. And ( 6 ) we have *Adoption* therewithal and all its priviledges; John 1. 12. And in particular ( 7 ) a *Right and Title* unto the whole inheritance of Glory; Act. 26. 18. Rom. 8. 17. And ( 8 ) hereon *eternal life* doth follow; Rom. 8. 30. Chap. 6. 23. Which things will be again immediately spoken unto upon another occasion. And if there be any thing now left for their second Justification to do as such, let them take it as their

their own ; these things are all of them ours, or do belong unto that *one Justification* which we do assert. Wherefore it is evident that either the *First* Justification overthrows the *Second*, rendring it needless ; or the *Second* destroys the *First*, by taking away what essentially belongs unto it ; we must therefore part with the one or the other, for consistent they are not. But that which gives countenance unto the Fiction and Artifice of this Distinction and a great many more, is a *dislike* of the Doctrine of the Grace of God, and Justification from thence by Faith in the Blood of Christ, which some endeavour hereby to *send out of the way* upon a pretended sleeveless *Errand*, whilst they dress up their own Righteousness in its Robes, and exalt it into the Room and Dignity thereof.

But there seems to be more of reality and difficulty in what is pleaded concerning the *continuation of our Justification*. For those that are *freely justified*, are *continued* in that state until they are glorified. By Justification they are really changed into a new spiritual state and condition, and have a new Relation given them unto God and Christ, unto the Law and the Gospel. And it is enquired what it is whereon their *Continuation in this state* doth on their part depend ; or what is required of them that they may be justified unto the End. And this as some say is not *Faith alone*, but also the *works of sincere Obedience*. And none can deny but that they are required of all them that are justified, whilst they continue in a state of Justification on this side Glory, which next and immediately ensues thereunto. But whether upon our Justification at first before God, *Faith* be *immediately dismissed* from its place and office, and its work be given over unto works, so as that the *continuation of our Justification* should depend on our own personal Obedience, and not on the renewed Application of Faith unto Christ and his Righteousness, is worth our enquiry. Only I desire the  
Reader

Reader to observe that <sup>whereas</sup> which was the necessity of owning a personal Obedience in justified persons, is on all hands absolutely agreed, the seeming difference that is herein, concerns not the substance of the Doctrine of Justification, but the manner of expressing our conceptions concerning the order of the Disposition of Gods Grace, and our own Duty, unto Edification, wherein I shall use my own liberty, as it is meet others should do theirs. And I shall offer my thoughts hereunto in the ensuing observations.

1. Justification is such a work as is at once *completed* in all the causes, and the whole effect of it, though not as unto the full possession of all that it gives Right and Title unto. For (1) All our sins past, present, and to come, were at once *imputed* unto and laid upon Jesus Christ; in what sense, we shall afterwards enquire. *He was wounded for our Transgressions; He was bruised for our Iniquities, the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and with his stripes are we healed. All we like Sheep have gone astray, we have turned every one to his own way, and the Lord hath made to meet on Him the Iniquities of us all,* Isa. 53. 6, 7. *Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the Tree,* 1 Pet. 2. 24. The Assertions being indefinite without exception or limitation, are equivalent unto *Universals*. All our sins were on him, he bare them *All* at once, and therefore once died for all. (2) He did therefore at once *finish Transgression, made an End of sin, made Reconciliation for Iniquity, and brought in everlasting Righteousness,* Dan. 9. 24. At once he expiated all our sins; for *by himself he purged our sins,* and then sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high, *Heb. 1. 3.* And we are sanctified or dedicated unto God through the *offering of the Body of Christ once for all*; for by *one Offering* he hath perfected (consummated, completed as unto their spiritual state) *them that are sanctified,* Heb. 10. 10. 14. He never will do more than he hath actually done already for the *Redemption of*  
all

all our sins from first to last; for there remaineth no more sacrifice for sin. I do not say that hereupon our Justification is compleat, but only that the *meritorious procuring cause* of it was at once compleated, and is never to be renewed or repeated any more; All the enquiry is concerning the renewed Application of it unto our Souls and Consciences, whether that be by *Faith alone*, or by the *works of Righteousness* which we do. (3) By our actual Believing with Justifying Faith, believing on Christ, or his Name, we do receive him, and thereby on our first Justification become the *Sons of God*; Joh. 1. 12. That is, *joynt heirs with Christ, and heirs of God*; Rom. 8. 17. Hereby we have a *Right unto*, and an Interest in all the Benefits of his Mediation; which is to be at once compleatly justified. *For in him we are compleat*, Col. 2. 10. *For by the Faith that is in him we do receive the forgiveness of sins, and a lot or inheritance among all them that are sanctified*; Act. 26. 18. being immediately justified from all things from which we could not be justified by the Law, Act. 13. 39. yea God thereon *blesseth us with all spiritual Blessings in heavenly things in Christ*, Ephes. 1. 3. All these things are absolutely inseparable from our first believing in him, and therefore our Justification is at once compleat. In particular (4) On our Believing, *all our sins are forgiven. He hath quickened you together with him, having forgiven you all Trespases*, Col. 2. 13, 14, 15. *For in him we have Redemption through his Blood, even the forgiveness of sins, according unto the riches of his Grace*, Ephes. 1. 7. which one place obviates all the petulant exceptions of some against the consistency of the free Grace of God in the pardon of sins, and the satisfaction of Christ in the procurement thereof. (5) There is hereon nothing to be laid unto the charge of them that are so justified. *For he that believeth hath Everlasting Life, and shall not come into Condemnation, but is passed from Death unto Life*, Joh. 5. 24. And who shall lay any thing unto the charge of Gods Elect,

Elect, it is God that Justifieth, it is Christ that died, Rom. 8. 33, 34. and there is no condemnation unto them that are in Christ Jesus, ver. 1. For being justified by Faith we have peace with God, chap. 5. 1. And (6) we have that Blessedness hereon whereof in this life we are capable, Rom. 4. 5, 6. From all which it appears that our Justification is at *once compleat*. And (7) it must be so or no man can be justified in this world. For no time can be assigned, nor measure of Obedience be limited, whereon it may be supposed that any one comes to be Justified before God who is not so on his first Believing. For the Scripture doth no where assign any such time or measure. And to say that *no man is completely justified* in the sight of God in this life, is at once to overthrow all that is taught in the Scriptures concerning Justification, and therewithall all peace with God and comfort of Believers. But a man acquitted upon his legal trial, is at *once discharged* of all that the Law hath against him.

2. Upon this compleat Justification, Believers are obliged unto *universal Obedience* unto God. The Law is not abolished but established by Faith. It is neither *abrogated* nor *dispensed* withall by such an *Interpretation* as should take off its Obligation in any thing that it requires, nor as to the degree and manner wherein it requires it. Nor is it possible it should be so. For it is nothing but the *Rule of that Obedience* which the nature of God and man make necessary from the one to the other. And that is an *Antinomianism* of the worst sort, and most derogatory unto the Law of God, which affirms it to be divested of its power, to oblige unto perfect Obedience, so as that what it is not so, shall (as it were in despite of the Law) be accepted as if it were so, unto the End for which the Law requires it. There is no *medium*, but that either the *Law* is utterly abolished, and so there is no sin, for where there is no Law there is no Transgression; or it must be allowed to require the same Obedience that it

did at its first Institution ; and unto the same degree. Neither is it in the power of any man living to keep his *Conscience* from judging and condemning that, whatever it be, wherein he is convinced that he comes short of the perfection of the Law. Wherefore,

3. The *Commanding Power* of the Law in positive precepts and prohibitions which Justified Persons are subject unto, doth make and constitute all their inconformities unto it to be no less *truly and properly sins* in their own nature, than they would be if their persons were obnoxious unto the *Curse* of it. This they are not, nor can be ; for to be obnoxious unto the *Curse of the Law*, and to be *justified*, are contradictory ; but to be subject to the *Commands* of the Law, and to be justified are not so. But it is a subjection to the *commanding power of the Law*, and not an obnoxiousness unto the *Curse of the Law*, that *constitutes the nature of sin* in its Transgression. Wherefore that compleat Justification which is at *once*, though it *dissolve the Obligation* on the sinner unto punishment by the *Curse of the Law*, yet doth it not annihilate the *commanding Authority* of the Law, unto them that are justified, that what is sin in others, should not be so in them. See *Rom. 8. 1. 33, 34.*

Hence in the first Justification of believing sinners, all *future sins* are remitted as unto any *actual Obligation* unto the *Curse of the Law*, unless they should fall into such sins as should *ipso facto*, forfeit their justified estate, and transfer them from the *Covenant of Grace*, into the *Covenant of Works*, which we believe that God in his Faithfulness will preserve them from. And although sin cannot be *actually pardoned* before it be *actually committed* ; yet may the *obligation* unto the *Curse of the Law* be virtually taken away from such sins in *justified persons* as are consistent with a justified estate, or the *Terms of the Covenant of Grace*, antecedently unto their actual commission. God at once in this sense

ſenſe forgiveth all their Iniquities, and healeth all their Diſeaſes, redeemeth their life from Deſtruction, and crowneth them with loving kindneſſ and mercies, Pſal. 103. 2, 3. Future ſins are not ſo pardoned as that when they are committed they ſhould be no ſins, which cannot be, unleſs the commanding power of the Law be abrogated. But their reſpect unto the Curſe of the Law, or their power to oblige the juſtified perſon thereunto is taken away.

Still there abideth the *true nature of ſin* in every inconformity unto, or tranſgreſſion of the Law in juſtified perſons, which ſtands in need of daily actual pardon. For there is *no man that liveth and ſinneth not, and if we ſay that we have no ſin, we do but deceive our ſelves.* None are more ſenſible of the Guilt of ſin, none are more troubled for it, none are more earneſt in ſupplications for the pardon of it, than juſtified perſons. For this is the effect of the Sacrifice of Chriſt applied unto the Souls of Believers, as the Apoſtle declares, *Heb. 10. 1, 2, 3, 4, 10, 14.* that it doth take away *Conſcience, condemning the Sinner for ſin,* with reſpect unto the Curſe of the Law; But it doth not take away *Conſcience, condemning ſin in the Sinner,* which on all conſiderations of God and themſelves, of the Law and the Goſpel, requires *Repentance* on the part of the ſinner, and *actual pardon* on the part of God.

Whereas therefore one Eſſential part of Juſtification conſiſteth in the *pardon of our ſins,* and ſins cannot be *actually pardoned* before they are actually committed, our preſent enquiry is, whereon the *continuation of our Juſtification doth depend,* notwithstanding the Intervenieney of ſin after we are juſtified, whereby ſuch ſins are actually pardoned, and our perſons are continued in a ſtate of Acceptation with God, and have their right unto Life and Glory uninterrupted. Juſtification is at once compleat, in the Imputation of a perfect Righteouſneſs, the Grant of a Right and Title unto the hea-

venly Inheritance, the actual pardon of all past sins, and the virtual pardon of future sins, but how or by what means, on what terms and conditions this state is continued unto those who are once justified, whereby their Righteousness is everlasting, their Title to Life and Glory indefeazable, and all their sins are actually pardoned, is to be enquired.

For answer unto this enquiry, I say (1) *It is God that Justifieth*, and therefore the continuation of our Justification is *his Act* also. And this on his part depends on the *immutability of his Counsel*, the unchangeableness of the everlasting Covenant, which is *ordered in all things and sure*, the Faithfulness of his *Promises*, the Efficacy of his *Grace*, his complacency in the *Propitiation* of Christ, with the power of his *Intercession*, and the irrevocable Grant of the Holy Ghost unto them that do believe; which things are not of our present enquiry.

2. Some say that on our part the *continuation* of this state, of our Justification, depends on the *Condition of Good works*, that is, that they are of the same consideration and use with Faith it self herein. In our Justification it self there is, they will grant, somewhat peculiar unto Faith; but as unto the *continuation of our Justification*, Faith and Works have the same influence into it. Yea, some seem to ascribe it distinctly unto Works in an especial manner, with this only proviso, that they be *done in Faith*. For my part I cannot understand that the continuation of our Justification hath any other dependencies, than hath our Justification it self. As Faith alone is required unto the one, so Faith alone is required unto the other, although its operations and effects in the discharge of its duty and office in Justification, and the continuation of it are divers, nor can it otherwise be. To clear this Assertion two things are to be observed.

1. That the *continuation of our Justification* is the continuation of the Imputation of Righteousness and the pardon of sins.

sins. I do still suppose the imputation of Righteousness to concur unto our Justification, although we have not yet examined what Righteousness it is that is imputed. But that God in our Justification *imputeth Righteousness* unto us, is so expressly affirmed by the Apostle, as that it must not be called in question. Now the first act of God in the *imputation of Righteousness* cannot be repeated. And the actual pardon of sin after Justification, is an effect and consequent of that imputation of Righteousness. *If any man sin, there is a Propitiation; deliver him, I have found a Ransome.* Wherefore unto this actual pardon, there is nothing required, but the application of that Righteousness which is the cause of it, and this is done by Faith only.

2. *The Continuation of our Justification*, is before God, or in the sight of God no less than our absolute Justification is. We speak not of the sense and evidence of it unto our own Souls unto peace with God; nor of the evidencing and manifestation of it unto others by its effects; but of the continuance of it in the sight of God. Whatever therefore is the means, condition, or cause hereof, is *pleadable* before God, and ought to be pleaded unto that purpose. So then the enquiry is,

What it is that, when a *Justified person is guilty of Sin* (as guilty he is more or less every day) and his *Conscience is pressed with a sense thereof, as that only thing which can endanger or intercept his justified Estate, his Favour with God, and Title unto Glory*, he betakes himself unto, or ought so to do, for the continuance of his State, and pardon of his Sins, what he pleadeth unto that purpose, and what is available thereunto. That this is not his own Obedience, his personal Righteousness, or fulfilling the condition of the new Covenant, is evident, from ( 1 ) the *experience* of Believers themselves; ( 2 ) *Testimony* of Scripture, and ( 3 ) the *Example* of them whose cases are recorded therein.

1. Let the *experience* of them that do believe be enquired into; for their Consciences are continually exercised herein. What is it that they betake themselves unto, what is it that they plead with God, for the continuance of the pardon of their Sins, and the acceptance of their persons before him? Is it any thing but *Sovereign Grace and Mercy, through the Blood of Christ*? Are not all the Arguments which they plead unto this end, taken from the Topicks, of the name of God, his Mercy, Grace, Faithfulness, tender Compassion, Covenant and Promises, all manifested, and exercised in and through the Lord Christ and his mediation alone? Do they not herein place their only trust and confidence for this end, that their Sins may be pardoned, and their persons, though every way unworthy in themselves be accepted with God? Doth any other thought enter into their Hearts? Do they plead *their own Righteousness*, Obedience, and Duties to this purpose? Do they leave the prayer of the *Publican*, and betake themselves unto that of the *Pharisee*? And is it not of *Faith alone*, which is that Grace whereby they apply themselves unto the Mercy or Grace of God through the mediation of Christ? It is true that Faith herein, worketh and acteth it self in and by Godly sorrow, Repentance, Humiliation, Self-judging, and Abhorrency, Fervency in Prayer and Supplications with an humble waiting for an Answer of Peace from God, with engagements unto renewed Obedience. But it is *Faith alone* that makes Applications unto Grace in the Blood of Christ, for the continuation of our justified Estate, expressing it self in those other ways and effects mentioned, from none of which a Believing Soul doth expect the Mercy aimed at.

2. The Scripture expressly doth declare this to be the *only way* of the *continuation of our Justification*. 1 Joh. 2. 1, 2. *These things write I unto you, that you sin not. And if any man sin we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the Righteous;*

teous ; and he is the Propitiation for our Sins. It is required of those that are justified, that they sin not ; it is their duty not to sin ; but yet it is not so required of them, as that if in any thing they fail of their Duty they should immediately lose the Priviledge of their Justification. Wherefore on a supposition of sin, if any man sin, ( as there is no man that liveth and sinneth not ) what way is prescribed for such persons to take, what are they to apply themselves unto, that their sin may be pardoned, and their acceptance with God continued ; that is, for the continuation of their Justification ? The course in this case directed unto by the Apostle, is none other but the Application of our Souls by Faith unto the Lord Christ, as our Advocate with the Father, on the account of the Propitiation that he hath made for our Sins. Under the consideration of this double Act of his Sacerdotal Office, his Oblation and Intercession, he is the Object of our Faith in our absolute Justification, and so he is as unto the continuation of it. So our whole progress in our justified Estate in all the degrees of it is ascribed unto Faith alone.

It is no part of our enquiry, what God requireth of them that are justified. There is no Grace, no Duty, for the substance of them, nor for the manner of their performance, that are required either by the Law or the Gospel, but they are obliged unto them. Where they are omitted, we acknowledge that the Guilt of sin is contracted, and that attended with such Aggravations, as some will not own or allow to be confessed unto God himself. Hence in particular the Faith and Grace of Believers, do constantly and deeply exercise themselves in Godly sorrow, Repentance, Humiliation for sin, and confession of it before God, upon their Apprehensions of its Guilt. And these Duties are so far necessary unto the continuation of our Justification, as that a justified Estate cannot consist with the Sins and Vices that are opposite unto them. So the Apostle affirms, that if we live after the flesh we shall

shall dye; Rom. 8. 13. He that doth not carefully avoid falling into the Fire or Water, or other things immediately destructive of life natural, cannot live. But these are not the things whereon life doth depend. Nor have the best of our Duties any other respect unto the continuation of our Justification, but only as in them we are *preserved* from those things which are contrary unto it, and destructive of it. But the sole Question is upon what the continuation of our Justification doth depend, not concerning what Duties are required of us, in the way of our Obedience. If this be that which is intended in this position, the continuation of our Justification depends on our own Obedience and Good Works, or that our own Obedience and Good Works are the Condition of the continuation of our Justification, namely, that God doth indispensably require Good Works and Obedience in all that are justified, so that a justified estate is inconsistent with the neglect of them; it is readily granted, and I shall never contend with any about the way whereby they chuse to express the conceptions of their minds. But if it be enquired what it is whereby we immediately concur in a way of Duty unto the continuation of our justified estate, that is, the pardon of our sins and acceptance with God, we say it is *faith* alone. For the *Just shall live by Faith*, Rom. 1. 17. And as the Apostle applies this Divine Testimony to prove our *first or absolute Justification* to be by Faith alone; So doth he also apply it unto the *continuation of our Justification*, as that which is by the same means only, Heb. 10. 38, 39. *Now the Just shall live by Faith: but if any man draw back, my Soul shall have no pleasure in him. But we are not of them that draw back unto perdition: But of them that believe, unto the saving of the Soul.* The drawing back to perdition includes the loss of a justified Estate really so or in Profession. In opposition thereunto the Apostle placeth *Believing unto the saving of the Soul*; that is, unto the continuation of Justification

stification unto the end. And herein it is, that the *Just live by Faith*, and the loss of this life can only be by unbelief. So the *life which we now live in the flesh, is by the Faith of the Son of God, who loved us and gave himself for us*, Gal. 2. 20. The life which we now lead in the flesh, is the continuation of our Justification, a life of Righteousness and Acceptation with God, in opposition unto a life by the works of the Law, as the next words declare, ver. 21. *I do not frustrate the Grace of God, for if Righteousness came by the Law, then is Christ dead in vain*; and this life is by Faith in Christ *as he loved us, and gave himself for us*, that is, as he was a Propitiation for our sins. This then is the only way, means, and cause on our part of the preservation of this life, of the continuance of our Justification; and herein are we kept *by the power of God through Faith unto Salvation*. Again; if the continuation of our Justification dependeth on our *own works of Obedience*, then is the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us only with respect unto our Justification at first, or our first Justification as some speak. And this indeed is the Doctrine of the *Roman School*. They teach that the Righteousness of Christ is so far imputed unto us, that on the account thereof God gives unto us *Justifying Grace*, and thereby the Remission of Sin in their sense, whence they allow it the meritorious cause of our Justification. But on a supposition thereof, or the reception of that Grace, we are continued to be justified before God by the works we perform by vertue of that Grace received. And though some of them rise so high as to affirm, that this *Grace and the works of it, need no farther respect unto the Righteousness of Christ, to deserve our second Justification and life eternal*; as doth *Vasquez* expressly, in 1. 2. q. 114. *Disp.* 222. *cap.* 3. Yet many of them affirm that it is still from the consideration of the *merit of Christ* that they are so meritorious. And the same, for the substance of it, is the Judgment of some of them, who affirm

the *continuation of our Justification* to depend on our own works, setting aside that ambiguous term of *merit*. For it is on the account of the Righteousness of Christ they say, that our own works, or imperfect obedience, is so accepted with God, as that the continuation of our Justification depends thereon. But the Apostle gives us another account hereof; *Rom. 5. 1, 2, 3.* For he distinguisheth three things; our *Access* into the Grace of God. (2) Our *standing* in that Grace. (3) Our *Glorying* in that station against all opposition. By the first he expresseth our *absolute Justification*. By the second our *continuation* in the state whereinto we are admitted thereby; and by the third, the *assurance* of that continuation, notwithstanding all the oppositions we meet withal: And all these he ascribeth equally unto *Faith*, without the intermixture of any other cause or condition. And other places express to the same purpose might be pleaded.

3. The *examples* of them that did believe and were justified which are recorded in the Scripture, do all bear witness unto the same Truth. The *continuation of the Justification of Abraham* before God, is declared to have been by Faith only; *Rom. 4. 3.* For the instance of his Justification given by the Apostle from *Gen. 15. 6.* was long after he was justified absolutely. And if our *first Justification* and the continuation of it, did not depend absolutely on the same cause, the instance of the one could not be produced for a proof, of the way and means of the other, as here they are. And *David* when a justified Believer, not only placeth the Blessedness of man in the *free Remission of sins*, in opposition unto his own works in general; *Rom. 4. 6, 7.* but in his own particular case, ascribeth the *continuation of his Justification* and acceptance before God, unto *Grace, Mercy, and forgiveness* alone, which are no otherwise received but by Faith. *Psal. 130. 3, 4, 5. Psal. 143. 2.* All other works and duties of obedience do accompany Faith in the *continuation of our*  
justi-

## Evangelical Personal Righteousness, &c. 211

*justified estate*, as necessary effects and fruits of it, but not as *causes, means, or conditions* whereon that effect is suspended. It is *patient waiting by Faith*, that brings in the full accomplishment of the Promises, *Heb. 6. 12, 16*. Wherefore there is but *one Justification*, and that of one kind only, wherein we are concerned in this Disputation. The Scripture makes mention of no more; and that is the Justification of an ungodly person by Faith. Nor shall we admit of the consideration of any other. For if there be a *second Justification*, it must be of the *same kind* with the first or of *another*; if it be of *the same kind*, then the same person is often justified with the same kind of Justification, or at least more than once; and so on just reason ought to be often Baptized; if it be *not of the same kind*, then the same person is justified before God with *two sorts* of Justification, of both which the Scripture is utterly silent. And the continuation of our Justification depends solely on the same causes with our Justification it self.

---

## CHAP. VI.

*Evangelical Personal Righteousness, the Nature and Use of it. Final Judgment, and its respect unto Justification.*

**T**He things which we have discoursed concerning the *first* and *second Justification*, and concerning the *continuation of Justification*, have no other Design, but only to clear the principal subject whereof we treat, from what doth not necessarily belong unto it. For until all things that are ei-

ther really *heterogeneous* or otherwise superfluous, are separated from it, we cannot understand aright the true state of the Question about the nature and causes of our Justification before God. For we intend *one only Justification*, namely, that whereby God at once freely by his Grace justifieth a convinced sinner through Faith in the Blood of Christ. Whatever else any will be pleased to call *Justification*, we are not concerned in it, nor are the Consciences of them that believe. To the same purpose we must therefore briefly also consider what is usually disputed about our own *personal Righteousness*, with a Justification thereon, as also what is called *sentential Justification* at the day of Judgment. And I shall treat no farther of them in this place, but only as it is necessary to free the principal subject under consideration, from being intermixed with them, as really it is not concerned in them. For what Influence our *own personal Righteousness* hath into our Justification before God, will be afterwards particularly examined. Here we shall only consider such a notion of it, as seems to enterfere with it, and disturb the right understanding of it. But yet I say concerning this also, that it rather belongs unto the Difference that will be among us in the *Expression* of our conceptions about spiritual things whilst we know but in part, than unto the substance of the Doctrine it self. And on such differences no breach of Charity can ensue, whilst there is a mutual Grant of that liberty of mind, without which it will not be preserved one moment.

It is therefore by some apprehended that there is an *Evangelical Justification*, upon our *Evangelical Personal Righteousness*. This they distinguish from that Justification which is by Faith through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, in the sense wherein they do allow it. For the Righteousness of Christ is our *Legal Righteousness*, whereby we have pardon of sin, and acquitment from the sentence of the

the

the Law, on the account of his satisfaction and merit. But moreover they say, that as there is a *Personal inherent Righteousness* required of us, so there is a *Justification* by the Gospel thereon. For by our Faith and the plea of it, we are justified from the charge of Unbelief; by our sincerity and the plea of it, we are justified from the charge of Hypocrisie; and so by all other Graces and Duties from the charge of the contrary sins in Commission or Omission, so far as such sins are inconsistent with the Terms of the Covenant of Grace. How this differeth from the second Justification before God, which some say we have by works on the supposition of the pardon of sin for the satisfaction of Christ, and the infusion of an habit of Grace enabling us to perform those Works, is declared by those who so express themselves.

Some add, that this inherent personal Evangelical Righteousness, is the condition on our part of our legal Righteousness, or of the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto our Justification, or the pardon of sin. And those by whom the satisfaction and merit of Christ are denied, make it the only and whole condition of our absolute Justification before God. So speak all the *Socinians* constantly. For they deny our Obedience unto Christ to be either the meritorious or efficient cause of our Justification; only they say it is the Condition of it, without which God hath decreed that we shall not be made partakers of the Benefit thereof. So doth *Socinus* himself, *De Justificat.* pag. 17. *Sunt opera nostra, id est, ut dictum fuit, Obedientia quam Christo præstamus, licet nec efficiens nec meritoria, tamen causa est (ut vocant) sine qua non, Justificationis coram Deo, atq; eternæ nostræ.* Again, pag. 14. *inter Opuscul. Ut cavendum est ne vitæ sanctitatem atq; innocentiam effectum Justificationis nostræ coram Deo esse credamus, neq; illam nostræ coram Deo Justificationis causam efficientem aut impulsivam esse affirmemus; sed tantum-*

*tantummodo causam sine qua eam Justificationem nobis non contingere decrevit Deus.* And in all their discourses to this purpose, they assert our personal Righteousness and Holiness, or our Obedience unto the commands of Christ, which they make to be the Form and Essence of Faith, to be the Condition whereon we obtain Justification or the Remission of sins. And indeed considering what their Opinion is concerning the person of Christ, with their denial of his satisfaction and merit, it is impossible they should frame any other *Idea* of Justification in their minds. But what some among our selves intend by a compliance with them herein, who are not necessitated thereunto by a prepossession with their Opinions about the Person and Mediation of Christ, I know not. For as for them, all their notions about Grace, Conversion to God, Justification, and the like Articles of our Religion, they are nothing but what they are necessarily cast upon by their *Hypothesis* about the Person of Christ.

At present I shall only enquire into that peculiar *Evangelical Justification* which is asserted to be the effect of our own *Personal Righteousness*, or to be granted us thereon. And hereunto we may observe,

1. That God doth require in and by the Gospel a sincere Obedience of all that do believe, to be performed in and by their own Persons, though through the Aids of Grace supplied unto them by Jesus Christ. He requireth indeed Obedience, Duties, and Works of Righteousness in and of all Persons whatever. But the consideration of them which are performed before believing, is excluded by all from any causality or interest in our Justification before God. At least whatever any may discourse of the necessity of such Works in a way of *preparation* unto believing (whereunto we have spoken before) none bring them into the verge of *Works Evangelical*, or Obedience of Faith, which would imply a contradiction. But that the Works enquired after are necessary

cessary unto all Believers, is granted by all; on what Grounds and unto what Ends, we shall enquire afterwards; they are declared, *Ephes. 2. 10.* *It is he who is a man of great*

2. It is likewise granted that Believers, from the performance of this Obedience, or these Works of Righteousness are denominated *Righteous* in the Scripture, and are personally and internally *Righteous*, Luke 1. 6. Joh. 3. 7. But yet this denomination is no where given unto them, with respect unto Grace *habitually* inherent, but unto the effects of it in Duties of Obedience, as in the places mentioned. *They were both Righteous before God, walking in all the Commandments and Ordinances of the Lord blameless.* The latter words give the Reason of the former, or their being esteemed Righteous before God. And he that doth *Righteousness* is *Righteous*; the denomination is from *doing*. And Bellarmine endeavouring to prove that it is *habitual* not *actual* Righteousness, which is as he speaks, the *formal cause of our Justification* before God, could not produce one Testimony of Scripture wherein any One is denominated Righteous from habitual Righteousness. *De Justificat. lib. 2. cap. 15.* but is forced to attempt the proof of it with this absurd Argument, namely, that we are justified by the Sacraments, which do not work in us *Actual* but *Habitual* Righteousness. And this is sufficient to discover the insufficiency of a Pretence for any Interest of our own Righteousness from this Denomination of being Righteous thereby, seeing it hath not respect unto that which is the principal part thereof.

3. This *Inherent Righteousness*, taking it for that which is habitual and actual, is the same with our *Sanctification*; neither is there any difference between them, only they are divers names of the same thing. For our *Sanctification* is the inherent *Renovation* of our Natures, exerting and acting itself in newness of Life, or Obedience unto God in Christ, and works of Righteousness. But Sanctification and Justification:

cation are in the Scripture perpetually distinguished, whatever respect of *causality* the one of them may have unto the other. And those who do confound them, as the Papists do, do not so much dispute about the *Nature of Justification*, as endeavour to prove that indeed there is no such thing as Justification at all. For that which would serve most to enforce it, namely, the pardon of sin, they place in the exclusion and extinction of it, by the Infusion of inherent Grace, which doth not belong unto Justification.

4. By this *inherent Personal Righteousness*, we may be said several ways to be justified. As (1) In our own Consciences, in as much as it is an Evidence in us and unto us, of our Participation of the Grace of God in Christ Jesus, and of our Acceptance with him, which hath no small Influence into our Peace. So speaks the Apostle; *Our rejoicing is this, the Testimony of our Conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly Wisdom, but by the Grace of God, we have had our Conversation in the World,* 2 Cor. 1. 12. who yet disclaims any confidence therein as unto his Justification before God. For saith he, *although I know nothing by my self, yet am I not thereby justified,* 1 Cor. 4. 4. (2) Hereby may we be said to be *justified before men*; that is, acquitted of evils laid unto our charge, and approved as righteous and unblameable. For the state of things is so in the World, as that the Professors of the Gospel ever were and ever will be, evil spoken of as evil doers. The Rule given them to acquit themselves, so as that at length they may be acquitted and justified by all that are not absolutely blinded and hardened in wickedness, is that of an holy and fruitful walking in abounding in good works, 1 Pet. 2. 12. chap. 3. 16. And so is it with respect unto the Church, that we be not judged dead, barren Professors, but such as have been made partakers of the like precious Faith with others. Shew me thy Faith by thy Works, *Jam. 2.* Wherefore (3) This Righteousness

ousness is pleadable unto our Justification against all the charges of Satan, who is the great Accuser of the Brethren, of all that believe. Whether he manage his charge privately in our *Consciences*, which is as it were before God, as he charged *Job*, or by his instruments in all manner of reproaches and calumnies, whereof some in this Age have had experience in an eminent manner, this Righteousness is pleadable unto our Justification.

On a supposition of these things, wherein our *personal Righteousness* is allowed its proper place and use (as shall afterwards be more fully declared) I do not understand that there is an *Evangelical Justification* whereby Believers are by and on the account of this personal inherent Righteousness justified in the sight of God; nor doth the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto our absolute Justification before him depend thereon. For,

I. None have this *personal Righteousness* but they are *antedecently* justified in the sight of God. It is wholly the Obedience of Faith, proceeding from true and saving Faith in God by Jesus Christ. For as it was said before, *Works before Faith*, are as by general consent excluded from any Interest in our Justification, and we have proved that they are neither *Conditions* of it, *Dispositions* unto it, nor *Preparations* for it, properly so called. But every true Believer is immediately justified on his Believing. Nor is there any moment of time wherein a man is a true Believer, according as Faith is required in the Gospel, and yet not be justified. For as he is thereby *united unto Christ*, which is the foundation of our Justification by him, so the whole Scripture testifieth, that he that believes is justified; or that there is an infallible connexion in the Ordination of God between true Faith and Justification. Wherefore this *personal Righteousness* cannot be the condition of our Justification before God, seeing it is *consequential* thereunto. What may be pleaded in exception

hereunto from the supposition of a *second Justification*, or differing causes of the beginning and *continuation of Justification*, hath been already disproved.

2. *Justification before God* is a freedom and absolution from a *Charge before God*, at least it is contained therein. And the Instrument of this charge must either be the *Law* or the *Gospel*. But neither the *Law* nor the *Gospel*, do before God, or in the sight of God, charge true Believers with Unbelief, Hypocrisie, or the like. For *who shall lay any thing unto the charge of Gods Elect*, who are once justified before him? Such a charge may be laid against them by Sathan, by the Church sometimes on mistake, by the World, as it was in the case of *Job*, against which this Righteousness is pleadable. But what is charged immediately before God, is charged by God himself, either by the *Law* or the *Gospel*; and the Judgment of God is according unto Truth. If this charge be by the *Law*, by the *Law* we must be justified. But the plea of *sincere Obedience* will not justify us by the *Law*. That admits of none in satisfaction unto its demands, but that which is compleat and perfect. And where the *Gospel* lays any thing unto the charge of any Persons before God, there can be no Justification before God, unless we shall allow the *Gospel* to be the Instrument of a *false Charge*. For what should justify him whom the *Gospel* condemns? And if it be a Justification by the *Gospel* from the charge of the *Law*, it renders the death of Christ of no effect. And a Justification without a Charge, is not to be supposed.

3. Such a Justification as that pretended, is altogether *needless* and *useless*. This may easily be evinced from what the Scripture asserts unto our Justification in the sight of God by Faith in the Blood of Christ. But this hath been spoken to before on another occasion. Let that be considered, and it will quickly appear, that there is no place nor use for this new Justification upon our personal Righteousness, whether

it be supposed *antecedent* and *subordinate* thereunto, or *consequential* and *perfective* thereof.

4. This pretended *Evangelical Justification* hath not the Nature of any Justification that is mentioned in the Scripture; that is, neither that by the Law, nor that provided in the Gospel. Justification by the Law is this; *The man that doth the Works of it shall live in them.* This it doth not pretend unto. And as unto *Evangelical Justification*, it is every way contrary unto it. For therein the *Charge* against the person to be justified is true; namely, that he hath sinned, and is come short of the Glory of God. In this it is *false*, namely, that a Believer is an Unbeliever; A sincere Person an Hypocrite, one *fruitful in good Works*, altogether barren. And this false charge is supposed to be exhibited in the name of God, and before him. Our Acquittal in true *Evangelical Justification* is by *Absolution* or pardon of sin; here by a *Vindication of our own Righteousness*. There the plea of the person to be justified is, *Guilty*, all the World is become guilty before God; but here the plea of the person on his Trial is *not Guilty*, whereon the proofs and evidences of Innocency and Righteousness do ensue; But this is a Plea which the Law will not admit, and which the Gospel disclaims.

5. If we are justified before God on our own personal Righteousness, and pronounced Righteous by him on the account thereof, then *God enters into Judgment with us* on something in our selves, and acquits us thereon. For Justification is a *juridical Act* in and of that Judgment of God which is according unto Truth. But that God should *enter into Judgment* with us, and justify us with respect unto what he judgeth on, or our personal Righteousness, the *Psalmist* doth not believe, *Psal.* 130. 2, 3. *Psal.* 143. 2. nor did the *Publican*, *Luke* 18.

6. This personal Righteousness of ours cannot be said to

be a *subordinate Righteousness*, and subservient unto our Justification by Faith in the Blood of Christ. For therein God justifieth the *ungodly*, and imputeth Righteousness unto him that *worketh* not. And besides it is expressly excluded from any consideration in our Justification, *Ephes.* 2. 7, 8.

7. This *Personal inkerent Righteousness* wherewith we are said to be justified with this *Evangelical Justification*, is our *own Righteousness*. Personal Righteousness and our own Righteousness, are expressions equivalent. But our own Righteousness is not the material cause of any Justification before God. For ( 1 ) It is *unmeet* so to be. *Isa.* 54. 6. ( 2 ) It is directly *opposed* unto that Righteousness whereby we are justified, as inconsistent with it unto that end, *Phil.* 3. 9. *Rom.* 10. 3, 4.

It will be said that our *own Righteousness* is the *Righteousness of the Law*; but this Personal Righteousness is *Evangelical*. But ( 1 ) It will be hard to prove, that our Personal Righteousness is any other but our own Righteousness; and our *own Righteousness* is expressly rejected from any Interest in our Justification, in the places quoted. ( 2 ) That Righteousness which is *Evangelical* in respect of its efficient cause, its motives and some especial Ends, is *legal* in respect of the formal Reason of it, and our Obligation unto it. For there is no Instance of Duty belonging unto it, but in general we are obliged unto its performance by virtue of the first Commandment, to *take the Lord for our God*. Acknowledging therein his essential verity and sovereign Authority; we are obliged to *believe* all that he shall reveal, and to *obey* in all that he shall command. ( 3 ) The *Good Works* rejected from any Interest in our Justification, are those whereunto we are *created in Christ Jesus*, *Ephes.* 2. 8, 9. the *Works of Righteousness which we have done*, *Tit.* 3. 5. wherein the *Gentiles* are concerned, who never sought for Righteousness by the Works of the Law, *Rom.* 9. 30. But it will yet be said that these

these things are evident in themselves. God doth require an *Evangelical Righteousness* in all that do believe. This *Christ is not*, nor is it the Righteousness of Christ. He may be said to be our *legal Righteousness*, but our *Evangelical Righteousness* he is not. And so far as we are Righteous with any Righteousness, so far we are justified by it. For according unto this *Evangelical Righteousness*, we must be tried; if we have it we shall be acquitted, and if we have it not, we shall be condemned. There is therefore a Justification according unto it.

I answer. (1) According to some Authors or Maintainers of this Opinion, I see not but that the Lord Christ is as much our *Evangelical Righteousness* as he is our *Legal*. For our *Legal Righteousness* he is not in their Judgment, by a proper *Imputation* of his Righteousness unto us, but by the *Communication of the fruits* of what he did and suffered unto us. And so he is our *Evangelical Righteousness* also. For our Sanctification is an effect or fruit of what he did and suffered for us. *Eph. 5. 25, 26. Tit. 2. 14.*

2. None have this *Evangelical Righteousness*, but those who are in order of nature at least, justified before they actually have it. For it is that which is required of all that do believe, and are justified thereon. And we need not much enquire how a man is justified, after he is justified.

3. God hath not appointed this *Personal Righteousness* in order unto our Justification before him in this life, though he have appointed it, to evidence our Justification before others, and even *in his sight*, as shall be declared. He accepts of it, approves of it, upon the account of the free Justification of the person, in and by whom it is wrought. So he had *respect unto Abel and his Offering*. But we are not acquitted by it from any real charge in the sight of God; nor do receive Remission of sins on the account of it. And those who place the whole of Justification in the *Remission of sins*, making  
this

this personal Righteousness the *condition* of it, as the *Socinians* do, leave not any place for the Righteousness of Christ in our Justification.

4. If we are in any sense justified hereby in the sight of God, we have whereof to *boast* before him. We may not have so *absolutely* and with respect unto *merit*, yet we have so *comparatively*, and in respect of others, who cannot make the same plea for their Justification. But all *boasting* is excluded. And it will not relieve to say, that this personal Righteousness, is of the free Grace and Gift of God unto some, and not unto others; for we must plead it as *our Duty*, and not as *Gods Grace*.

5. Suppose a person freely Justified by the Grace of God through Faith in the Blood of Christ, without respect unto any Works, Obedience, or Righteousness of his own: we do freely grant; ( 1 ) That God doth *indispensably require personal Obedience of him*, which may be called his Evangelical Righteousness; ( 2 ) That God doth *approve of*, and accept in Christ this Righteousness so performed; ( 3 ) That hereby that Faith whereby we are justified is *evidenced*, proved, manifested, in the sight of God and men. ( 4 ) That this Righteousness is pleadable unto an acquitment against any charge from *Satan*, the *World*, or our own Consciences; ( 5 ) That upon it, we shall be *declared Righteous* at the last day, and without it none shall so be. And if any shall think meet from hence to conclude unto an *Evangelical Justification*, or call Gods acceptance of our Righteousness by that name, I shall by no means contend with them. And wherever this enquiry is made, not how a *sinner guilty of death* and obnoxious unto the Curse, shall be pardoned, acquitted and justified, which is by the Righteousness of Christ alone imputed unto him; but how a man that *professeth Evangelical Faith*, or Faith in Christ, shall be tried, judged, and whereon

as such he shall be justified, we grant that it is and must be by his own personal sincere Obedience.

And these things are spoken, not with a design to contend with any, or to oppose the opinions of any; but only to remove from the *principal question* in hand, those things which do not belong unto it.

A very few words will also free our enquiry from any concernment, in that which is called *sentential Justification*, at the day of Judgment. For of what nature soever it be, the person concerning whom that sentence is pronounced, was ( 1 ) *actually and compleatly* justified before God in this World; ( 2 ) *made partaker* of all the Benefits of that Justification, even unto a blessed Resurrection in Glory; ( *it is raised in Glory*; 1 Cor. 15. ) ( 3 ) The Souls of the most will long before have enjoyed a *blessed Rest* with God, absolutely discharged and acquitted from all their labours, and all their sins; There remains nothing but an *actual Admission* of the whole person into eternal Glory. Wherefore this Judgment can be no more but declaratory unto the glory of God, and the everlasting Refreshment of them that have believed. And without reducing of it unto a *new Justification*, as it is no where called in the Scripture; the ends of that solemn Judgment, in the manifestation of the Wisdom and Righteousness of God, in appointing the way of Salvation by Christ, as well as in giving of the Law; the publick conviction of them, by whom the Law hath been transgressed and the Gospel despised; the vindication of the Righteousness, power and wisdom of God in the rule of the World by his providence, wherein for the most part, his paths unto all in this life *are in the deep, and his footsteps are not known*; the Glory and Honour of Jesus Christ, triumphing over all his Enemies, then fully made *his footstool*; and the glorious exaltation of Grace in all that do Believe, with sundry other things of an alike tendency unto the ultimate manifestation

of Divine Glory in the Creation and Guidance of all things, are sufficiently manifest.

And hence it appears, how little force there is in that Argument which some pretend to be of so great weight in this cause. *As every one ( they say ) shall be judged of God at the last day, in the same way and manner, or on the same Grounds is he justified of God in this life. But by Works and not by Faith alone, every one shall be judged at the last day; Wherefore by Works and not by Faith alone every one is justified before God in this life. For*

1. It is no where said that we shall be judged at the last day, *ex operibus* ; but, only that God will render unto men *secundum opera*. But God doth not justify any in this life *secundum opera* ; Being justified freely by his Grace, And, not according to the Works of Righteousness which we have done. And we are every where said to be justified in this life, *ex fide, per fidem*, but no where *propter fidem* ; or that God justifieth us *secundum fidem* ; by Faith ; but not *for our Faith*, nor according unto our Faith. And we are not to depart from the expressions of the Scripture where such a difference is constantly observed.

2. It is somewhat strange that a man should be judged at the last day, and justified in this life, *just in the same way and manner*, that is with respect unto Faith and Works, when the Scripture doth constantly ascribe our Justification before God unto Faith without Works ; and the Judgment at the last day is said to be according unto Works, without any mention of Faith.

3. If *Justification* and *eternal Judgment* proceed absolute on the same Grounds, Reasons, and Causes, then if men had not done what they shall be condemned for doing at the last day, they should have been justified in this life. But many shall be condemned only for sins against the light of nature, *Rom. 2. 12.* as never having the written Law or Gospel made

made known unto them. Wherefore unto such persons, to abstain from sins against the light of nature, would be sufficient unto their Justification, without any knowledge of Christ or the Gospel.

4. This Proposition, *that God pardons men their Sins, gives them the Adoption of Children with a right unto the Heavenly Inheritance according to their Works*; is not only foreign to the Gospel, but contradictory unto it, and destructive of it, as contrary unto all express Testimonies of the Scripture both in the old Testament and the new, where these things are spoken of. But that God judgeth all men, and rendereth unto all men at the last Judgment *according unto their Works*, is true and affirmed in the Scripture.

5. In our Justification in this life by Faith, Christ is considered as our *Propitiation* and Advocate, as he who hath made Atonement for sin, and brought in everlasting Righteousness. But at the last day, and in the last Judgment he is considered only as the *Judge*.

6. The end of God in our Justification is the *Glory of his Grace*; Eph. 1. 6. But the end of God in the last Judgment is the *Glory of his remunerative Righteousness*, 2 Tim. 4. 8.

7. The *Representation* that is made of the final Judgment, *Math. 7. and Chap. 25.* is only of the *visible Church*. And therein the plea of Faith as to the profession of it is common unto all, and is equally made by all. Upon that plea of Faith, it is put unto the trial whether it were sincere true Faith or no, or only that which was dead and barren. And this trial is made solely by the fruits and effects of it, and otherwise in the publick declaration of things unto all, it cannot be made. Otherwise the Faith whereby we are justified *comes not into Judgment* at the last day. See *Joh. 5. 24.* with *Mark. 16. 16.*

## CHAP. VII.

*Imputation, and the Nature of it; with the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ in particular.*

**T**He first express Record of the Justification of any sinner is of *Abraham*. Others were justified before him from the Beginning, and there is that affirmed of them, which sufficiently evidenceth them so to have been. But this *Prerogative* was reserved for the *Father of the Faithful*, that his Justification and the express way and manner of it, should be first entered on the Sacred Record. So it is Gen. 15. 6. *He believed in the Lord, and it was counted unto him for Righteousness.* יהושכח It was accounted unto him, or imputed unto him for Righteousness. *λογισθη*. It was counted, reckoned, imputed. And it was *not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed unto him, but for us also unto whom it shall be imputed if we believe*, Rom. 4. 23, 24. Wherefore the first express Declaration of the nature of Justification in the Scripture, affirms it to be by *Imputation*; The Imputation of somewhat unto Righteousness. And this done in that place and instance, which is Recorded on purpose, as the president and example of all those that shall be justified. As he was justified so are we, and no otherwise.

Under the new Testament there was a necessity of a more full and clear Declaration of the Doctrine of it. For it is among the first and most principal parts of that Heavenly mystery of Truth which was to be *brought to light by the Gospel*. And besides there was from the first a strong and  
Dange-

*Dangerous Opposition* made unto it. For this matter of Justification, the Doctrine of it, and what necessarily belongs thereunto, was that whereon the *Jewish Church* broke off from God, refused Christ and the Gospel, perishing in their sins; as is expressly declared, *Rom. 9. 31, 10. 3, 4.* And in like manner a dislike of it, an Opposition unto it, ever was and ever will be a principle and cause of the Apostasie of any professing Church, from Christ and the Gospel, that falls under the power and deceit of them; as it fell out afterwards in the Churches of the *Galatians*. But in this state the Doctrine of Justification was fully declared, stated, and vindicated by the *Apostle Paul* in a peculiar manner. And he doth it especially by affirming and proving that we have the Righteousness whereby and wherewith we are justified by *Imputation*; or that our Justification consists in the *non-Imputation* of sin, and the *Imputation of Righteousness*.

But yet, although the *first Recorded instance* of Justification, and which was so recorded, that it might be an example and represent the Justification of all that should be justified unto the end of the World, is expressed by *Imputation, and Righteousness imputed*, and the Doctrine of it in that great case, wherein the eternal welfare of the Church of the *Jews*, or their ruine was concerned, is so expressed by the Apostle; yet is it so fallen out in our days that nothing in Religion is more maligned, more reproached, more despised, then the *Imputation of Righteousness* unto us, or an Imputed Righteousness. A *putative Righteousness, the shadow of a dream, a fancy, a mummer, an imagination*, say some among us. An opinion, *sæda, execranda, pernitiōsa, detestanda*, saith *Socinus*. And opposition ariseth unto it every day from great variety of principles. For those by whom it is opposed and rejected can by no means agree what to set up in the place of it.

However, the weight and importance of this Doctrine is on all hands acknowledged, whether it be *true or false*. It is

not a dispute about Notions, Terms, and Speculations, where-  
 in Christian Practice is little or not at all concerned, ( of  
 which nature many are needlessly contended about ) but  
 such as hath an immediate influence into our whole *present*  
*Duty*, with our *eternal Welfare* or *Ruine*. Those by whom  
 this *Imputation of Righteousness* is rejected, do affirm that the  
 Faith and Doctrine of it, do overthrow the necessity of  
 Gospel Obedience, of personal Righteousness, and good  
 Works, bringing in *Antinomianism*; and *Libertinism* in life.  
 Hereon it must of necessity be destructive of Salvation, in  
 those who believe it, and conform their Practice thereunto.  
 And those on the other hand by whom it is believed, seeing  
 they judge it impossible that any man should be justified be-  
 fore God any other way, but by the *Imputation of the Righte-  
 ousness of Christ*, do accordingly judge, that without it none  
 can be saved. Hence a Learned man of late concludes his  
 Discourse concerning it; *Hactenus de Imputatione Justitiæ*  
*Christi, sine qua nemo unquam aut salvatus est, aut salvari*  
*queat. Justificat. Paulin. cap. 8.* Thus far of the *Imputation of*  
*the Righteousness of Christ, without which no man was ever*  
*saved, nor can any so be.* They do not think nor judge, that  
 all those are excluded from salvation, who cannot apprehend,  
 or to deny the *Doctrine* of the *Imputation of the*  
*Righteousness of Christ*, as by them declared. But they  
 judge that they are so, unto whom that *Righteousness is not*  
*really imputed*; nor can they do otherwise, whilst they make  
 it the foundation of all their own Acceptation with God  
 and eternal salvation. These things greatly differ. To be-  
 lieve the *Doctrine* of it, or not to believe it, as thus or thus  
 explained, is one thing; and to enjoy the *thing*, or not enjoy  
 it, is another. I no way doubt, but that many men do re-  
 ceive more Grace from God, than they understand or will  
 own; and have a greater efficacy of it in them, than they  
 will believe. Men may be really saved, by that Grace which  
 Doctrinally

Doctrinally they do deny; and they may be justified by the *Imputation of that Righteousness* which in opinion they deny to be imputed. For the Faith of it, is included in that *general Assent* which they give unto the truth of the Gospel, and such an *Adherence unto Christ* may ensue thereon, as that their mistake of the way whereby they are saved by him, shall not defraud them of a real Interest therein. And for my part, I must say, that notwithstanding all the disputes that I see and read about Justification ( some whereof are full of offence and scandal ) I do not believe but that the Authors of them, ( if they be not *Socinians* throughout, denying the whole merit and satisfaction of Christ ) do really trust unto the mediation of Christ for the pardon of their Sins, and Acceptance with God, and not unto their own Works or Obedience. Nor will I believe the contrary, until they expressly declare it. Of the Objection on the other hand, concerning the danger of the Doctrine of the *Imputation of the Righteousness* of Christ, in reference unto the necessity of Holiness, and works of Righteousness, we must treat afterwards.

The Judgment of the *Reformed Churches* herein is known unto all, and must be confessed, unless we intend by *vain cavils* to encrease and perpetuate contentions. Especially the *Church of England* is in her Doctrine express as unto the *Imputation of the Righteousness* of Christ, both *active* and *passive* as it is usually distinguished. This hath been of late so fully manifested out of her Authentick Writings, that is, the *Articles of Religion*, and *Books of Homilies*, and other Writings publickly authorized, that it is altogether needless to give any farther Demonstration of it. Those who pretend themselves to be otherwise minded, are such as I will not contend withall. For to what purpose is it to dispute with men who will deny the *Sun to shine*, when they cannot bear the heat of its beams. Wherefore in what I have to offer on this subject, I shall not in the least depart from the *ancient Doctrine*

of the Church of England; yea I have no design but to declare and vindicate it, as God shall enable.

There are indeed sundry differences among Persons Learned, Sober, and *Orthodox* (if that term displease not) in the way and manner of the Explication of the Doctrine of Justification by the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, who yet all of them agree in the substance of it, in all those things wherein the Grace of God, the Honour of Christ, and the Peace of the Souls of men are principally concerned. As far as it is possible for me, I shall avoid the concerning of my self at present, in these Differences. For unto what purpose is it to contend about them, whilst the *substance of the Doctrine* it self is openly opposed and rejected? why should we debate about the order and beautifying of the Rooms in an House, whilst Fire is set unto the whole? when that is well quenched, we may return to the consideration of the best means for the disposal and use of the several parts of it.

There are *two grand Parties* by whom the Doctrine of Justification by the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ* is opposed, namely, the *Papists* and the *Socinians*. But they proceed on different principles, and unto different Ends. The design of the *one* is to exalt their *own Merits*, of the other to destroy the *merit of Christ*. But besides these who trade in company, we have many *Interlopers*, who coming in on their hand, do make bold to borrow from both, as they see occasion. We shall have to do with them all in our progress; not with the Persons of any, nor the way and manner of their expressing themselves, but the Opinions of all of them so far as they are opposite unto the Truth. For it is that which *wise men* despise and *good men* bewail, to see persons pretending unto Religion and Piety, to cavil at Expressions, to contend about Words, to endeavour the fastening of Opinions on men which they own not, and thereon mutually

tually to revile one another, publishing all to the World, as some great atchievement or victory. This is not the way to teach the truths of the Gospel, nor to promote the Edification of the Church. But in general, the Importance of the cause to be pleaded, the Greatness of the opposition that is made unto the Truth, and the High concernment of the Souls of Believers, to be rightly instructed in it, do call for a renewed Declaration and Vindication of it. And what I shall attempt unto this purpose, I do it under this persuasion, that the life and continuance of any Church on the one hand, and its Apostasie or Ruine on the other, do depend in an eminent manner on the Preservation or Rejection of the Truth in this Article of Religion; (and I shall add) as it hath been professed, received, and believed in the *Church of England* in former days.

The first thing we are to consider is the meaning of these words to *Impute* and *Imputation*. For from a meer plain Declaration hereof, it will appear that sundry things charged on a supposition of the *Imputation* we plead for, are vain and groundless, or the Charge it self is so.

חשב The word first used to this purpose, signifies to *think*, to *esteem*, to *judge*, or to *refer* a thing or matter unto any; to *impute*, or to be *imputed* for Good or Evil. See *Levit. 7. 18. chap. 17. 4.* And *Psal. 106. 31.* וְחָשַׁב לוֹ לְצַדִּיקָהּ and it was counted, reckoned, imputed unto him for Righteousness. To judge or esteem this or that Good or Evil, to belong unto him, to be his. The Lxx. express it by λογίζω and λογίζομαι; as do the Writers of the New Testament also. And these are rendered by *reputare, imputare, acceptum ferre, tribuere, assignare, ascribere*. But there is a different signification among these words; In particular, to be *reputed Righteous*, and to have *Righteousness imputed*, differ, as cause and effect. For that any may be *reputed Righteous*, that is, be judged or esteemed so to be, there must be a real foundation of that *Reputa-*

*tion*, or it is a mistake, and not a right Judgment; as a man may be reputed to be wise, who is a fool, or reputed to be rich; who is a beggar. Wherefore he that is *reputed Righteous*, must either have a Righteousness of his own, or another antecedently *imputed* unto him, as the foundation of that Reputation. Wherefore to *impute Righteousness* unto one that hath none of his own, is not to *repute* him to be Righteous, who is indeed Unrighteous, but it is to communicate a Righteousness unto him, that he may rightly and justly be esteemed, judged, or reputed Righteous.

*Imputare*, is a word that the *Latine Tongue* owns in the sense wherein it is used by Divines. *Optime de pessimis meruisti, ad quos pervenerit incorrupta rerum fides, magno Authori suo imputata. Senec. ad Mart. And Plin. lib. 18. cap. 1.* In his Apology for the Earth our common Parent, *nostris eam criminibus urgemus, culpamq; nostram illi imputamus.*

In their sense, to *impute* any thing unto another, is if it be evil, to *charge* it on him, to burden him with it; so saith *Pliny*, we *impute our own faults to the Earth*, or charge them upon it. If it be *Good*, it is to ascribe it unto him as his own, whether originally it were so or no; *magno Authori imputata. Vasquez, in Thom. 22. Tom. 2. Diss. 132.* attempts the sense of the word, but confounds it with *reputare*. *Imputare aut reputare quidquam alicui, est idem atq; inter ea que sunt ipsius, & ad eum pertinent, connumerare & recensere.* This is *reputare* properly, *imputare* includes an Act antecedent unto this *accounting* or esteeming a thing to belong unto any Person.

But whereas that may be *imputed* unto us which is really *our own antecedently unto that Imputation*, the word must needs have a double sense, as it hath in the Instances given out of *Latine Authors* now mentioned. And,

1. To *Impute* unto us that which was really ours, *antecedently unto that Imputation*, includes two things in it. (1) An Acknow-

Acknowledgment or Judgment, that the thing so *imputed* is really and truly ours, or *in us*. He that Imputes Wisdom or Learning unto any man, doth in the first place acknowledge him to be *Wise* or *Learned*. (2) A dealing with them according unto it, whether it be *Good* or *Evil*. So when upon a Trial a man is acquitted because he is found Righteous; first he is judged and esteemed Righteous, and then dealt with as a Righteous Person; his Righteousness is imputed unto him. See this exemplified, *Gen. 30. 33.*

2. To Impute unto us that which is *not our own antecedently unto that Imputation*, includes also in it two things. (1) A *Grant or Donation* of the thing it self unto us to be ours, on some just Ground and Foundation. For a thing must be made *ours*, before we can justly be dealt withall according unto what is required on the Account of it. (2) A *Will of dealing with us*, or an actual dealing with us according unto that which is so made ours. For in this matter whereof we treat, the most Holy and Righteous God doth not *justifie any*, that is, absolve them from sin, pronounce them Righteous, and thereon grant unto them Right and Title unto Eternal Life, but upon the interveniency of a true and compleat Righteousness, truly and compleatly made the Righteousness of them that are to be justified, in order of nature antecedently unto their Justification. But these things will be yet made more clear by Instances, and it is necessary they should be so.

1. There is an *Imputation* unto us of that which is really our own, inherent in us, performed by us, *antecedently* unto that Imputation, and this whether it be Evil or Good. The Rule and Nature hereof is given and expressed, *Ezek. 18. 20. The Righteousness of the Righteous shall be upon him, the Wickedness of the Wicked shall be upon him.* Instances we have of both sorts: (1) In the Imputation of sin, when the Person guilty of it, is so judged and reckoned a sinner, as to be dealt withall accordingly. This Imputation *Shimei* deprecate

234 *Imputation, and the Nature of it.*

ted, 2 Sam. 19. 19. He said unto the King, *Let not my Lord impute Iniquity unto me,* (אל-והשב אדני לי אדני עון the word used in the expression of the Imputation of Righteousness. Gen. 15. 6.) *neither do thou remember what thy Servant did perversely; For thy Servant doth know that I have sinned.* He was Guilty, and acknowledged his Guilt, but deprecates the *Imputation* of it, in such a sentence concerning him, as his sin deserved. So *Stephen* deprecates the Imputation of sin unto them that stoned him, whereof they were really guilty, Act. 7. 60. *Lay not this sin to their charge; impute it not unto them.* As on the other side *Zechariah* the Son of *Jehojada*, who died in the same cause, and the same kind of death with *Stephen*, prayed that the sin of those which slew him might be charged on them, 2 Chron. 24. 22. Wherefore to *impute* sin, is to lay it unto the charge of any, and to deal with them according unto its desert.

To impute that which is *Good* unto any, is to judge and acknowledge it so to be theirs, and thereon to deal with them in whom it is, according unto its respect unto the Law of God. The *Righteousness of the Righteous shall be upon him.* So *Jacob* provided that his *Righteousness* should answer for him, Gen. 30. 33. And we have an Instance of it in Gods dealing with men, Psal. 106. 31. *Then stood up Phineas and executed Judgment, and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness.* Notwithstanding it seemed that he had not sufficient warrant for what he did, yet God that knew his heart, and what Guidance of his own spirit he was under, approved his fact as *Righteous*, and gave him a Reward testifying that Approbation.

Concerning this Imputation it must be observed, that whatever is *our own antecedently* thereunto, which is an Act of God thereon, can never be imputed unto us for any thing more or less than what it is really in-it self. For this Imputation consists of two parts, or two things concur thereunto. (1) A *Judgment* of the thing to be ours, to be in us, or to belong

belong unto us. (2) A *Will* of dealing with us, or an *actual dealing* with us according unto it. Wherefore in the Imputation of any thing unto us, which is ours, God esteemeth it not to be other than it is. He doth not esteem that to be a *perfect Righteousness* which is imperfect; so to do might argue either a mistake of the thing judged on, or perverseness in the Judgment it self upon it. Wherefore if, as some say, our *own Faith and Obedience* are imputed unto us for Righteousness, seeing they are *imperfect* they must be imputed unto us for an *imperfect Righteousness*, and not for that which is perfect. For that Judgment of God which is according unto Truth, is in this Imputation. And the Imputation of an *imperfect Righteousness* unto us, esteeming it only as *such*, will stand us in little stead in this matter. And the *Acceptilation* which some plead, ( traducing a fiction in humane Laws, to interpret the mystery of the Gospel ) doth not only overthrow *all Imputation*, but the satisfaction and merit of Christ also. And it must be observed, that this Imputation is a meer *Act of Justice*, without any *mixture of Grace*, as the Apostle declares, *Rom. II. 6*. For it consists of these two parts. (1) An acknowledging and judging that to be in us which is truly so. (2) A *Will* of dealing with us according unto it; both which are *Acts of Justice*.

The Imputation unto us of that which is *not our own, antecedently unto that Imputation*, at least not in the same manner as it is afterwards, is various also, as unto the Grounds and Causes that it proceeds upon. Only it must be observed, that no *Imputation* of this kind, is to account them, unto whom any thing is imputed, to have *done the things themselves* which are imputed unto them. That were not to *impute* but to *err* in Judgment, and indeed utterly to overthrow the whole nature of Gracious Imputation. But it is to *make that to be ours* by Imputation, which was not ours before, unto all ends and purposes whereunto it would have served, if

it had been our own, without any such Imputation.

It is therefore a manifest *mistake* of their own which some make the Ground of a Charge on the Doctrine of Imputation. For they say, if our sins were *imputed unto Christ*, then must he be *esteemed to have done what we have done amiss, and so be the greatest sinner that ever was*; and on the other side, if his Righteousness be imputed unto us, then are we *esteemed to have done what he did, and so to stand in no need of the pardon of sin*. But this is contrary unto the nature of Imputation, which proceeds on no such Judgment, but on the contrary, that we our selves have done nothing of what is imputed unto us; nor Christ any thing of what was imputed unto him.

To declare more distinctly the nature of this *Imputation*, I shall consider the *several kinds* of it, or rather the *several grounds* whence it proceeds. For this Imputation unto us, of what is not *our own antecedent unto that Imputation*, may be either, (1) *Ex justitia*, or (2) *Ex voluntaria sponsione*, or (3) *Ex injuria*, or (4) *Ex gratia*; all which shall be exemplified. I do not place them thus distinctly, as if they might not some of them concur in the same *Imputation*, which I shall manifest that they do. But I shall refer the several kinds of Imputation, unto that which is the next cause of every one.

I. Things that are not our own originally, personally, inherently, may yet be *imputed unto us ex justitia*, by the Rule of Righteousness. And this may be done upon a double *Relation* unto those whose they are; (1) *Fæderal*, (2) *Natural*. (1) Things done by one may be imputed unto others, *propter relationem fæderalem*, because of a Covenant Relation between them. So the *sin of Adam* was, and is imputed unto all his Posterity, as we shall afterwards more fully declare. And the Ground hereof is, that we stood all in the same Covenant with him, who was our Head and Representative therein.

therein. The corruption and *Depravation* of nature which we derive from *Adam* is imputed unto us, with the *first kind of Imputation*, namely, of that which is ours antecedently unto that Imputation. But his *actual sin* is imputed unto us, as that which becomes ours by that Imputation, which before it was not. Hence saith *Bellarmino* himself; *Peccatum Adami ita posteris omnibus imputatur, ac si omnes idem peccatum patravissent. De Amiff. Grat. lib. 4. cap. 10.* The *sin* of *Adam* is so imputed unto all his *Posterity*, as if they had all committed the same *sin*. And he gives us herein the true nature of Imputation, which he fiercely disputes against in his *Books of Justification*. For the Imputation of that *sin* unto us, as if we had committed it, which he acknowledgeth, includes both a *Transcription* of that *sin* unto us, and a dealing with us, as if we had committed it; which is the *Doctrine* of the *Apostle Rom. 5.*

2. There is an Imputation of *sin* unto others, *ex justitia propter Relationem naturalem*, on the account of a *natural Relation* between them, and those who had actually contracted the *Guilt* of it. But this is so only with respect unto some outward *Temporary effects* of it. So *God* speaks concerning the *Children* of the *Rebellious Israelites* in the *Wilderness*. *Your Children shall wander in the Wilderness Forty years, and bear your Whoredoms, Numb. 14. 33.* Your *sin* shall be so far imputed unto your *Children*, because of their *Relation* unto you, and your *Interest* in them, as that they shall suffer for them in an *afflictive condition* in the *Wilderness*. And this was just, because of the *Relation* between them; as the same procedure of *Divine Justice* is frequently declared in other places of the *Scripture*. So where there is a due foundation of it, Imputation is an *Act* of *Justice*.

2. *Imputation* may justly ensue, *ex voluntaria sponse*; when one freely and willingly undertakes to answer for another. An illustrious instance hereof we have in that  
passage

passage of the Apostle unto *Philemon*, in the behalf of *Onesimus*; ver. 18. *If he have wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, ἄρα μοι ἑλλέγει, impute it unto me, put it on my account.* He supposeth that *Philemon* might have a double Action against *Onesimus*. ( 1 ) *Injuriarum*, of wrongs; ἐἰ δέ τι ἠδίκησέ σε, if he hath dealt *unjustly* with the or by the, if he hath so wronged the as to render himself obnoxious unto punishment; ( 2 ) *Damni*, or of loss; ἢ ὀφείλει, if he oweth thee *ought*, be a debtor unto the, which made him liable to payment or restitution. In this state the Apostle interposeth himself by a *voluntary sponson*, to undertake for *Onesimus*. *I Paul have written it with my own hand ἐγὼ ἀποτίσω I Paul will answer for the whole.* And this he did by the *Transcription* of both the debts of *Onesimus* unto himself; For the crime was of that nature as might be taken away by compurgation, being not Capital. And the Imputation of them unto him, was made just by his *voluntary undertaking* of them. Account me, saith he, the *Person* that hath done these things; and I will make satisfaction, so that nothing be charged on *Onesimus*. So *Judah* voluntarily undertook unto *Jacob*, for the safety of *Benjamin*, and obliged himself unto *perpetual Guilt* in case of failure; Gen. 43. 9. *I will be surety for him, of my hand shalt thou require him, if I bring him not unto thee, and set him before thee, וְחַטָּאתִי לְךָ כָּרִיתִי הִמָּנִי I will sin, or be a sinner before thee always; be guilty and as we say, bear the blame.* So he expresseth himself again unto *Joseph*, Chap. 44. 32. It seems this is the nature and office of a *Surety*; what he *undertaketh* for, is justly to be required at his hand, as if he had been originally and personally concerned in it. And this *voluntary sponson* was one ground of the Imputation of our sin unto Christ. He took on him the person of the whole Church that had sinned, to answer for what they had done against God and the Law. Hence that Imputation was *fundamentaliter ex compacto, ex voluntaria spon- sione,*

stone, it had its foundation in his voluntary undertaking. But on supposition hereof; it was actually *ex justitia*, it being Righteous that he should answer for, and make good what he had so undertaken, the Glory of Gods Righteousness and Holiness being greatly concerned herein.

3. There is an *Imputation, ex injuria*; when that is laid unto the charge of any, whereof he is not Guilty: So Bathsheba says unto David; *it shall come to pass that when my Lord the King shall sleep with his Fathers, that I and my Son Solomon shall be חטאים Sinners*; 1 Kings 1. 21. shall be dealt with as Offenders, as guilty persons, have sin imputed unto us, on one pretence or other unto our Destruction. We shall be *sinners*; be esteemed so, and be dealt withal accordingly. And we may see that in the *Phrase of the Scripture* the Denomination of sinners, followeth the *Imputation*, as well as the *inhesion* of sin; which will give light unto that place of the Apostle, *he was made sin for us*, 2 Cor. 5. 21. This kind of *Imputation* hath no place in the Judgment of God. It is far from him, that the Righteous should be as the Wicked.

4. There is an *Imputation, ex mera Gratia*, of meer Grace and Favour. And this is, when that which *antecedently* unto this *Imputation* was no way ours, not *inherent* in us, not performed by us, which we had no Right nor Title unto, is granted unto us, made ours, so as that we are judged of, and dealt with according unto it. This is that *Imputation* in both branches of it; Negative in the *non-Imputation* of sin, and positive in the *Imputation of Righteousness*, which the Apostle so vehemently pleads for, and so frequently asserteth, Rom. 4. For he both affirms the thing it self, and declares that it is of *meer Grace*, without respect unto any thing within our selves. And if this kind of *Imputation* cannot be fully exemplified in any other instance, but this alone, whereof we treat, it is because the foundation of it in the

*mediation of Christ* is singular, and that which there is nothing to *parallel* in any other case among men.

From what hath been discoursed concerning the nature and grounds of *Imputation*, sundry things are made evident, which contribute much light unto the truth which we plead for, at least unto the right understanding and stating of the matter under debate. As

1. The Difference is plain between the *Imputation of any works of our own unto us*, and the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Faith* without works. For the *Imputation of works* unto us, be they what they will, be it Faith it self as a work of Obedience in us, is the *Imputation of that which was ours, before such Imputation*. But the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Faith*, or the *Righteousness of God* which is by Faith, is the *Imputation of that which is made ours by vertue of that Imputation*. And these two *Imputations* differ in their whole kind. The one is a *judging* of that to be in us, which indeed is so, and is ours, before that judgment be passed concerning it, the other is a *Communication* of that unto us, which before was not ours. And no man can make sense of the Apostles discourse, that is, he cannot understand any thing of it, if he acknowledge not that the *Righteousness* he treats of is *made ours* by *Imputation*, and was not ours, antecedently thereunto.

2. The *Imputation of works*, of what sort soever they be, of *Faith* it self as a work, and all the Obedience of Faith, is *ex justitia*, and not *ex gratia*: of Right and not of Grace. However the bestowing of Faith on us, and the working of Obedience in us, may be of Grace; yet the *Imputation* of them unto us, as in us, and as ours, is an act of Justice. For this *Imputation* as was shewed, is nothing but a *Judgment* that such and such things are in us, or are ours, which truly and really are so, with a treating of us according unto them. This is an *Act of Justice*, as it appears in the Description given of

of that Imputation. But the *Imputation of Righteousness* mentioned by the Apostle is as unto us *ex mera Gratia*, of meer Grace, as he fully declares, *διωξεν τῆ χάριν αὐτοῦ*. And moreover he declares, that these *two sorts of Imputation* are inconsistent and not capable of any composition, so that any thing should be partly of the one, and partly of the other, Rom. 11. 6. *If by Grace, then it is no more of works, otherwise Grace is no more Grace; but if it be of works, then it is no more Grace; otherwise works is no more works.* For instance, if *Faith* it self as a work of ours be imputed unto us, it being *ours antecedently* unto that Imputation, it is but an acknowledgment of it to be in us and ours, with an ascription of it unto us for *what it is*. For the ascription of any thing unto us for *what it is not*, is not Imputation but mistake. But this is an Imputation *ex justitia*, of works; and so that which is of meer Grace, can have no place, by the Apostles Rule. So the Imputation unto us of what is in us, is exclusive of Grace, in the Apostles sense. And on the other hand; If the *Righteousness of Christ* be imputed unto us, it must be *ex mera Gratia*; of meer Grace; For that is imputed unto us, which was not ours, *antecedently* unto that Imputation, and so is communicated unto us thereby. And here is no place for works, nor for any pretence of them. In the one way the foundation of Imputation is in our selves, in the other it is in another, which are irreconcilable.

3. Herein both these kinds of *Imputation* do agree. Namely, in that whatever is imputed unto us, it is imputed for *what it is*, and not for *what it is not*. If it be a *perfect Righteousness* that is imputed unto us, so it is esteemed and judged to be, and accordingly are we to be dealt withall, even as those who have a perfect Righteousness. And if that which is imputed as Righteousness unto us be *imperfect*, or imperfectly so, then as such must it be judged when it is imputed; and we must be dealt withall as those which have such an imperfect Righteousness, and no otherwise. And therefore

whereas our *inherent Righteousness* is imperfect, ( they are to be pityed or despised, not to be contended withall, that are otherwise minded ) if that be *imputed* unto us, we cannot be accepted on the account thereof as perfectly Righteous, without an Error in Judgment.

4. Hence the true Nature of that Imputation which we plead for ( which so many cannot or will not understand ) is manifest, and that both *negatively* and *positively*. For ( 1 ) negatively ; ( 1 ) It is not a *judging* or esteeming of them to be Righteous who truly and really are not so. Such a Judgment is not reducible unto any of the Grounds of Imputation before-mentioned. It hath the nature of that which is *ex injuria*, or a false charge, only it differs *materially* from it. For that respects *evil*, this that which is *good*. And therefore the clamour of the Papists and others are meer effects of Ignorance or Malice, wherein they cry out *ad ravam*, that we affirm God to *esteem them to be Righteous*, who are *wicked*, sinful and polluted. But this falls heavily on them who maintain that we are justified before God by our own inherent Righteousness ; For then a man is judged Righteous, who indeed is not so. For he who is not perfectly Righteous, cannot be Righteous in the sight of God unto Justification. ( 2 ) It is not a *naked Pronunciation* or Declaration of any one to be Righteous, without a just and sufficient foundation for the Judgment of God declared therein. God declares no man to be Righteous but he who is so ; the whole Question being, how he comes so to be. ( 3 ) It is not the *Transmission* or *Transfusion* of the Righteousness of another into them that are to be justified, that they should become perfectly and inherently Righteous thereby. For it is impossible that the Righteousness of one should be *transfused* into another, to become his *subjectively* and inherently. But it is a great mistake on the other hand, to say that therefore the Righteousness of one can no way be made the Righteousness

ness of another; which is to deny all Imputation.

Wherefore (2) Positively; This Imputation is an *Act of God ex mera Gratia*, of his meer Love and Grace, whereby on the consideration of the Mediation of Christ, he makes an effectual Grant and Donation of a true, real, perfect Righteousness, even that of Christ himself unto all that do believe, and accounting it as theirs, on his own gracious Act, both absolves them from sin, and granteth them Right and Title unto Eternal Life. Hence,

4. In this Imputation, the *thing it self* is first imputed unto us, and not any of the *Effects* of it, but they are made ours by virtue of that Imputation. To say that the Righteousness of Christ, that is, his Obedience and Sufferings are imputed unto us only as unto their effects, is to say that we have the *benefit* of them, and no more; but Imputation it self is denied. So say the *Socinians*, but they knew well enough, and ingenuously grant, that they overthrow all true real Imputation thereby. *Nec enim ut per Christi justitiam justificemur, opus est ut illius Justitia, nostra fiat justitia; sed sufficit ut Christi justitia sit causa nostræ Justificationis; & hæcenus possumus tibi concedere, Christi justitiam esse nostram justitiam, quatenus nostrum in bonum justitiamq; redundat; verum tu proprie nostram, id est, nobis attributam a scriptamq; intelligis, saith Schlictingius; Disp. pro Socin. ad Meisner. pag. 250.* And it is not pleasing to see some among our selves with so great confidence take up the sense and words of these men in their Disputations against the Protestant Doctrine in this cause, that is, the Doctrine of the Church of England.

That the Righteousness of Christ is imputed unto us, as unto its effects, hath this sound sense in it; namely, that the effects of it are made ours, by reason of that Imputation. It is so imputed, so reckoned unto us of God, as that he really communicates all the effects of it unto us. But to say the Righteousness of Christ is *not imputed* unto us, only its effects are so, is really to overthrow all Imputation. For

( as we shall see ) the effects of the Righteousness of Christ cannot be said *properly* to be imputed unto us; and if his Righteousness it self be not so, Imputation hath no place herein, nor can it be understood why the Apostle should so frequently assert it as he doth, *Rom. 4.* And therefore the *Socinians* who expressly oppose the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, and plead for a Participation of its effects or benefits only, do wisely deny any such kind of Righteousness of Christ, namely, of *satisfaction and merit*, ( or that the Righteousness of Christ as wrought by him, was either satisfactory or meritorious ) as alone may be imputed unto us. For it will readily be granted, that what alone they allow the Righteousness of Christ to consist in, cannot be imputed unto us, whatever benefit we may have by it. But I do not understand how those who grant the *Righteousness of Christ* to consist principally in his satisfaction for us or in our stead, can conceive of an *Imputation of the effects* thereof unto us, without an Imputation of the thing it self. Seeing it is for that as made ours, that we partake of the Benefits of it. But from the Description of Imputation and the Instances of it, it appeareth that there can be no Imputation of any thing, unless the *thing it self* be imputed, nor any Participation of the Effects of any thing, but what is grounded on the Imputation of the thing it self. Wherefore in our particular case, no Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ is allowed, unless we grant it self to be imputed; nor can we have any Participation of the effects of it; but on the supposition and foundation of that Imputation. The impertinent Cavils that some of late have collected from the *Papists* and *Socinians*, that if it be so, then are we as *Righteous as Christ himself*, that we *have redeemed the World*, and *satisfied for the sins of others*, that the *pardon of sin is impossible*, and *Personal Righteousness needless*, shall afterwards be spoken unto, so far as they deserve.

All that we now aim to demonstrate, is only, that either the *Righteousness of Christ it self* is imputed unto us, or there is no Imputation in the matter of our Justification, which whether there be or no, is another Question afterwards to be spoken unto. For as was said, the effects of the Righteousness of Christ, cannot be said properly to be imputed unto us. For Instance, Pardon of sin is a great effect of the Righteousness of Christ. Our sins are pardoned on the account thereof. God for Christs sake forgiveth us all our sins. But the *pardon of sin* cannot be said to be imputed unto us, nor is so. Adoption, Justification, Peace with God, all Grace and Glory, are effects of the Righteousness of Christ. But that these things are not imputed unto us, nor can be so, is evident from their Nature: But we are made Partakers of them all, upon the account of the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, and no otherwise.

Thus much may suffice to be spoken of the *Nature of Imputation* of the Righteousness of Christ, the Grounds, Reasons, and Causes whereof, we shall in the next place enquire into. And I doubt not but we shall find in our Enquiry, that it is no such figment, as some Ignorant of these things do imagine, but on the contrary, an Important Truth imixed with the most fundamental Principles of the mystery of the Gospel, and inseparable from the Grace of God in Christ Jesus.

## CHAP. VIII.

*Imputation of the sins of the Church unto Christ. Grounds of it. The Nature of his Suretyship. Causes of the New Covenant. Christ and the Church one mystical Person; Consequents thereof.*

Those who believe the *Imputation of the Righteousness* of Christ unto Believers, for the Justification of Life, do also unanimously profess, that the *sins of all Believers were imputed unto Christ*. And this they do on many Testimonies of the Scripture directly witnessing thereunto, some whereof shall be pleaded and vindicated afterwards. At present we are only on the consideration of the general notion of these things, and the Declaration of the nature of what shall be proved afterwards. And in the first place we shall enquire into the *foundation* of this Dispensation of God, and the Equity of it, or the Grounds whereinto it is resolved, without an understanding whereof, the thing it self cannot be well apprehended.

The principal Foundation hereof is, that *Christ and the Church*, in this Design, were one *mystical Person*, which state they do actually coalesce in, through the *uniting Efficacy* of the Holy Spirit. He is the Head, and Believers are the members of that one Person, as the Apostle declares, *1 Cor. 12. 12, 13*. Hence as what he did is imputed unto them, as if done by them, so what they deserved on the Account of sin was charged upon him. So is it expressed by a Learned Prelate; *Nostram causam sustinebat, qui nostram sibi Carnem ad-*  
*univerat,*

univerat, & ita nobis arctissimo vinculo conjunctus, & ἐνωθεὶς, quæ erant nostra fecit sua. And again; Quid mirum si in nostra persona constitutus, nostram carnem indutus, &c. Montacut. Origin. Ecclesiast. The Antients speak to the same purpose. Leo. Serm. 17. Ideo se humanæ infirmitati virtus divina conseruit, ut dum Deus sua facit esse quæ nostra sunt, nostra faceret esse quæ sua sunt. And also Sermo. 16. Caput nostrum Dominus Jesus Kristus omnia in se corporis sui membra transformans, quod olim in Psalmo eructauerat, id in supplicio crucis sub Redemptorum suorum voce clamavit. And so speaks Augustine to the same purpose; Epist. 120. ad Honoratum; Audimus vocem corporis, ex ore capitis; Ecclesia in illo patiebatur, quando pro Ecclesia patiebatur, &c. We hear the voice of the Body from the mouth of the Head. The Church suffered in him, when he suffered for the Church; as he suffers in the Church, when the Church suffereth for him. For as we have heard the voice of the Church in Christ-suffering, my God, my Lord, why hast thou forsaken me; look upon me; so we have heard the voice of Christ in the Church-suffering, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me. But we may yet look a little backward and farther into the sense of the antient Church herein. Christus, saith Irenæus, omnes Gentes exinde ab Adam dispersas, & Generationem hominum in semet ipso recapitulatus est; unde a Paulo Typus futuri dictus est ipse Adam; lib. 3. cap. 33. And again; Recapitulans uniuersum hominum genus in se ab initio usq; ad finem, recapitulatus est & mortem ejus. In this of Recapitulation there is no doubt but he had respect unto the ἀνακεφαλαιώσις mentioned, Ephes. 1. 10. And it may be this was that which Origen intended *enigmatically*, by saying, the Soul of the first Adam was the Soul of Christ, as it is charged on him. And Cyprian, Epist. 63. on bearing about the Administration of the Sacrament of the Eucharist; nos omnes portabat Christus; qui & peccata nostra portabat. He bare us, or suffered in our person, when he bare our sins. Whence Athanasius affirms of the

the voice he used on the Cross; *οὐκ αὐτὸς ὁ κῶειθ* ; ἀλλὰ ἡμεῖς ἐν ἐκείτῳ πάροντες ἡμῶν, We suffered in him. *Eusebius* speaks many things to this purpose. *Demonstrat. Evangel. lib. 10. cap. 1.* Expounding those words of the Psalmist, *Heal my Soul, for,* or as he would read them, if, *I have sinned against thee*; and applying them unto our Saviour in his sufferings; He saith thus, *ἐπειδὴν τὰς ἡμετέρας κοινοποιεῖ εἰς ἑαυτὸν ἀμαρτίας*; because he took of our sins to himself; communicated our sins to himself; making them his own; For so he adds, *ὅτι τὰς ἡμέτερας ἀμαρτίας ἐξοικειοῦμαι*, making our sins his own. And because in his following words he fully expresseth what I design to prove, I shall transcribe them at large, *πῶς ἢ τὰς ἡμετέρας ἀμαρτίας ἐξοικειοῦται; καὶ πῶς φέρειν λέγεται τὰς ἀνομίας ἡμῶν, ἢ καθ' ὃ, σῶμα αὐτῶ εἶναι λεγόμεθα; κατὰ τὸ ἄπιστολον φήσαντα, ὑμεῖς ἐσὲ σῶμα Χριστοῦ, καὶ μέλη ἐκ μέρους καὶ καθ' ὃ πάροντος ἐνὸς μέρους, συμπάχει πάντα τὰ μέλη, οὕτω πολλῶν μελῶν παρόντων καὶ ἀμαρτανόντων, καὶ αὐτὸς κατὰ τὴν συμπαθείας λόγους, ἐπειδὴ ἔπερ εὐδίκησε Θεοῦ λόγους ὧν μορφήν δούλε λαβεῖν, καὶ τῶ κοινῶ πάντων ἡμῶν σκηνώματι συναφθῆναι; τὸς ἡμῶν παρόντων μελῶν πόνους εἰς ἑαυτὸν ἀναλαμβάνει, καὶ τὰς ἡμετέρας νόσους ἰδιοποιεῖται; καὶ πάντων ἡμῶν ὑπεραγαθῆ καὶ ὑπερπονεῖ κατὰ τὸς τῆς φιλανθρωπίας νόμους. ἔ μόνον ἢ ταῦτα προσέξας ὁ ἀμνὸς τῶ Θεοῦ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν κόλαθεις καὶ πικρῆσαν ὑποσχῶν, ἢ αὐτὸς μὲρ οὐκ ἀφείλεν, ἀλλ' ἡμεῖς τῶ πλήθους ἕνεκεν πεπλημμελημένους, ἡμῶν ἀίποιοι τῆς ἡμῶν ἀμαρτημάτων ἀφέσεως κατέστη, ὅτε ἢ ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἀναδέξάμενος θανάτον, μάστιγας τε καὶ ὑβρεῖς, καὶ ἀπμίας ἡμῶν ἐποφειλομένας εἰς αὐτὸν μεταθείς, καὶ τὴν ἡμῶν σαρξὸς πικρῶν κατάρσεν ἐφ' ἑαυτὸν ἐλκῶσας, γενόμενος ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν κατάρσεν, καὶ πῶ ἄλλο ἀντήψυχον; διὸ φησὶν ἐξ ἡμετέρας προσώπω τὸ λόγιον ---- ὡς ἐικότως ἐνῶν, ἑαυτὸν ἡμῶν, ἡμῶς τε αὐτῶ καὶ τὰ ἡμέτερας πάθη ἰδιοποιεῖ μὲρ φησιν, ἐγὼ εἶπα, κῶρι ἐλήθεσόν με, ἰάσαι τὴν ψυχὴν μου, ὅτι ἡμαρτίν σοι.*

I have transcribed this passage at large, because, as I said, what I intend to prove in the present discourse is declared fully therein. Thus therefore he speaks. *How then did he make our sins to be his own, and how did he bear our Iniquities? Is it not from thence, that we are said to be his Body, as the Apostle speaks, You are the Body of Christ, and members, for your part, or of one another; and as when one member suffers, all*

*the*

the members do suffer ; so the many members, sinning and suffering, He according unto the Laws of sympathy in the same body, (seeing that being the Word of God, he would take the form of a Servant, and be joyned unto the common habitation of us all ( in the same nature ) took the sorrows or labours of the suffering members on him, and made all their Infirmities his own, and according to the Laws of humanity ( in the same body ) bare our sorrow and labour for us. And the Lamb of God did not only these things for us, but he underwent torments, and was punished for us ; that which he was no ways exposed unto for himself, but we were so by the multitude of our sins ; and thereby he became the cause of the pardon of our sins ; namely, because he underwent Death, Stripes, Reproaches, translating the thing which we had deserved unto himself ; and was made a Curse for us, taking unto himself the Curse that was due to us ; For what was he, but ( a substitute for us ) a price of Redemption for our Souls ? In our person therefore the Oracle speaks, ---- whilst freely uniting himself unto us, and us unto himself, and making our ( sins or passions his own ) I have said Lord be merciful unto me, heal my Soul, for I have sinned against thee.

That our sins were transferred unto Christ and made his, that thereon he underwent the punishment that was due unto us for them : and that the Ground hereof, whereinto its Equity is resolved, is the Union between him and us, is fully declared in this Discourse. So saith the Learned and *Pathetical* Author of the *Homilies* on Math. 5. in the works of *Chrysostom*, Hom. 54. which is the last of them. *In carne sua omnem carnem suscepit, crucifixus, omnem carnem crucifixit in se.* He speaks of the Church. So they speak often others of them ; that he bare us, that he took us with him on the Cross, that we were all crucified in him ; as *Prosper* ; He is not saved by the Cross of Christ, who is not crucified in Christ. *Resp. ad cap. Gal. cap. 9.*

This then I say is the *Foundation* of the Imputation of the

sins of the Church unto Christ, namely, that he and it are one Person, the Grounds whereof we must enquire into.

But hereon sundry Discourses do ensue, and various Enquiries are made. What a *Person is*, in *what sense*, and *how many senses* that word may be used; what is the true notion of it, what is a *natural* Person, what a *legal*, *civil*, or *political* Person; in the Explication whereof some have fallen into mistakes. And if we should enter into this Field, we need not fear matter enough of debate and altercation. But I must needs say, that these things belong not unto our present occasion; nor is the Union of Christ and the Church illustrated, but obscured by them. For Christ and Believers are neither one *natural* Person, nor a *legal* or *political* Person, nor any such Person as the *Laws*, *Customs*, or *Usages* of men do know or allow of. They are *one mystical* Person, whereof although there may be some imperfect Resemblances found in *natural* or *political* Unions, yet the Union from whence that Denomination is taken between him and us, is of that nature, and ariseth from such Reasons and Causes, as no *Personal Union* among men, (or the *Union of many persons*) hath any concernment in. And therefore as to the *Representation* of it unto our weak understandings unable to comprehend the depth of Heavenly mysteries, it is compared unto *Unions* of divers kinds and natures. So is it represented by that of *Man and Wife*; not unto those mutual affections which give them only a *moral Union*, but from the extraction of the first Woman, from the *flesh and bone* of the first man, and the Institution of God for the Individual Society of Life thereon. This the Apostle at large declares, *Ephes.* 5. 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32. Whence he concludes, that from the Union thus represented, *we are members of his Body, of his flesh and of his bone*, ver. 30. or have such a Relation unto him, *as Eve had to Adam*, when she was made of his flesh and bone; and so was one flesh with him. So also it is compared

pared unto the Union of the *Head and Members* of the same natural Body, *1 Cor. 12. 12.* and unto a *political Union* also between a Ruling or political Head, and its political Members; but never exclusively unto the Union of a natural Head, and its Members comprized in the same *Expression*, *Ephes. 4. 15. Col. 2. 19.* And so also unto sundry things in nature, as a *Vine and its Branches*, *Joh. 15. 1, 2, 3.* And it is declared by the Relation that was between *Adam* and his *posterity*, by Gods Institution and the Law of Creation; *Rom. 5. 12. &c.* And the Holy Ghost by representing the Union that is between Christ and Believers, by such a *variety* of Resemblances, in things agreeing only in the common or general notion of *Union* on various Grounds, doth sufficiently manifest that it is not of, nor can be reduced unto any one kind of them. And this will yet be made more evident by the consideration of the *Causes* of it, and the Grounds whereinto it is resolved. But whereas it would require much time and diligence to handle them at large, which the mention of them here being occasional, will not admit, I shall only briefly refer unto the Heads of them.

1. The first spring or cause of this *Union*, and of all the other causes of it, lieth in that *eternal compact* that was between the Father and the Son, concerning the Recovery and Salvation of fallen mankind. Herein among other things as the effects thereof, the *Assumption* of our nature, ( the foundation of this Union ) was designed. The nature and terms of this Compact, Counsel, and Agreement, I have declared elsewhere, and therefore must not here again insist upon it. But the *Relation* between Christ and the Church, proceeding from hence, and so being an effect of infinite Wisdom, in the Counsel of the Father and Son, to be made effectual by the Holy Spirit, must be distinguished from all other *Unions* or Relations whatever.

2. The Lord Christ as unto the nature which he was to assume, was hereon *predestinated* unto Grace and Glory. He was *προεγνωσμένον* *fore-ordained*, predestinated, *before the foundation of the World*; 1 Pet. 1. 20. That is, he was so as unto his Office, so unto all the Grace and Glory required thereunto, and consequent thereon. All the Grace and Glory of the Humane Nature of Christ, was an effect of free *Divine preordination*. God chose it from all Eternity, unto a participation of all which it received in time. Neither can any other cause of the Glorious Exaltation of that portion of our nature, be assigned.

3. This Grace and Glory whereunto he was preordained, was twofold. ( 1 ) That which was *peculiar unto himself*; ( 2 ) That which was to be *Communicated*, by and through him unto the Church. Of the first sort was the *χαρις ἐνώσεως* the *Grace of Personal Union*, that single effect of Divine Wisdom, ( whereof there is no shadow nor Resemblance in any other works of God, either of Creation, Providence, or Grace ) which his nature was filled withal. *Full of Grace and Truth*. And all his personal Glory, Power, Authority, and Majesty as Mediator in his Exaltation at the right hand of God, which is expressive of them all, doth belong hereunto. These things were peculiar unto him, and all of them effects of his eternal *Predestination*. But ( 2 ) He was not thus *predestinated* absolutely, but also with respect unto that Grace and Glory which in him and by him, was to be communicated unto the Church. And he was so:

1. As the *Pattern and Exemplary cause* of our *Predestination*; For we are *predestinated to be conformed unto the Image of the Son of God, that he might be the first born among many Brethren*. Rom. 8. 29. Hence he shall even change our *vile Body, that it may be fashioned like unto his Glorious Body*, Phil. 3. 21. That when he appears, we may be every way like him. 1 Joh. 3. 2.

2. As the *means and cause of Communicating all Grace and Glory* unto us. For we are *chosen in him before the foundation of the World, that we should be Holy, and predestinated unto the Adoption of Children by him.* Ephes. 1. 3, 4, 5. He was designed as the only procuring cause, of all spiritual Blessings in Heavenly things unto those who are chosen in him. Wherefore

3. He was thus *fore-ordained* as the Head of the Church, it being the design of God to gather all things into an Head in him, *Ephes. 1. 10.*

4. All the *Elect of God* were in his eternal purpose and design, and in the everlasting Covenant between the Father and the Son, committed unto him to be delivered from Sin, the Law, and Death, and to be brought into the enjoyment of God. *Thine they were, and thou gavest them unto me.* Joh. 17. 6. Hence was that love of his unto them, where-with he loved them and gave himself for them, antecedently unto any good or love in them, *Ephes. 5. 25, 26. Gal. 2. 20. Rev. 1. 5, 6.*

5. In the prosecution of this design of God, and in the accomplishment of the everlasting Covenant, in the *fulnes of Time he took upon him our Nature*, or took it into personal subsistence with himself. The especial Relation that ensued hereon between him and the Elect Children, the Apostle declares at large, *Heb. 2. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17.* And I refer the Reader unto our exposition of that place.

6. On these Foundations he undertook to be the *Surety of the new Covenant*, *Heb. 7. 22. Jesus was made a Surety of a better Testament.* This alone of all the fundamental considerations of the Imputation of our sins unto Christ, I shall insist upon, on purpose to obviate or remove, some mistakes about the Nature of his *Suretiship*, and the respect of it unto the Covenant, whereof he was the Surety. And I shall borrow what I shall offer hereon, from our exposition of this passage.

passage of the Apostle on the *seventh Chapter of this Epistle* not yet published, with very little variation from what I have discoursed on that occasion, without the least respect unto, or prospect of any treating on our present subject.

The word ἕγγυος, is no where found in the Scripture, but in this place only. But the advantage which some would make from thence, namely, that it *being but one place wherein the Lord Christ is called a Surety*, it is not of much force, or much to be insisted on, is both unreasonable and absurd. For (1) this one place is of Divine Revelation, and therefore is of the same Authority with twenty Testimonies unto the same purpose. One Divine Testimony makes our Faith no less necessary, nor doth one less secure it from being deceived, then an hundred.

2. The *signification* of the word is known, from the *use* of it, and what it signifies among men, that no question can be made of its sense and importance, though it be but once used; And this on any occasion removes the Difficulty and Danger, τῶν ἀπαξ λεγόμενων. (3) *The thing it self intended* is so fully declared by the Apostle in this place, and so plentifully taught in other places of the Scripture, as that the *single use* of this word, may add light, but can be no prejudice unto it.

Something may be spoken unto the signification of the word ἕγγυος which will give light into the thing intended by it. γυδλον is *Vola manus*, the *palm of the hand*; Thence is ἕγγυος, or εἰς τὸ γυδλον, to *deliver into the hand*. ἕγγυησις is of the same signification. Hence being a *Surety* is interpreted by *striking the hand*, Prov. 6. 1. *My Son if thou be Surety for thy friend, if thou hast stricken thy hand, with a Stranger*. So it answers the *Hebrew ערב* which the Lxx render ἕγγυω Prov. 6. 1. Chap. 17. 18. Chap. 20. 19. and by διεγγυω *Nehem.* 5. 3. ערב Originally signifies to *minge*, or a *mixture* of any things or persons. And thence from the conjunction and *mixture* that

that is between a *Surety* and him for whom he is a *Surety*, whereby they *coalesce* into one person, as unto the ends of that *Suretiship*; it is used for a *Surety*, or to give *Surety*. And he that was, or did ערב a *Surety*, or become a *Surety*, was to answer for him, for whom he was so, whatsoever befell him. So is it described, *Gen.* 43.9. in the words of *Judah* unto his Father *Jacob*, concerning *Benjamin*. אֲנִי אֶעֱרָבָה I will be *Surety* for him; of my hand shalt thou require him. In undertaking to be *Surety* for him, as unto his safety and preservation, he engageth himself to answer for all that should befall him, for so he adds; if I bring him not unto thee, and set him before thee, let me be guilty for ever. And on this ground he entreats *Joseph*, that he might be a *Servant* and a *Bondman* in his stead, that he might go free and return unto his Father, *Gen.* 44. 32, 33. This is required unto such a *Surety*, that he undergo and answer all that he for whom he is a *Surety* is liable unto, whether in things *criminal*, or *civil*, so far as the *Suretiship* doth extend. A *Surety* is an undertaker for another, or others who thereon is justly and legally to answer what is due to them, or from them. Nor is the Word otherwise used. See *Job.* 17. 3. *Prov.* 6.1. *Chap.* 11. 15. *Chap.* 17. 11. *Chap.* 20. 16. *Chap.* 27. 13. So *Paul* became a *Surety* unto *Philemon* for *Onesimus*, ver. 17. עָרַב is *Sponsio*, *Expromissio*, *Fidejussio*; an undertaking or giving *Security* for any thing or Person unto another, whereon an Agreement did ensue. This in some cases was by *Pledges*, or an *Earnest*, *Isa.* 36. 8. הִתְעַרְבָה נָא Give *Surety*, *Pledges*, *Hostages*, for the true performance of conditions. Hence is עֵרָבון ἀρραβών a *Pledge* or *Earnest*, *Eph.* 1. 14. Wherefore εὔροχος is *Sponsor*, *Fidejussor*, *Præs*, One that voluntarily takes on himself the cause or condition of another, to answer, undergo, or pay what he is liable unto, or to see it done, whereon he becomes justly and legally obnoxious unto performance; In this sense is the word here used by the Apostle, for it hath no other.

In our present enquiry into the nature of this *Suretyship* of Christ, the whole will be resolved into this one question, namely, whether the Lord Christ was made a *Surety* only on the *part of God unto us*, to assure us, that the Promise of the Covenant on his part should be accomplished; or also and principally an *undertaker* on our part, for the performance of what is required, if not of us, yet with respect unto us, that the Promise may be accomplished. The first of these is vehemently asserted by the *Socinians*, who are followed by *Grotius* and *Hammond* in their Annotations on this place.

The words of *Schlictingius* are, *Sponsor fœderis appellatur Jesus, quod nomine Dei nobis sponderit, id est fidem fecerit, Deum fœderis promissiones servaturum. Non vero quasi pro nobis sponderit Deo, nostrorumve debitorum solutionem in se receperit. Nec enim nos nihilimus Christum sed Deus, cujus nomine Christus ad nos venit, fœdus nobiscum panxit, ejusq; promissiones ratas fore spondit & in se recepit; ideoque nec sponsor simpliciter, sed fœderis sponsor nominatur; spondit autem Christus pro fœderis divini veritate, non tantum quatenus id firmum ratumq; fore verbis perpetuo testatus est; sed etiam quatenus muneris sui fidem, maximis rerum ipsarum comprobavit Documentis, cum perfecta vitæ innocentia & Sanctitate, cum divinis plane quæ patravit operibus; cum mortis adeo truculentæ, quam pro Doctrinæ suæ veritate subijt, perpessione.* After which he subjoyns a long Discourse about the *Evidences* which we have of the *veracity* of Christ. And herein we have a brief account of their whole Opinion concerning the Mediation of Christ. The words of *Grotius* are; *spondit Christus, i.e. Nos certos Promissi fecit, non solis verbis, sed perpetua vitæ Sanctitate, morte ob id tolerata & miraculis plurimis;* which are an Abridgment of the Discourse of *Schlictingius*. To the same purpose *Dr. Hammond* expounds it, that he was a *Sponsor or Surety for God unto the confirmation of the Promises of the Covenant.*

On the other hand the generality of Expositors, antient and modern, of the *Roman* and *Protestant* Churches on the place affirm, that the Lord Christ as the *Surety of the Covenant*, was properly a *Surety* or *undertaker* unto God for us, and not a *Surety* and *undertaker* unto us for God. And because this is a matter of Great Importance, wherein the Faith and Consolation of the Church is highly concerned, I shall insist a little upon it.

And first, we may consider the *Argument* that is produced to prove that Christ was only a *Surety* for God unto us. Now this is taken neither from the *Name* nor *Nature* of the Office or work of *Surety*, nor from the *Nature* of the *Covenant*, whereof he was a *Surety*, nor of the *Office* wherein he was so. But the sole *Argument* insisted on is; *That we do not give Christ as a Surety of the Covenant unto God*, but he gives him unto us, and therefore he is a *Surety for God* and the accomplishment of his Promises, and not for us to pay our debts, or to *answer what is required of us*.

But there is no force in this *Argument*. For it belongs not unto the nature of a *Surety*, by whom he is or may be designed unto his Office and Work therein. His own *voluntary susception* of the Office and Work, is all that is required, however he may be designed or induced to undertake it. He who of his own accord doth *voluntarily* undertake for another, on what Grounds, Reasons, or Considerations soever he doth so, is his *Surety*. And this the Lord Christ did in the behalf of the Church. For when it was said, *Sacrifice and burnt-Offering and whole burnt-Offerings for sin, God would not have*, or accept as sufficient to make the Atonement that he required, so as that the *Covenant* might be established and made effectual unto us, then said he, *Loe I come to do thy Will O God*, Heb. 10. 5. 6. He willingly and voluntarily out of his own abundant goodness and love, took upon him to make Atonement for us, wherein he was our *Surety*. And

accordingly this undertaking is ascribed unto that *love* which he exercised herein, *Gal. 2. 20.* I *Joh. 3. 16.* *Rev. 1. 5.* And there was this in it moreover, that he took upon him our nature or the Seed of *Abraham*, wherein he was our Surety. So that although we neither did nor could appoint him so to be, yet he took *from us*, that wherein and whereby he was so, which is as much as if we had designed him unto his work, as to the true Reason of his being our Surety. Wherefore notwithstanding those antecedent Transactions that were between the Father and him in this matter, it was the *voluntary Engagement* of himself to be our Surety, and his taking our nature upon him for that end, which was the *formal Reason* of his being enstated in that Office.

It is indeed weak and contrary unto all common experience, that none can be a Surety for others, unless those others design him and appoint him so to be. The principal instances of Suretiship in the World, have been by the voluntary undertaking of such as were no way procured so to do by them for whom they undertook; And in such undertakings he unto whom it is made, is no less considered, than they for whom it is made. As when *Judah* on his own accord became a Surety for *Benjamin*, he had as much respect unto the satisfaction of his Father, as the safety of his Brother. And so the Lord Christ, in his undertaking to be a Surety for us, had respect unto the Glory of God before our safety.

I. We may consider the Arguments whence it is evident that he neither was, nor could be a Surety unto us for God, but was so for us unto God. For

I. ἕγνων or ἐγγυητής a Surety, is one that undertaketh for another wherein he is defective really or in Reputation. Whatever that undertaking be, whether in words of Promise, or in depositing of real security in the hands of an Arbitrator, or by any other personal Engagement of life and body, it respects

respects the *defect* of the person for whom any one becomes a *surety*. Such an one is *Sponsor*, or *Fidejussor*, in all Good Authors and common use of speech. And if any one be of *absolute credit* himself, and of a Reputation every way unquestionable, there is no need of a *surety*, unless in case of mortality. The words of a *surety* in the behalf of another whose Ability or Reputation is dubious, are, *ad me recipio, faciet, aut faciam*. And when *εγγυω* is taken *adjectively*, as sometimes, it signifies *satisfactionibus obnoxius*; liable to payments for others, that are *non-solvent*.

2. God can therefore have no *surety* properly, because there can be no Imagination of any *defect* on his part. There may be indeed a Question whether any Word or Promise, be a *Word or Promise of God*. To assure us hereof, it is not the Work of a *surety*, but only any one, or any means that may give evidence that so it is, that is, of a Witness. But upon a supposition that what is proposed in *his* Word or Promise, there can be no Imagination or fear of any *defect* on his part, so as that there should be any need of a *surety* for the performance of it. He doth therefore make use of *Witnesses* to confirm his Word; that is, to testify that such Promises he hath made, and so he will do. So the Lord Christ was his Witness, *Isa. 43. 10. Ye are my Witnesses saith the Lord, and my Servant whom I have chosen*. But they were not all his *sureties*. So he affirms, that he came into the World to bear witness unto the Truth, *Joh. 18. 37. that is, the Truth of the Promises of God*; for he was the *Minister of the Circumcision for the Truth of the Promises of God unto the Fathers, Rom. 15. 8*. But a *surety* for God, properly so called, he was not, nor could be. The distance and difference is wide enough between a *witness* and a *surety*. For a *surety* must be of more *Ability*, or more *Credit and Reputation* than he or those for whom he is a *surety*, or there is no need of his *suretyship*; or at least he must add unto their credit, and make

it better than without him. This none can be for God, no not the Lord Christ himself, who in his whole work was the *Servant* of the Father. And the Apostle doth not use this word in a general improper sense for any one that by *any means* gives Assurance of any other thing, for so he had ascribed nothing peculiar unto Christ. For in such a sense all the Prophets and Apostles were *sureties* for God, and many of them confirmed the Truth of his Word and Promises, with the laying down of their lives. But such a *surety* he intends as undertaketh to do that for others which they cannot do for themselves; or at least are not reputed to be able to do what is required of them.

3. The Apostle had before at large declared, who, and what was Gods *surety* in this matter of the Covenant, and how impossible it was that he should have any other. And this was *himself* alone, *interposing himself by his Oath*. For in this cause, *because he had none greater to swear by, he sware by himself*, chap. 6. 13, 14. Wherefore if God would give any other *surety* besides himself, it must be one *greater* than He. This being every way impossible, he *swears by himself* only. Many ways he may and doth use for the declaring and testifying of his Truth unto us, that we may know and believe it to be his Word; and so the Lord Christ in his Ministry was the *principal witness* of the Truth of God. But other *surety* than himself he can have none. And therefore,

4. When he would have us in this matter not only come unto the *full Assurance of Faith* concerning his Promises, but also to have *strong consolation* therein, he resolves it wholly into the *Immutability of his counsel*, as declared by his *Promise and Oath*. chap. 6. 18, 19. So that neither is God *capable* of having any *surety* properly so called, neither do we *stand in need* of any on his part for the confirmation of our Faith in the highest degree.

5. We on all accounts *stand in need of a surety* for us, or on our behalf. Neither without the Interposition of such a surety, could any Covenant between God and us be firm and stable, or an *everlasting Covenant*, ordered in all things and sure. In the first Covenant made with *Adam* there was no surety, but God and men were the immediate Covenanters. And although we were then in a state and condition able to perform and answer all the Terms of the Covenant, yet was it broken and disannulled. If this came to pass by the failure of the *Promise* of God, it was necessary that on the making of a new Covenant he *should have a surety* to undertake for him, that the Covenant might be stable and everlasting. But this is false and blasphemous to imagine. It was *man alone* who failed and broke that Covenant. Wherefore it was necessary that upon the making of the *New Covenant*, and that with a design and purpose that it should *never be disannulled* as the former was, that we should have a *surety* and undertaker for us. For if that *first Covenant* was not firm and stable because there was no *surety* to undertake for us, notwithstanding all that Ability which we had to answer the terms of it; how much less can any other be so, now our Natures are become depraved and sinful? Wherefore we alone were *capable of a surety* properly so called, for us, we alone *stood in need of him*, and without him the Covenant could not be firm, and inviolate on our parts. The surety therefore of this Covenant is so with God for us.

6. It is the *Priesthood of Christ* that the Apostle treats of in this place, and that alone. Wherefore he is a *surety as he is a Priest*, and in the discharge of that Office, and therefore is so with God on our behalf. This *Schlictingius* observes, and is aware what will ensue against his pretensions, which he endeavours to obviate. *Mirum* (saith he) *porro alicui videri posset cur Divinus Author de Christi sacerdotio in superioribus & in sequentibus agens, de repente eum sponsorem fideris.*

*non vero sacerdotem vocet? Cur non dixerit tanto præstantioris fæderis factus est sacerdos Jesus? hoc enim plane requirere videtur totus orationis contextus. Credibile est in voce sponsonis sacerdotium quoq; Christi intelligi. Sponsonis enim non est alieno nomine quippiam promittere, & fidem suam pro alio interponere; sed etiam, si ita res ferat, alterius nomine id quod sponsondit præstare. In rebus quidem humanis, si id non præstet is pro quo sponson fidejussit; hic vero propter contrariam causam (nam prior hic locum habere non potest) nempe quatenus ille pro quo sponsondit Christus per ipsum Christum promissa sua nobis exhibet; qua in re præcipue Christi sacerdotium continetur.*

*Ans. (1) It may indeed seem strange unto any one who imagineth Christ to be such a surety as he doth, why the Apostle should so call him, and so introduce him in the Description of his Priestly Office, as that which belongeth thereunto. But grant what is the proper Work and Duty of a surety, and who the Lord Jesus was a surety for, and it is evident that nothing more proper or pertinent could be mentioned by him, when he was in the Declaration of that Office. (2) He confesseth that by his Exposition of this suretyship of Christ, as making him a surety for God, he contradicteth the nature and only notion of a surety among men. For such a one he acknowledgeth doth nothing but in the defect and inability of them for whom he is ingaged, and doth undertake. He is to pay that which they owe, and to do what is to be done by them, which they cannot perform. And if this be not the notion of a surety in this place, the Apostle makes use of a word no where else used in the whole Scripture, to teach us that which it doth never signifie among men, which is improbable and absurd. For the sole Reason why he did make use of it was, that from the nature and notion of it amongst men in other cases, we may understand the signification of it; what he intends by it, and what under that name he ascribes unto the Lord Jesus. (3) He hath no way*

way to solve the Apostles mention of Christ being a *surety* in the description of his *Priestly Office*, but by overthrowing the Nature of that Office also. For to confirm this absurd notion that Christ as a *Priest* was a *surety* for God, he would have us believe that the *Priesthood* of Christ consists in his making effectual unto us the Promises of God, or his effectual communicating of the Good things promised unto us; the *falsehood* of which notion really destructive of the *Priesthood of Christ*, I have elsewhere at large detected and confuted. Wherefore seeing the Lord Christ is a *surety of the Covenant* as a Priest, and all the *sacerdotal* Actings of Christ have God for their immediate Object, and are performed with him on our behalf, he was a *surety for us* also.

A *Surety, Sponsor, Vas, Præs, Fidejussor*, for us, the Lord Christ was, by his *voluntary undertaking* out of his rich Grace and Love, to do, answer, and perform all that is required on our parts, that we may enjoy the Benefits of the Covenant, the Grace and Glory prepared, proposed, and promised in it, in the way and manner determined on by Divine Wisdom. And this may be reduced unto two Heads. 1. His answering for our Transgressions against the first Covenant. 2. His purchase and procurement of the Grace of the New. *He was made a Curse for us, that the Blessing of Abraham might come upon us*, Gal. 3. 13, 14, 15.

1. He undertook as the *surety of the Covenant* to answer for all the sins of those who are to be, and are made partakers of the Benefits of it. That is, to undergo the *punishment due unto their sins*; to make atonement for them, by *offering* himself a propitiatory sacrifice for the Expiation of their sins, *redeeming* them by the Price of his Blood from their state of misery and bondage under the Law and the Curse of it, *Isa.* 53. 4, 5, 6, 10, *Math.* 20. 28. *1 Tim.* 2. 6. *1 Cor.* 6. 20. *Rom.* 3. 25, 26. *Heb.* 10. 5, 6, 7, 8. *Rom.* 8. 2, 3. *2 Cor.* 5. 19, 20, 21. *Gal.* 3. 13. And this was absolutely

ly necessary that the Grace and Glory prepared in the Covenant might be communicated unto us. Without this undertaking of his, and performance of it, the Righteousness and Faithfulness of God would not permit, that sinners, such as had *Apostatized* from him, despised his Authority and rebelled against him, falling thereby under the sentence and curse of the Law, should again be received into his Favour, and made Partakers of Grace and Glory. This therefore the Lord Christ took upon himself, as the *surety* of the Covenant.

2. That those who were to be taken into this Covenant should *receive Grace* enabling them to comply with the Terms of it, fulfill its Conditions, and yield the Obedience which God required therein. For by the Ordination of God, he was to procure, and did merit and procure for them the Holy Spirit, and all needful supplies of Grace to make them new Creatures, and enable them to yield Obedience unto God from a new principle of spiritual Life, and that faithfully unto the End. So was he the *surety of this* better Testament. But all things belonging hereunto will be handled at large in the place from whence as I said these are taken, as suitable unto our present occasion.

But some have other notions of these things. For they say, that *Christ by his Death, and his Obedience therein, whereby he offered himself a sacrifice of sweet smelling savour unto God, procured for us the New Covenant, or as one speaks, all that we have by the Death of Christ is, that thereunto we owe the Covenant of Grace. For herein he did and suffered what God required and freely appointed him to do and suffer. Not that the Justice of God required any such thing with respect unto their sins for whom he died, and in whose stead, or to bestead whom, he suffered, but what by a free Constitution of Divine Wisdom and Sovereignty was appointed unto him. Hereon, God was pleased to remit the Terms of the Old Covenant, and to*  
*enter*

enter into a New Covenant with mankind upon Terms suited unto our Reason, possible unto our Abilities, and every way advantageous unto us. For these Terms are Faith and sincere Obedience, or such an Assent unto the Truth of Divine Revelations, as is effectual in Obedience unto the Will of God contained in them, upon the encouragement given thereunto in the Promises of Eternal Life, or a future Reward made therein. On the performance of these Conditions our Justification, Adoption, and future Glory do depend; For they are that Righteousness before God, whereon he pardons our sins, and accepts our persons, as if we were perfectly Righteous. Wherefore by this procuring the New Covenant for us, which they ascribe unto the death of Christ, they intend the *abrogation* of the old Covenant, or of the Law, or at least such a *Derogation* from it, that it shall no more oblige us either unto sinless Obedience or Punishment, nor require a perfect Righteousness unto our Justification before God; and the Constitution of a new *Law of Obedience* accommodated unto our present state and condition, on whose observance all the Promises of the Gospel do depend.

Others say, that in the death of Christ there was real satisfaction made unto God; not to the Law, or unto God according to what the Law required; but unto God absolutely. That is, He did what God was well pleased and *satisfied* withall, without any respect unto his Justice or the Curse of the Law. And they add, that hereon the *whole Righteousness* of Christ is imputed unto us, so far, as that we are made Partakers of the Benefits thereof. And moreover, that the way of the Communication of them unto us, is by the *New Covenant* which by his *Death the Lord Christ procured*. For the *Conditions* of this Covenant are established in the Covenant it self, whereon God will bestow all the Benefits and Effects of it upon us, which are Faith and Obedience. Wherefore what the Lord Christ hath done for us is thus far accepted

ted as our *legal Righteousness*, as that God upon our Faith and Obedience with respect thereunto, doth release and pardon all *our sins of Omission and Commission*. Upon this pardon there is no need of any positive perfect Righteousness unto our Justification or Salvation, but our own *personal Righteousness* is accepted with God in the room of it, by virtue of the New Covenant which Christ hath procured. So is the Doctrine hereof stated by *Cursellæus*, and those that join with him, or follow him.

Sundry things there are in these Opinions that deserve an Examination; and they will most, if not all of them, occur unto us in our progress. That which alone we have occasion to enquire into with respect unto what we have discoursed concerning the Lord Christ *as surety of the Covenant*, and which is the Foundation of all that is asserted in them, is, *That Christ by his death procured the New Covenant for us*; which, as one says, *is all that we have thereby*; which if it should prove otherwise, we are not beholding unto it for any thing at all. But these things must be examined. And,

I. The Terms of *procuring the New Covenant* are ambiguous. It is not as yet (that I know of) by any declared how the Lord Christ *did procure it*; whether he did so by his *Satisfaction and Obedience*, as the meritorious cause of it, or by what other kind of *causality*. Unless this be stated we are altogether uncertain what Relation of the *New Covenant* unto the Death of Christ is intended. And to say that thereunto we *owe the New Covenant*, doth not mend the matter, but rather render the Terms more ambiguous. Neither is it declared whether the *Constitution* of the Covenant, or the *Communication* of the Benefits of it are intended. It is yet no less general, *That God was so well pleased with what Christ did, as that hereon he made and entered into a New Covenant with mankind*. This they may grant who yet deny the whole satisfaction and merit of Christ. If they mean that the Lord  
Christ

Christ by his Obedience and Suffering did meritoriously procure the making and establishing of the New Covenant, which was all that he so procured, and the entire effect of his death, what they say may be understood, but the whole Nature of the Mediation of Christ is overthrown thereby.

2. This Opinion is liable unto a great Prejudice, in that whereas it is in such a *Fundamental Article* of our Religion, and about that wherein the Eternal Welfare of the Church is so nearly concerned, there is no mention made of it in the *Scripture*. For is it not strange that if this be, as some speak, the sole effect of the Death of Christ, whereas sundry other things are frequently in the *Scripture* ascribed unto it, as the effects and fruits thereof, that this which is only so should be no where mentioned, neither in express words, nor such as will allow of this sense by any just or lawful consequence. Our Redemption, Pardon of sins, the Renovation of our Natures, our Sanctification, Justification, Peace with God, Eternal Life, are all joyntly and severally assigned thereunto in places almost without number. But it is no where said in the *Scripture*, that *Christ by his death, merited, procured, obtained, the New Covenant*; or that God should enter into a New Covenant with mankind; yea as we shall see, that which is contrary unto it, and inconsistent with it, is frequently asserted.

3. To clear the Truth herein, we must consider the several notions and causes of the New Covenant; with the true and real respect of the Death of Christ thereunto. And it is variously represented unto us.

1. In the Designation and Preparation of its Terms and Benefits in the Counsel of God. And this although it have the nature of an *Eternal Decree*, yet is it not the same with the Decree of Election, as some suppose. For that properly respects the subjects or persons for whom Grace and Glory are prepared. This is the Preparation of that Grace and

Glory, as to the way and manner of their communication. Some learned men do judge that this counsel and purpose of the Will of God, to give Grace and Glory in and by Jesus Christ unto the Elect in the way and by the means by him prepared, is formally the Covenant of Grace, or at least that the substance of the Covenant is comprized therein. But it is certain, that more is required to compleat the whole nature of a Covenant. Nor is this purpose or counsel of God called the Covenant in the Scripture, but is only proposed as the spring and fountain of it, *Eph. 1. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11.* Unto the full Exemplification of the Covenant of Grace, there is required the Declaration of this Counsel of Gods Will, accompanied with the means and powers of its Accomplishment, and the Prescription of the ways whereby we are so to be interested in it, and made partakers of the Benefits of it. But in the enquiry after the procuring cause of the New Covenant, it is the first thing that ought to come under consideration. For nothing can be the *procuring* cause of the Covenant which is not so of this spring and fountain of it, of this *Idea* of it in the mind of God, of the preparation of its Terms and Benefits. But this is no where in the Scripture affirmed to be the effect of the Death or Mediation of Christ; and to ascribe it thereunto, is to overthrow the whole freedom of eternal Grace and Love. Neither can any thing that is absolutely *Eternal*, as is this Decree and Counsel of God, be the effect of, or procured by, any thing that is external and temporal.

2. It may be considered with respect unto the *federal Transactions* between the Father and the Son, concerning the Accomplishment of this Counsel of his Will. What these were, wherein they did consist, I have declared at large; *Exercitat. Vol. 2.* Neither do I call this the *Covenant of Grace* absolutely, nor is it so called in the Scripture. But yet some will not distinguish between the Covenant of the Mediator  
and

and the Covenant of Grace, because the promises of the Covenant absolutely are said to be made to Christ, *Gal. 3. 16.* and he is the *πρῶτον δεκτικόν*, or first subject of all the Grace of it. But in the Covenant of the Mediator, Christ stands alone for himself, and undertakes for himself alone, and not as the Representative of the Church. But this he is in the Covenant of Grace. But this is that wherein it had its designed establishment as unto all the ways, means, and ends of its Accomplishment; and all things so disposed as that it might be effectual unto the eternal Glory of the Wisdom, Grace, Righteousness and Power of God. Wherefore the Covenant of Grace could not be *procured* by any means or cause, but that which was the *cause* of this Covenant of the Mediator, or of God the Father with the Son, as undertaking the work of Mediation. And as this is no where ascribed unto the *Death of Christ* in the Scripture, so to assert it, is contrary unto all spiritual Reason and Understanding: Who can conceive that Christ by his death should procure the *Agreement* between God and him, that he should dye.

3. With respect unto the *Declaration* of it by especial Revelation. This we may call Gods making or establishing of it, if we please; though *making* of the Covenant in Scripture, is applied principally, if not only, unto its execution or actual Application unto Persons, *2 Sam. 23. 5. Jerem. 32. 40.* This *Declaration* of the Grace of God, and the provision in the Covenant of the Mediator for the making of it effectual unto his Glory, is most usually called the *Covenant of Grace*. And this is twofold,

1. In the way of a singular and *absolute Promise*; so was it first declared unto, and established with *Adam*, and afterwards with *Abraham*. The Promise is the Declaration of the *Purpose of God* before declared, or the free Determination and Counsel of his Will, as to his dealing with sinners on the supposition of the *Fall*, and their forfeiture of their  
first

first Covenant state. Hereof the *Grace and Will of God* was the only cause, *Heb. 8. 8.* And the Death of Christ could not be the *means of its procurement*, For he himself and all that he was to do for us, was the substance of that Promise. And this Promise as it is declarative of the Purpose or Counsel of the Will of God, for the Communication of Grace and Glory unto sinners, in and by the mediation of Christ, according to the Ways and on the Terms prepared and disposed in his Sovereign Wisdom and Pleasure, is formally the New Covenant, though something yet is to be added to compleat its Application unto us. Now the substance of the *first Promise*, wherein the whole Covenant of Grace was virtually comprized, directly respected and expressed, the giving of him for the Recovery of Mankind from sin and misery by his death, *Gen. 3. 15.* Wherefore if he, and all the Benefits of his Mediation, his Death and all the Effects of it, be contained in the Promise of the Covenant, that is, in the Covenant it self, then was not his death the *procuring cause* of that Covenant, nor do we owe it thereunto.

2. In the *additional prescription* of the way and means whereby it is the Will of God, that we shall enter into a Covenant state with him, or be interessed in the Benefits of it. This being *virtually* comprized in the absolute Promise ( for every Promise of God doth tacitly require Faith and Obedience in us ) is expressed in other places by the way of the *Condition* required on our part. This is not the Covenant, but the *Constitution of the Terms* on our part, whereon we are made Partakers of it. Nor is the *Constitution of these Terms*, an effect of the death of Christ, or procured thereby. It is a meer effect of the *Sovereign Grace and Wisdom* of God. The things themselves as bestowed on us, communicated unto us, wrought in us by Grace, are all of them effects of the death of Christ; but the *Constitution of them to be the Terms and Conditions* of the Covenant is an Act of meer Sovereign

veraign Wisdom and Grace. *God so loved the world as to send his only begotten Son to dye, not that Faith and Repentance might be the means of Salvation, but that all his Elect might believe, and that all that believe might not perish, but have Life Everlasting.* But yet it is granted that the *Constitution of these Terms* of the Covenant doth respect the *federal Transaction* between the Father and the Son, wherein they were ordered to the praise of the Glory of Gods Grace; and so although their constitution was not the procurement of his Death, yet without respect unto it, it had not been. Wherefore the *sole cause of Gods making the New Covenant*, was the same with that of *giving Christ himself* to be our Mediator, namely, the *Purpose, Counsel, Goodness, Grace and Love of God*, as it is every where expressed in the Scripture.

4thly, The Covenant may be considered as unto the *actual Application* of the Grace, Benefit and Priviledges of it unto any persons, whereby they are made real partakers of them, or are taken into Covenant with God. And this alone in the Scripture is intended by Gods making a Covenant with any. It is not a *general Revelation*, or Declaration of the Terms and Nature of the Covenant ( which some call an universal conditional Covenant, on what Grounds they know best, seeing the very formal nature of making a Covenant with any, includes the actual Acceptation of it, and Participation of the Benefits of it by them ) but a Communication of the Grace of it, accompanied with a prescription of Obedience, that is Gods making his Covenant with any, as all Instances of it in the Scripture do declare.

It may be therefore enquired, *what respect the Covenant of Grace hath unto the Death of Christ, or what Influence it hath thereunto.*

I answer, supposing what is spoken of his being a *surety* thereof, it hath a threefold respect thereunto.

1. In that the Covenant, as the Grace and Glory of it were prepared in the Counsel of God, as the Terms of it, was fixed in the Covenant of the Mediator, and as it was declared in the Promise, was *confirmed, ratified,* and made irrevocable thereby. This our Apostle insists upon at large, *Heb.* 9. 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20. And he compares his Blood in his Death and Sacrifice of himself, unto the Sacrifices and their Blood whereby the *Old Covenant* was confirmed, purified, dedicated or established, *ver.* 18, 19. Now these Sacrifices did not *procure* that Covenant, or *prevail with God* to enter into it; but only ratified and confirmed it; and this was done in the New Covenant by the Blood of Christ.

2. He thereby underwent and performed all that which in the Righteousness and Wisdom of God was required, that the *Effects, Fruits, Benefits* and *Grace*, intended, designed, and prepared in the New Covenant might be effectually accomplished, and communicated unto sinners. Hence although he *procured not the Covenant* for us by his death, yet he was in his Person, Mediation, Life and Death, the only cause and means whereby the *whole Grace of the Covenant* is made effectual unto us. For,

3. All the *Benefits* of it were *procured* by him; that is, all the Grace, Mercy, Priviledges and Glory that God hath prepared in the Counsel of his Will, that were fixed as unto the way of this communication in the Covenant of the Mediator, and proposed in the Promises of it, are *purchased, merited,* and *procured* by his Death; and effectually communicated or applied unto all the Covenanters by virtue thereof, with others of his Mediatory Acts. And this is much more an eminent *procuring of the New Covenant*, than what is pretended about the procurement of its Terms and Conditions. For if he should have procured no more but this, if we owe this only unto his Mediation, that God would thereon, or did grant and establish this Rule, Law, and Promise, that who-  
ever

ever believed should be saved, it were possible that no one should be saved thereby; yea if he did no more, considering our state and condition, it was impossible that any one should so be.

To give the sum of these things, it is inquired with respect unto which of these considerations of the new Covenant, it is affirmed that it was *procured* by the Death of Christ. If it be said, that it is with respect unto the actual communication of all the Grace and Glory prepared in the Covenant, and proposed unto us in the Promises of it; it is most true. All the Grace and Glory promised in the Covenant was *purchased* for the Church by Jesus Christ. In this sense by his Death he procured the new Covenant. This the whole Scripture from the Beginning of it in the first Promise unto the end of it, doth bear witness unto. For it is in him alone that *God blesteth us with all spiritual Blessings in Heavenly things*. Let all the good things that are mentioned or promised in the Covenant expressly, or by just consequence, be summed up, and it will be no hard matter to demonstrate concerning them all, and that both joyntly and severally, that they were all *procured* for us by the Obedience and Death of Christ.

But this is not that which is intended. For most of this Opinion do deny, that the *Grace of the Covenant in Conversion unto God, the Remission of sins, Sanctification, Justification, Adoption*, and the like, are the effects or procurements of the Death of Christ. And they do on the other hand declare, that it is Gods *making of the Covenant* which they do intend: that is the contrivance of the terms and conditions of it, with their proposal unto mankind for their Recovery. But herein there is *ἡ ἀρχὴ*. For

1. The Lord Christ himself, and the whole work of his Mediation, as the Ordinance of God for the Recovery and Salvation of lost Sinners, is the first and *principal promise* of the

Covenant. So his Exhibition in the flesh, his work of Mediation therein with our deliverance thereby, was the subject of that first Promise, which virtually contained this whole Covenant. So he was of the Renovation of it unto *Abraham* when it was solemnly confirmed by the Oath of God, *Gal.* 3. 16, 17. And Christ did not by his Death procure the promise of his Death, nor of his Exhibition in the flesh, or his coming into the World, that he might dye.

2. The *making of this Covenant* is every where in the Scripture ascribed ( as is also the sending of Christ himself to dye ) unto the Love, Grace and Wisdom of God alone ; no where unto the Death of Christ, as the actual Communication of all Grace and Glory are. Let all the places be considered, where either the *giving of the Promise*, the sending of Christ, or the making of the Covenant are mentioned, either expressly or virtually, and in none of them are they assigned unto any other cause, but the Grace, Love, and Wisdom of God alone, all to be made effectual unto us, by the Mediation of Christ.

3. The assignation of the *sole end* of the Death of Christ to be the *procurement of the new Covenant* in the sense contended for, doth indeed evacuate all the vertue of the Death of Christ and of the Covenant it self. For ( 1 ) the Covenant which they intend, is nothing but the *Constitution* and proposal of new Terms and Conditions for life and salvation unto all men. Now whereas the acceptance and accomplishment of these conditions, depend upon the Wills of men no way determined by effectual Grace, it was possible that notwithstanding all Christ did by his Death, yet no one Sinner might be saved thereby, but that the whole end and design of God therein might be frustrate. ( 2 ) Whereas the substantial advantage of these conditions lieth herein, that God will now for the sake of Christ, accept of an Obedience, inferior unto that required in the Law, and so as that the  
Grace

Grace of Christ doth not raise up all things unto a Conformity and compliance with the Holiness and Will of God declared therein, but *accommodate all things* unto our present condition, nothing can be invented more dishonourable to Christ and the Gospel. For what doth it else but make Christ the *Minister of sin*, in disanulling the Holiness that the Law requires, or the Obligation of the Law unto it, without any provision of what might answer, or come into the Room of it, but that which is incomparably less worthy. Nor is it consistent with Divine Wisdom, Goodness, and Immutability, to appoint unto *mankind a Law of Obedience*, and cast them all under the severest penalty upon the Transgression of it, when he could in Justice and Honour, have given them such a Law of Obedience, whose observance might consist with *many failings* and sins. For if he have done that now, he could have done so before, which how far it reflects on the Glory of the Divine Properties might be easily manifested. Neither doth this fond Imagination comply with those Testimonies of Scripture, that the Lord Christ *came not to destroy the Law, but to fulfil it*, that he is the end of the Law, and that by Faith the Law is not disanulled but established.

Lastly, the Lord Christ was *the Mediator and Surety of the new Covenant*, in and by whom it was ratified, confirmed and established; and therefore by him the Constitution of it was not procured. For all the Acts of his Office belong unto that Mediation; And it cannot be well apprehended how any Act of Mediation for the Establishment of the Covenant and rendring it effectual, should procure it.

7. But to return from this *Digression*; That wherein all the precedent causes of the *Union* between Christ and Believers, whence they become one *mystical person*, do center, and whereby they are rendred a compleat foundation of the *Imputation of their sins unto him, and of his Righteousness unto them*, is the *Communication of his Spirit*, the same Spirit that

dwelleth in him, unto them, to abide in, to animate and guide the whole mystical Body and all its Members. But this hath of late been so much spoken unto, as that I shall do no more but mention it.

On the considerations insisted on, whereby the Lord Christ became one *mystical Person* with the Church, or bare the Person of the Church in what he did as Mediator, in the Holy Wise disposal of God as the Authour of the Law, the supreme Rector or Governour of all mankind, as unto their Temporal and Eternal concernments, and by his own consent, *the sins of all the Elect were imputed unto him.* This having been the Faith and Language of the Church in all Ages, and that derived from and founded in express Testimonies of Scripture, with all the Promises and Prefigurations of his Exhibition in the flesh from the beginning, cannot now with any Modesty be expressly denied. Wherefore the Socinians themselves grant that *our sins may be said to be imputed unto Christ*, and he to undergo the punishment of them, so far as that all things which befell him *Evil and Afflictive* in this life, with the *Death* which he underwent, were *occasioned by our sins.* For had not we sinned, there had been no need of, nor *occasion* for his suffering. But notwithstanding this confession they expressly deny his *satisfaction*, or that properly he underwent the punishment due unto our sins; wherein they deny also all Imputation of them unto him. Others say that *our sins were imputed unto him, quoad reatum pœnæ, but not quoad reatum culpæ.* But I must acknowledge that unto me this distinction gives *inanem sine mente sonum.* The substance of it is much insisted on by *Feuardentius, Dialog. 5. pag. 467.* And he is followed by others. That which he would prove by it, is, That the Lord Christ did not *present himself* before the Throne of God, with the *burden of our sins upon him*, so as to answer unto the *Justice* of God for them. Whereas therefore *reatus*, or *guilt*, may signifie either *Dignitatem pœnæ*

## *Thereon all our Sins were Imputed to him.* 277

or *obligationem ad pœnam*, as Bellarmine distinguisheth, *de Amiff. Grat. lib. 7. cap. 7.* with respect unto Christ, the latter only is to be admitted. And the main Argument he and others insist upon, is this; That if our sins be *imputed unto Christ*, as unto the *guilt* of the fault, as they speak, then he must be *polluted with them*, and thence be *denominated a sinner in every kind*. And this would be true, if our sins could be Communicated unto Christ by *Transfusion*, so as to be his inherently and subjectively. But their being so only by *Imputation* gives no countenance unto any such pretence. However there is a notion of *legal uncleanness*, where there is no *inherent defilement*. So the *Priest* who offered the *Red Heifer* to make Atonement, and he that burned her, were said to be *unclean*, Numb. 19. 7, 8. But hereon they say, that Christ dyed and suffered upon the *special Command of God*, not that his Death and Suffering were any way due upon the account of our sins; or required in Justice, which is utterly to overthrow the satisfaction of Christ:

Wherefore the design of this *distinction*, is to deny the *Imputation of the guilt of our sins unto Christ*, and then in what tolerable sense can they be said to be *imputed* unto him, I cannot understand. But we are not tyed up unto *Arbitrary distinctions*, and the sense that any are pleased to impose on the terms of them. I shall therefore first enquire into the meaning of these words, *guilt* and *guilty*, whereby we may be able to judge of what it is, which in this *Distinction* is intended.

The *Hebrews* have no other word to signify *guilt* or *guilty* but אשם. And this they use both for *sin*, the *guilt* of it, the *punishment* due unto it, and a *Sacrifice* for it. Speaking of the *guilt of Blood*, they use not any word to signify *guilt*, but only say לו דם it is *Blood to him*. So *David* prays deliver me מן דמי from *Blood*, which we render *Blood-guiltiness*, Psal. 51. 14. And this was, because by the  
Consti-

Constitution of God, he that was *guilty of Blood*, was to dye by the hand of the Magistrate, or of God himself. But **ἄσχαμ** *Ascham* is no where used for *guilt*, but it signifies the *Relation* of the *sin* intended unto punishment. And other significations of it will be in vain sought for in the old Testament.

In the new Testament, he that is guilty, is said to be **ἄσχομος**, *Rom. 3. 19.* that is, obnoxious to Judgment or vengeance for sin; one that **ἡ Δικη ζῆνός κ' εἶασεν**, as they speak, *Act. 28. 4.* whom *vengeance* will not suffer to go unpunished. And **ἐνοχ**, *1 Cor. 11. 27.* a word of the same signification. Once by **ὀφείλω**, *Matth. 23. 18.* to owe, to be indebted to Justice. To be obnoxious, liable unto Justice, Vengeance, Punishment for sin, is to be guilty.

*Reus*, guilty in the *Latine* is of a large signification. He who is *Crimini obnoxius*, or *Pane propter Crimen*, or *Voti debitor*, or *Promissi*, or *officij ex sponsione*, is called, *Reus*. Especially every *sponsor* or *Surety*, is *Reus* in the Law. *Cum servus pecuniam pro libertate pactus est, & ob eam rem, Reum dederit*, ( that is, *sponsorem, expromissorem* ) *quamvis servus ab alio manumissus est, Reus tamen obligabitur*. He is *Reus* who engageth himself for any other, as to the matter of his engagement. And the same is the use of the word in the best *Latine* Authors. *Opportuna loca dividenda Præfectis esse ac suæ quiq; partis tutandæ reus sit. Liv. de Bello Punic. lib. 5.* That every Captain should so take care of the Station committed to him, as that if any thing happened amiss, it should be *imputed* unto him. And the same Author again, *at quicumq; aut propinquitate aut affinitate regiam contigissent, aliæ culpæ rei trucidarentur*, should be guilty of the fault of another, ( by *Imputation* ) and suffer for it. So that in the *Latine* Tongue he is *Reus*, who for himself or any other is obnoxious unto Punishment or payment.

*Reatus* is a word of late Admission into the *Latine* Tongue,

Tongue, and was formed of *Reus*. So *Quintilian* informs us in his Discourse of the use of *obsolete and new words*. lib. 8. cap. 3. *Quæ vetera nunc sunt, fuerunt olim nova; quedam in usu perquam recentia.* *Messalla primus Reatum, munerarium Augustus dixerunt*; To which he adds *Piratica, Musica*, and some others then newly come into use. But *Reatus* at its first Invention was of no such signification as it is now applied unto. I mention it only to shew, that we have no reason to be obliged unto mens *Arbitrary use of words*. Some Lawyers first used it, *pro crimine*, a fault, exposing unto Punishment. But the Original Invention of it continued by long use, was to express the *outward state* and condition of him who was *Reus*, after he was first charged in a cause criminal before he was acquitted or condemned. Those among the *Romans* who were made *Rei* by any publick Accusation, did betake themselves unto a *poor squalid Habit*, a sorrowful countenance, suffering their Hair and Beards to go undressed; Hereby on Custome and Usage, the people who were to judge on their cause, were enclined to compassion. And *Milo* furthered his sentence of Banishment, because he would not submit to this custom which had such an appearance of *Pusillanimity* and baseness of Spirit. This state of *sorrow and trouble* so expressed, they called *Reatus* and nothing else. It came afterwards to denote their state who were committed unto custody in order unto their Trial, when the Government ceased to be *popular*, wherein alone the other Artifice was of use. And if this word be of any use in our present Argument, it is to express the state of men after *Conviction of sin*, before their Justification. That is their *Reatus*, the condition wherein the proudest of them cannot avoid to express their inward sorrow and anxiety of mind, by some outward evidences of them. Beyond this we are not obliged by the use of this word, but must consider the thing it self which now we intend to express thereby.

Guilt in the Scripture is the Respect of *sin* unto the sanction of the Law, whereby the sinner becomes obnoxious unto punishment. And to be guilty is to be ὑπόδικος τῷ Θεῷ, liable unto punishment for sin, from God, as the supreme Lawgiver and Judge of all. And so guilt or *Reatus* is well defined to be *obligatio ad pœnam, propter culpam, aut admissam in se, aut imputatam, juste aut injuste*. For so Bathsheba says unto David, that she and her Son Solomon should be חַיִּימֵיהֶם Sinners, that is, be esteemed guilty or liable unto punishment for some evil laid unto their charge, 1 Kings 1. 21. And the distinction of *Dignitas pœnæ*, and *obligatio ad pœnam*, is but the same thing in divers words. For both do but express the Relation of sin unto the sanction of the Law, or if they may be conceived to differ, yet are they inseparable; for there can be no *obligatio ad pœnam*, where there is not *dignitas pœnæ*.

Much less is there any thing of weight in the distinction of *Reatus culpæ*, and *Reatus pœnæ*. For this *Reatus culpæ* is nothing but *dignitas pœnæ propter culpam*. Sin hath other considerations, namely, its *formal nature*, as it is a Transgression of the Law; and the *stain* or filth that it brings upon the Soul; but the *guilt of it*, is nothing but its respect unto punishment from the sanction of the Law. And so indeed *Reatus culpæ*, is *Reatus pœnæ*; the guilt of sin, is its desert of punishment. And where there is not this *Reatus culpæ*, there can be no *pœna*, no punishment properly so called. For *pœna* is *vindicta noxæ*, the revenge due to sin. So therefore there can be no punishment, nor *Reatus pœnæ*, the guilt of it, but where there is *Reatus culpæ*; or sin considered with its guilt. And the *Reatus pœnæ*, that may be supposed without the guilt of sin, is nothing but that *obnoxiousness unto afflictive evil* on the occasion of sin, which the *Socinians* admit with respect unto the suffering of Christ, and yet execrate his satisfaction.

And if this distinction should be apprehended to be of  
*Reatus*

*Reatus*, from its formal respect unto sin and punishment, it must in both parts of the Distinction be of the same signification, otherwise there is an *equivocation* in the subject of it. But *reatus pœnæ* is a liableness, an obnoxiousness unto punishment according to the sentence of the Law; that whereby a sinner becomes ἰσὸδικῶ τῷ θεῷ. And then *Reatus culpæ* must be an *obnoxiousness unto sin*, which is uncouth. There is therefore no Imputation of sin, where there is no Imputation of its Guilt. For the Guilt of Punishment, which is not its respect unto the desert of sin, is a plain fiction, there is no such thing in *rerum natura*. There is no Guilt of sin, but its Relation unto Punishment.

That therefore which we affirm herein is, That our sins were so transferred on Christ, as that thereby he became **ΟΥΝ** ἰσὸδικῶ τῷ θεῷ, *Reus*, responsible unto God, and obnoxious unto punishment in the justice of God for them. He was *alienæ culpæ reus*. Perfectly innocent in himself; but took our Guilt on him, or our obnoxiousness unto punishment for sin. And so he may be, and may be said to be the *greatest Debtor* in the World who never borrowed nor owed one *farthing* on his own account, if he become surety for the *greatest Debt* of others. So *Paul* became a *Debtor* unto *Philemon*, upon his undertaking for *Onesimus*, who before owed him nothing.

And two things concurred unto this Imputation of sin unto Christ. (1) The Act of God imputing it. (2) The voluntary Act of Christ himself in the undertaking of it, or admitting of the charge.

I. The Act of God in this Imputation of the Guilt of our sins unto Christ, is expressed by his *laying all our Iniquities upon him, making him to be sin for us*, who knew no sin, and the like. For (1) as the supream Governour, Law-giver, and Judge of all, unto whom it belonged to take care that his holy Law was observed, or the offenders punished, He admitted upon the Transgression of it, the *spouision* and *sure-*

*tiship* of Christ to answer for the sins of men, *Heb.* 10. 5, 6, 7. (2) In order unto this End, *he made him under the Law*, or gave the Law power over him, to demand of him, and inflict on him the penalty which was due unto the sins of them for whom he undertook, *Gal.* 3. 13. *chap.* 4. 4, 5. (3) For the Declaration of the Righteousness of God in this setting forth of Christ to be a Propitiation, and to bear our Iniquities, the *Guilt* of our sins was *transferred* unto him in an Act of the Righteous Judgment of God, accepting and esteeming of him as the *Guilty person*; as it is with publick sureties in every case.

2. The Lord Christs *voluntary susception* of the state and condition of a *surety*, or undertaker for the Church, to appear before the Throne of Gods Justice for them, to answer whatever was laid unto their charge, was required hereunto. And this he did absolutely. There was a concurrence of his *own Will* in and unto all those Divine Acts whereby he and the Church were constituted one *mystical person*. And of his own Love and Grace did he as our surety stand in our stead before God, when he made Inquisition for sin; He took it on himself, as unto the punishment which it deserved. Hence it became just and righteous that he should suffer, *the just for the unjust, that he might bring us unto God*. For if this be not so, I desire to know what is become of the *Guilt of the sins* of Believers; If it were not transferred on Christ, it remains still upon themselves, or it is nothing. It will be said that Guilt is taken away by the *free pardon of sin*. But if so, there was no need of *punishment* for it at all; which is indeed what the *Socinians* plead, but by others is not admitted. For if punishment be not for Guilt, it is not punishment.

But it is fiercely objected against what we have asserted, that if the *Guilt of our sins* was imputed unto Christ, then was he *constituted a sinner* thereby; for it is the Guilt of sin that makes any one to be truly a sinner. This is urged by

*Bellarmin; lib. 2. de Justificat.* not for its own sake, but to disprove the Imputation of his Righteousness unto us, as it is continued by others with the same design. For, saith he, *if we be made Righteous, and the Children of God through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, then was he made a sinner, & quod horret animus cogitare, filius Diaboli; by the Imputation of the Guilt of our sins, or our Unrighteousness unto him.* And the same Objection is pressed by others, with instances of consequences, which for many Reasons I heartily wish had been forborn. But I answer,

1. Nothing is more absolutely true, nothing is more sacredly or assuredly believed by us, then, that nothing which Christ did or suffered, nothing that he undertook or underwent, did or could constitute him, *subjectively, inherently,* and thereon *personally* a sinner, or guilty of any sin of his own. To bear the Guilt or Blame of other mens faults, to be *alienæ culpæ reus*, makes no man a sinner, unless he did unwisely or irregularly undertake it. But that Christ should admit of any thing of sin in himself, as it is absolutely inconsistent with the *Hypostatical Union*, so it would render him unmeet for all other Duties of his Office, *Heb. 7. 25, 26.* And I confess it hath always seemed scandalous unto me, that *Socinus, Crellius,* and *Grotius*, do grant that in some sense *Christ suffered for his own sins*, and would prove it from that very place wherein it is positively denied, *Heb. 7. 27.* This ought to be sacredly fixed, and not a word used, nor thought entertained of any possibility of the contrary, upon any supposition whatever.

2. None ever dreamed of a *Transfusion* or propagation of sin from us unto Christ, such as there was from *Adam* unto us. For *Adam* was a common person unto us, we are not so to Christ; yea he is so to us; and the Imputation of our sins unto him, is a singular Act of Divine Dispensation, which no evil consequence can ensue upon.

3. To imagine such an Imputation of our sins unto Christ, as that thereon they should *cease to be our sins*, and become his absolutely, is to overthrow that which is affirmed. For on that supposition Christ would not suffer for our sins, for they ceased to be ours, antecedently unto his suffering. But the *Guilt of them* was so transferred unto him, that through his suffering for it, it might be pardoned unto us.

These things being premised, I say,

1. There is in sin a Transgression of the Preceptive part of the Law, and there is an obnoxiousness unto the Punishment from the Sanction of it. It is the first that gives sin its *formal nature*, and where that is not subjectively, no person can be constituted *formally* a sinner. However, any one may be so *denominated* as unto some certain end or purpose, yet without this, formally a sinner none can be, whatever be imputed unto them. And where that is, no *non-imputation* of sin as unto punishment, can free the person in whom it is, from being formally a sinner. When *Bathsheba* told *David* that she and her Son *Solomon* should be חַיִּיִּים *sinners*, by having crimes laid unto their charge; and when *Judah* told *Jacob*, that he would be a *sinner before him always* on the account of any evil that befell *Benjamin*, (it should be imputed unto him) yet neither of them could thereby be constituted a sinner *formally*. And on the other hand, when *Shimei* desired *David* not to impute sin unto him, whereby he escaped present punishment, yet did not that *non-imputation* free him formally from being a sinner. Wherefore sin under this consideration as a *Transgression of the Preceptive part of the Law*, cannot be communicated from one unto another, unless it be by the propagation of a vitiated Principle or Habit. But yet neither so will the *personal sin* of one as inherent in him, ever come to be the personal sin of another. *Adam* hath upon his personal sin communicated a vitious, depraved, and corrupted nature unto all his Posterity; and

and besides, the guilt of his actual sin is imputed unto them, as if it had been committed by every one of them. But yet his *particular personal sin*, neither ever did, nor ever could become the personal sin of any one of them, any otherwise than by the *Imputation* of its guilt unto them. Wherefore our sins neither are, nor can be so imputed unto Christ, as that they should become *subjectively* his, as they are a *Transgression of the Preceptive part of the Law*. A Physical Translocation or Transfusion of sin is in this case naturally and spiritually impossible; and yet on a supposition thereof alone, do the *horrid consequences* mentioned depend. But the *guilt of sin* is an external respect of it, with regard unto the sanction of the Law only. This is separable from sin, and if it were not so, no one sinner could either be pardoned or saved. It may therefore be made anothers by *Imputation*, and yet that other not rendered *formally* a sinner thereby. This was that which was imputed unto Christ, whereby he was rendered obnoxious unto the Curse of the Law. For it was impossible that the Law should pronounce any accursed but the *guilty*; nor would do so, *Deut. 27. 26.*

2. There is a great difference between the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ* unto us, and the *Imputation of our sins* unto Christ; so as that he cannot in the same manner be said to be *made a sinner* by the one, as we are made *Righteous* by the other. For our sin was imputed unto Christ only, as he was our *Surety* for a time, to this end, that he might take it away, destroy it and abolish it. It was never imputed unto him, so as to make any alteration absolutely in his personal state and condition. But his Righteousness is imputed unto us, to abide with us, to be ours always, and to make a total change in our state and condition as unto our *Relation* unto God. Our sin was imputed unto him; only for a *season*, not absolutely, but as he was a Surety, and unto the special end of destroying it; and taken on him, on this condition that his  
Righteous-

Righteousness should be made ours for ever. All things are otherwise in the Imputation of his Righteousness unto us, which respects us absolutely, and not under a *temporary* capacity, abides with us for ever, changeth our state and relation unto God, and is an effect of super-abounding Grace.

But it will be said, that if our sins as to the *guilt of them* were imputed unto Christ, then God must *hate Christ*. For he *hateth the guilty*. I know not well how I come to mention these things, which indeed I look upon as cavils, such as men may *multiply* if they please, against any part of the mysteries of the Gospel. But seeing it is mentioned, it may be spoken unto. And

1. It is certain that the Lord Christ's taking on him the guilt of our sins, was an high act of Obedience unto God, *Heb.* 10. 5, 6. And for which the *Father loved him*, *Joh.* 10. 17, 18. There was therefore no reason why God should *hate Christ*, for his taking on him our *Debt* and the payment of it, in an Act of the highest *Obedience* unto his will. ( 2 ) God in this matter is considered as a *Reſtor*, *Ruler* and *Judge*. Now it is not required of the severest Judge, that as a Judge he should *hate the guilty* person, no although he be guilty Originally by *Inhabſion* and not by Imputation. As such, he hath no more to do, but consider the guilt, and pronounce the sentence of punishment. But ( 3 ) suppose a person out of an *Heroick* generosity of mind should become an *Αντιψυχος* for another, for his friend, for a good man, so as to answer for him with his life, as *Judah* undertook to be for *Benjamin* as to his liberty, which when a man hath lost, he is civilly dead, and *capite diminutus*, would the most *cruel Tyrant* under Heaven that should take away his life, in that case *hate him*; would he not rather admire his worth and vertue. As such an one it was that Christ suffered, and no otherwise. ( 4 ) All the force of this exception depends on the ambiguity of the word *hate*. For it may signifie either an averſation or detesta-

testation of mind, or only a *will of punishing*, as in God mostly it doth. In the first sense there was no ground why God should *hate Christ* on this Imputation of guilt unto him; whereby he became *non propria sed alienæ culpæ Reus*. Sin inherent renders the Soul polluted, abominable, and the only Object of *Divine Aversion*. But for him who was perfectly Innocent, Holy, Harmless, undefiled in himself, who did no sin, neither was there guile found in his mouth, to take upon him the guilt of other sins, thereby to comply with and accomplish *the design of God* for the manifestation of his Glory and infinite Wisdom, Grace, Goodness, Mercy, and Righteousness, unto the certain expiation and destruction of sin, nothing could render him more glorious and *lovely* in the sight of God or man. But for a *will of punishing in God*, where sin is imputed, none can deny it, but they must therewithal openly disavow the satisfaction of Christ.

The heads of some few of those Arguments wherewith the Truth we have asserted is confirmed, shall close this Discourse.

1. Unless the *guilt of sin* was imputed unto Christ, sin was not imputed unto him in any sense; For the punishment of sin is not sin; nor can those who are otherwise minded, declare what it is of sin, that is imputed. But the Scripture is plain, that *God laid on him the Iniquity of us all*, and made him to be sin for us, which could not otherwise be but by Imputation.

2. There can be no *punishment* but with respect unto the *guilt of sin* personally contracted, or imputed. It is guilt alone that gives what is materially evil and afflictive, the *formal* nature of punishment and nothing else. And therefore those who understand full well the *Harmony* of things and Opinions, and are free to express their minds, do constantly declare, that if one of these be denied, the other must be so also; and if one be admitted they must both be

fo. If guilt was not imputed unto Christ, he could not, as they plead well enough, undergo the punishment of sin; much he might do and suffer on the occasion of sin, but undergo the punishment due unto sin he could not. And if it should be granted that the guilt of sin was imputed unto him, they will not deny but that he underwent the punishment of it; and if he underwent the punishment of it, they will not deny but that the guilt of it was imputed unto him; For these things are inseparably related.

3. Christ was made a *Curse for us*, the *Curse of the Law*; as is expressly declared, *Gal. 3. 13, 14*. But the Curse of the Law respects the guilt of sin only; So as that where that is not, it cannot take place in any sense, and where that is, it doth inseparably attend it, *Deut. 27. 26*.

4. The express Testimonies of the Scripture unto this purpose cannot be evaded, without an open wresting of their words and sense. So God is said to *make all our Iniquities to meet upon him*; and he bare them on him as his burden, for so the word signifies, *Isa. 53. 6*. God hath laid on him, אָרַם עוֹן כָּלֵנוּ the *Iniquity*, that is, the guilt of us all, *ver. 11*. יְעוֹנַח־הוּא יִסְבֵּל and their sin or guilt shall he bear. For that is the intendment of עוֹן, where joyed with any other word that denotes sin as it is in those places, *Psal. 32. 5*: thou forgavest עוֹן חַטָּאתַי the *Iniquity of my sin*, that is, the guilt of it, which is that alone that is taken away by pardon. That his Soul was made an Offering for the guilt of sin, that he was made sin, that sin was condemned in his flesh, &c.

5. This was represented in all the Sacrifices of old, especially the great *Anniversary*, on the day of expiation, with the Ordinance of the *Scape Goat*, as hath been before declared.

6. Without a supposition hereof it cannot be understood, how the Lord Christ should be our Ἀντίτυπον or suffer ἀντὶ ἡμῶν, in our stead, unless we will admit the exposition of Mr. Ho-

a late *Writer*, who reckoning up how many things the Lord Christ did in our stead, adds as the sense thereof, *that is to bestead us*; then which if he can invent any thing more *fond and senseless*, he hath a singular faculty in such an Employment.

---

## CHAP. IX.

*The formal cause of Justification; or, The Righteousness on the Account whereof Believers are justified before God. Objections answered.*

**T**He principal differences about the Doctrine of Justification are reducible unto three Heads. (1) The *nature of it*; namely, whether it consist in an *internal change* of the Person justified by the infusion of an Habit of inherent Grace or Righteousness; or whether it be a *Forensic Act*, in the judging, esteeming, declaring, and pronouncing such a person to be Righteous, thereon absolving him from all his sins, giving unto him Right and Title unto life. Herein we have to do only with those of the *Church of Rome*, all others, both *Protestants* and *Socinians* being agreed on the *Forensic* sense of the word, and the nature of the thing signified thereby. And this I have already spoken unto, so far as our present design doth require, and that I hope with such evidence of Truth, as cannot well be gainfayed. Nor may it be supposed that we have too long insisted thereon, as an opinion which is obsolete, and long since sufficiently confuted.

futed. I think much otherwise, and that those who avoid the *Romanists* in these Controversies, will give a greater appearance of fear, than of contempt. For when all is done, *if free Justification through the Blood of Christ* and the Imputation of his Righteousness, be not able to preserve its station, in the minds of men, the *Popish* Doctrine of Justification must and will return upon the world, with all the concomitants and consequences of it. Whilst any knowledge of the *Law* or *Gospel* is continued amongst us, the Consciences of men will at one time or other, living or dying, be really affected with a sense of sin, as unto its guilt and danger. Hence that Trouble and those Disquietments of mind will ensue, as will force men, be they never so unwilling, to seek after some Relief and Satisfaction. And what will not men attempt, who are reduced to the condition expressed, *Micah*. 6. 7, 8. Wherefore in this case, *if the true and only relief* of distressed Consciences, of sinners who are weary and heavy laden be hid from their eyes; if they have no apprehension of, nor trust in that which alone they may oppose unto the sentence of the Law, and interpose between Gods Justice and their Souls, wherein they may take shelter from the storms of that wrath *which abideth on them* that believe not; they will betake themselves unto any thing which confidently tenders them present ease and relief. Hence many persons living all their days in an *ignorance of the Righteousness of God*, are oftentimes on their *sick Beds*, and in their *dying hours*, profelyted unto a confidence in the ways of Rest and Peace, which the *Romanists* impose upon them. For such seasons of advantage do they wait for, unto the Reputation as they suppose of their own Zeal, in truth unto the scandal of Christian Religion. But finding at any time the Consciences of men under disquietments, and ignorant of, or disbelieving that *Heavenly relief* which is provided in the Gospel, they are ready with their Applications and Medicines,

cines, having on them pretended *Approbations* of the experience of many Ages, and an innumerable company of devout Souls in them. Such is their *Doctrine of Justification*, with the Addition of those other Ingredients of Confession, Absolution, Penances or Commutations, Aids from Saints and Angels, especially the *blessed Virgin*, all warmed by the *Fire of Purgatory*, and confidently Administred unto Persons, sick of Ignorance, Darkness and Sin. And let none please themselves in the Contempt of these things. If the truth concerning *Evangelical Justification* be once disbelieved among us, or obliterated by any *Artifices*, out of the minds of men, unto these things at one time or other, they must and will betake themselves. For the new *Schemes* and Projections of the Justification which some at present would supply us withal, they are no way suited, nor able to give Relief or Satisfaction unto a Conscience really troubled for Sin, and seriously enquiring how it may have Rest and Peace with God. I shall take the boldness therefore to say, whoever be offended at it; that if we lose the *antient Doctrine of Justification through Faith in the Blood of Christ, and the Imputation of his Righteousness unto us*, publick profession of Religion, will quickly issue in *Popery*, or *Atheism*, or at least in what is the next door unto it, *ὃ τὰ πάντα μὲν δὲ τὰ πάντα.*

The second principal Controversie is about the *formal cause of Justification*, as it is expressed and stated by those of the *Roman Church*. And under these terms some Protestant Divines have consented to debate the matter in difference. I shall not interpose into a strife of words. So the *Romanists* will call, that which we enquire after. Some of ours say the Righteousness of Christ imputed; some, the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, is the *formal cause* of our Justification; some, that there is no *formal cause of Justification*, but this is that which supplies the place and use of a *formal cause*, which is the Righteousness of Christ. In none of

these things will I concern my self, though I judge what was mentioned in the last place, to be most proper and significant.

The substance of the enquiry wherein alone we are concerned is; *what is that Righteousness whereby, and wherewith, a Believing sinner, is justified before God*; or whereon he is accepted with God, hath his sins pardoned, is received into Grace and Favour, and hath a Title given him unto the Heavenly Inheritance. I shall no otherwise propose this enquiry, as knowing that it contains the substance of what convinced sinners do look after in and by the Gospel.

And herein it is agreed by all, the *Socinians* only excepted, that the *Procuratorial* or *procuring* cause of the pardon of our sins and acceptance with God, is the satisfaction and merit of Christ. Howbeit it cannot be denied, but that some retaining the *names* of them, do seem to renounce or disbelieve the *things* themselves. But we need not to take any notice thereof, until they are free more plainly to express their minds. But as concerning the Righteousness it self enquired after, there seems to be a difference among them, who yet all deny it to be the *Righteousness of Christ* imputed unto us. For those of the *Roman Church* plainly say, that upon the infusion of an habit of Grace, with the expulsion of sin and the Renovation of our natures thereby, which they call the *first Justification*, we are actually justified before God, by *our own works of Righteousness*. Hereon they dispute about the merit and satisfactoriness of those works, with their condignity of the Reward of eternal life. Others as the *Socinians* openly disclaim *all merit in our works*; only some, out of Reverence as I suppose, unto the *Antiquity* of the word, and under the shelter of the Ambiguity of its signification, have faintly attempted an accommodation with it. But in the substance of what they assent unto this purpose, to the best of my understanding they are all agreed. For what the *Papists* call *Justitia Operum*, the Righteousness of works, they call a *personal inherent*  
Evan-

*Evangelical Righteousness*, whereof we have spoken before. And whereas the *Papists* say, that this Righteousness of Works is not absolutely perfect, nor in it-self able to justify us in the sight of God, but owes all its worth and dignity unto this purpose unto the merit of Christ, they affirm that this *Evangelical Righteousness* is the condition whereon we enjoy the Benefits of the Righteousness of Christ, in the pardon of our sins, and the acceptance of our Persons before God. But as unto those who will acknowledge *no other Righteousness* wherewith we are justified before God, the meaning is the same, whether we say that *on the Condition of this Righteousness* we are made partakers of the Benefits of the Righteousness of Christ; or that *it is the Righteousness of Christ* which makes this *Righteousness* of ours accepted with God. But these things must afterwards more particularly be enquired into.

3. The third Enquiry wherein there is not an Agreement in this matter is, upon a supposition of a necessity, that he who is to be justified, should one way or other be *interested in the Righteousness of Christ*, what it is that on our part is required thereunto. This some say to be *Faith alone*, others *Faith and Works also*, and that in the same kind of necessity and use. That whose consideration we at present undertake, is the second thing proposed. And indeed, herein lies the substance of the whole controversy about our Justification before God, upon the determination and stating whereof, the determination of all other incident Questions doth depend.

This therefore is that which herein I affirm. *The Righteousness of Christ* (in his Obedience and Suffering for us) *imputed unto Believers, as they are united unto him by his spirit, is that Righteousness whereon they are justified before God, on the Account whereof their sins are pardoned, and a Right is granted them unto the Heavenly Inheritance.*

This Position is such as wherein the substance of that Doctrine in this important Article of *Evangelical Truth* which

we plead for, is plainly and fully expressed. And I have chosen the rather thus to express it, because it is that *Thesis* where the *Learned Davenant* laid down that common Doctrine of the Reformed Churches whose defence he undertook. This is the shield of Truth in the whole cause of Justification, which whilst it is preserved safe, we need not trouble our selves about the Differences that are among Learned men, about the most proper stating and declaration of some *lesser* concernments of it. This is the Refuge, the only Refuge of distressed Consciences, wherein they may find Rest and Peace.

For the confirmation of this Assertion, I shall do these three things. (1) *Reflect* on what is needful unto the Explanation of it. (2) *Answer* the most important general Objections against it. (3) *Prove* the Truth of it by Arguments and Testimonies of the holy Scripture.

As to the first of these, or what is necessary unto the Explanation of this Assertion, it hath been sufficiently spoken unto in our foregoing Discourses. The Heads of some things only shall at present be called over.

I. The Foundation of the *Imputation* asserted is, Union. Hereof there are many Grounds and Causes as hath been declared. But that which we have immediate respect unto as the Foundation of this Imputation, is that whereby the Lord Christ and Believers do actually *coalesce* into *one mystical Person*. This is by the Holy Spirit inhabiting in him as the Head of the Church in all fulness, and in all Believers according to their measure, whereby they became *members of his mystical Body*. That there is such an Union between Christ and Believers, is the Faith of the *Catholick Church*, and hath been so in all Ages. Those who seem in our days to deny it or question it, either know not what they say, or their minds are influenced by *their Doctrine*, who deny the Divine Persons of the Son, and of the Spirit. Upon supposition of  
this

this *Union*, Reason will grant the *Imputation* pleaded for to be reasonable; at least, that there is such a peculiar Ground for it, as is not to be exemplified in any things natural or political among men.

2. The Nature of *Imputation* hath been fully spoken unto before, and thereunto I refer the Reader for the understanding of what is intended thereby.

3. That which is imputed is the *Righteousness of Christ*; and briefly I understand hereby, his whole Obedience unto God in all that he did and suffered for the Church. This I say is *imputed* unto Believers, so as to become their only Righteousness before God unto the Justification of Life.

If beyond these things any *Expressions* have been made use of in the Explanation of this Truth, which have given occasion unto any Differences or Contests, although they may be true and defensible against Objections, yet shall not I concern my self in them. The *substance* of the Truth as laid down, is that whose Defence I have undertaken, and where that is granted or consented unto, I will not contend with any about their way and methods of its Declaration, nor defend the Terms and Expressions that have by any been made use of therein. For instance. Some have said, that *what Christ did and suffered, is so imputed unto us, as that we are judged and esteemed in the sight of God to have done or suffered our selves in him.* This I shall not concern my self in. For although it may have a sound sense given unto it, and is used by some of the Antients, yet because *offence* is taken at it, and the *substance* of the Truth we plead for is better otherwise expressed, it ought not to be contended about. For we do not say that God *judgeth* or esteemeth that we did and suffered in our own persons what Christ did and suffered, but only that he did it and suffered it in our stead. Hereon God makes a Grant and Donation of it unto Believers upon their Believing, unto their Justification before him. And  
the

the like may be said of many other Expressions of the like nature.

These things being premised, I proceed unto the consideration of the *general objections* that are urged against the Imputation we plead for. And I shall insist only on some of the principal of them, and whereinto all others may be resolved; for it were endless to go over all that any mans Invention can suggest unto him of this kind. And some general considerations we must take along with us herein. As,

1. The *Doctrine of Justification* is a part, yea an eminent part of the *mystery of the Gospel*. It is no marvel therefore if it be not so exposed unto the *common notions* of Reason, as some would have it to be. There is more required unto the true spiritual understanding of such mysteries; yea unless we intend to *renounce the Gospel*, it must be asserted, that Reason as it is corrupted, and the mind of man destitute of Divine supernatural Revelation, do *dislike* every such Truth, and rise up in Enmity against it. So the Scripture directly affirms, *Rom. 8. 7. 1 Cor. 2. 14.*

2. Hence are the *Minds and Inventions of men* wonderfully fertile in coyning Objections against *Evangelical Truths*, and raising cavils against them. Seldom to this purpose do they want an endless number of *sophistical Objections*, which because they know no better, they themselves judge insoluble. For *carnal Reason* being once set at liberty under the *false notion of Truth*, to act it self freely and boldly against *spiritual mysteries*, is subtile in its arguings, and pregnant in its Invention of them. How *endless*, for instance, are the *Sophisms* of the *Socinians* against the *Doctrine of the Trinity*, and how do they triumph in them as unanswerable. Under the shelter of them they despise the force of the most evident Testimonies of the Scripture, and those multiplied on all occasions. In like manner they deal with the *Doctrine of the satisfaction of Christ*, as the *Pelagians* of old did with that of his

his Grace. Wherefore he that will be startled at the Appearance of *subtile or plausible Objections*, against any Gospel mysteries that are plainly revealed, and sufficiently *attested* in the Scripture, is not likely to come unto much stability in his Profession of them.

3. The most of the Objections which are levied against the Truth in this cause, do arise from the want of a due comprehension of the *order of the work of Gods Grace*, and of our compliance therewithall in a way of Duty as was before observed. For they consist in opposing those things one to another as inconsistent, which in their proper place and order are not only consistent, but *mutually subservient* unto one another; and are found so in the Experience of them that truly believe. Instances hereof have been given before, and others will immediately occur. Taking the consideration of these things with us, we may see as the Rise, so of what force the Objections are.

4. Let it be considered that the Objections which are made use of against the Truth we assert, are all of them taken from *certain consequences*, which as it is supposed, will ensue on the Admission of it. And as this is the only *expedient* to perpetuate controversies, and make them endless, so to my best observation I never yet met with any one, but that to give an Appearance of force unto the absurdity of the consequences from whence he argues, he framed his *suppositions*, or the state of the Question, unto the *disadvantage* of them whom he opposed; a course of proceeding which I wonder Good men are not either weary, or ashamed of.

1. It is objected, that the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ doth overthrow all Remission of sins on the part of God*. This is pleaded for by *Socinus, De Servator. lib. 4. cap. 2, 3, 4.* and by others it is also made use of. A confident Charge this seems to them who stedfastly believe that without this *Imputation*, there could be no *Remission of sin*. But they

say, That he who hath a Righteousness imputed unto him that is absolutely perfect, so as to be made his own, needs no pardon, hath no sin that should be forgiven, nor can he ever need forgiveness. But because this Objection will occur unto us again in the vindication of one of our ensuing Arguments, I shall here speak briefly unto it.

1. *Grotius* shall answer this Objection; saith he, *Cum duo nobis peperisse Christum dixerimus, impunitatem & premium, illud satisfactioni, hoc merito Christi distincte tribuit vetus Ecclesia. Satisfactio consistit in peccatorum Translatione, meritum in perfectissima Obedientia pro nobis præstita Imputatione. Præfat. ad lib. de satisfact.* Whereas we have said that Christ hath procured or brought forth two things for us, freedom from punishment, and a reward, the antient Church attributes the one of them distinctly unto his satisfaction, the other unto his merit. Satisfaction consisteth in the Translation of sins (from us unto him) merit in the Imputation of his most perfect Obedience performed for us, unto us. In his Judgment the Remission of sins, and the Imputation of Righteousness, were as consistent as the satisfaction and merit of Christ, as indeed they are.

2. Had we not been sinners, we should have had no need of the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ to render us Righteous before God. Being so, the first End for which it is imputed, is the pardon of sin; without which we could not be Righteous by the Imputation of the most perfect Righteousness. These things therefore are consistent, namely, that the satisfaction of Christ should be imputed unto us for the pardon of sin, and the Obedience of Christ be imputed unto us, to render us Righteous before God. And they are not only consistent, but neither of them singly were sufficient unto our Justification.

2. It is pleaded by the same Author and others; That the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, overtkroweth all necessi-

ty of Repentance for sin, in order unto the Remission or Pardon thereof, yea rendreth it altogether needles. For what need hath he of Repentance for sin, who by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, is esteemed compleatly Just and Righteous in the sight of God. If Christ satisfied for all sins in the Person of the Eleēt; if as our Surety he paid all our Debts, and if his Righteousness be made ours before we repent, then is all Repentance needles. And these things are much enlarged on by the same Author in the place before-mentioned.

*Ans. (1)* It must be remembred, that we require *Evangelical Faith* in order of nature *antecedently* unto our Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, which also is the condition of its continuation. Wherefore whatever is necessary thereunto, is in like manner required of us in order unto Believing. Amongst these, there is a *sorrow for sin*, and a *Repentance* of it. For whosoever is convinced of sin in a due manner, so as to be sensible of its Evil and Guilt, both as in its own nature it is contrary unto the preceptive part of the Holy Law, and in the necessary consequences of it, in the wrath and curse of God, cannot but be *perplexed* in his mind, that he hath involved himself therein. And that posture of mind will be accompanied with *shame, fear, sorrow*, and other afflictive passions. Hereon a *Resolution* doth ensue, utterly to abstain from it for the future, with *sincere endeavours* unto that purpose, issuing if there be time and space for it, in Reformation of Life. And in a sense of sin, Sorrow for it, Fear concerning it, Abstinence from it, and Reformation of Life, a *Repentance* true in its kind doth consist. This Repentance is usually called *legal*, because its motives are principally taken from the Law; but yet there is moreover required unto it that *temporary Faith* of the Gospel which we have before described. And as it doth usually *produce* great effects in the confession of sin, Humiliation for it, and change of life, as in *Ahab* and the

*Ninevites*, so ordinarily it *precedeth* true saving Faith, and Justification thereby. Wherefore the necessity hereof, is no way weakened by the Doctrine of the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, yea it is strengthened and made effectual thereby. For without it, in the order of the Gospel, an interest therein is not to be attained. And this is that which in the *Old Testament* is so often proposed as the means and conditions of turning away the Judgments and Punishments threatned unto sin. For it is *true* and *sincere* in its kind; neither do the *Socinians* require any other Repentance unto Justification. For as they deny true *Evangelical Repentance* in all the especial causes of it, so that which may and doth precede Faith in order of nature, is all that they require. This Objection therefore as managed by *them*, is a causeless vain-pretence.

2. Justifying Faith includeth in its nature the entire principle of *Evangelical Repentance*, so as that it is utterly impossible that a man should be a *true Believer*, and not at the same instant of time be *truly penitent*. And therefore are they so frequently conjoined in the Scripture as one *simultaneous* Duty. Yea the call of the Gospel unto Repentance is a call to Faith, acting it self by Repentance. So the sole Reason of that *Call* unto Repentance which the forgiveness of sins is annexed unto, (*Act. 2. 38.*) is the *Proposal of the Promise* which is the Object of Faith, *ver. 39.* And those Conceptions and Affections which a man hath about sin, with a sorrow for it and Repentance of it, upon a *legal Conviction*, being enlivened and made *Evangelical* by the Introduction of Faith as a new Principle of them, and giving new Motives unto them, do become *Evangelical*; so impossible is it that Faith should be without Repentance. Wherefore although the *first Act* of Faith, and its only proper exercise unto Justification, doth respect the Grace of God in Christ and the way of Salvation by him, as proposed in the Promise of the Gospel,

Gospel, yet is not this conceived in order of time to precede its actings in *self-displicity*, *godly sorrow*, and *universal conversion* from sin unto God; nor can it be so, seeing it virtually and radically containeth all of them in it self. However therefore *Evangelical Repentance* is not the Condition of our Justification, so as to have any *direct Influence* thereinto; nor are we said any where to be *justified by Repentance*; nor is it conversant about the *proper object* which alone the Soul respects therein; nor is a direct and immediate *giving Glory unto God*, on the account of the way and work of his Wisdom and Grace in Christ Jesus, but a consequent thereof; nor is that *Reception* of Christ which is expressly required unto our Justification, and which alone is required thereunto; yet is it in the Root, Principle, and Promptitude of mind for its exercise, in every one that is justified, then when he is justified. And it is peculiarly proposed with respect unto the *Forgiveness of sins*, as that without which it is impossible we should have any *true sense* or comfort of it in our Souls; but it is not so as any part of that Righteousness on the consideration whereof our sins are pardoned, nor as that whereby we have an Interest therein. These things are plain in the divine method of our Justification, and the order of our Duty prescribed in the Gospel; as also in the experience of them that do believe. Wherefore considering the necessity of *legal Repentance* unto Believing, with the sanctification of the Affections exercised therein by Faith, whereby they are made *Evangelical*, and the nature of Faith as including in it a principle of *universal conversion* unto God, and in especial of that *Repentance*, which hath for its principal motive the Love of God, and of Jesus Christ, with the Grace from thence communicated, all which are supposed in the Doctrine pleaded for, the necessity of true Repentance is immoveably fixed on its proper Foundation.

3. As unto what was said in the Objection concerning  
Christ's

Christ's suffering in the Person of the Elect, I know not whether any have used it or no, nor will I contend about it. He suffered in their stead; which all sorts of Writers ancient and modern so express, in his suffering he bare the Person of the Church. The meaning is what was before declared. Christ and Believers are one mystical Person, one spiritually animated Body, Head and Members. This I suppose will not be denied; To do so, is to overthrow the Church and the Faith of it. Hence what he did and suffered is imputed unto them. And it is granted that as the Surety of the Covenant he paid all our Debts, or answered for all our faults; and that his Righteousness is really communicated unto us. Why then say some, there is no need of Repentance, all is done for us already. But why so, why must we assent to one part of the Gospel unto the exclusion of another? Was it not free unto God to appoint what way, method and order he would, whereby these things should be communicated unto us? nay upon the supposition of the design of his Wisdom and Grace, these two things were necessary.

1. That this *Righteousness of Christ* should be communicated unto us, and be made ours in such a way and manner, as that he himself might be glorified therein, seeing he hath disposed all things in this whole Oeconomy, unto the praise of the Glory of his Grace, Ephes. 1. 6. This was to be done by Faith on our part. It is so, it could be no otherwise. For that Faith whereby we are justified, is our giving unto God the Glory of his Wisdom, Grace and Love. And whatever doth so, is *Faith*, and nothing else is so.

2. That whereas our nature was so corrupted and depraved, as that continuing in that state, it was not capable of a Participation of the Righteousness of Christ, or any benefit of it, unto the Glory of God, and our own Good, it was in like manner necessary that it should be renewed and changed. And unless it were so, the Design of God in the Mediation  
of

of Christ, which was the entire Recovery of us unto himself could not be attained. And therefore as *Faith*, under the formal consideration of it was necessary unto the *first end*, namely, that of giving Glory unto God, so unto this *latter end*, it was necessary that this Faith should be accompanied with, yea and contain in it self the seeds of all those other Graces wherein the Divine Nature doth consist, whereof we are to be made Partakers. Not only therefore the *thing* it self, or the communication of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, but the way and manner, and means of it, do depend on Gods Sovereign order and disposal. Wherefore although Christ did make *satisfaction unto the Justice of God* for all the sins of the Church, and that as a common person, ( for no man in his Wits can deny but that he who is a Mediator and a Surety, is in some sense a *common person* ) and although he did pay all our Debts, yet doth the particular Interest of this or that man, in what he did and suffered, depend on the *way, means, and order* designed of God unto that end. This and this alone gives the true necessity of all the Duties which are required of us, with their order and their ends.

3ly, It is objected, That *the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, which we defend, overthrowes the necessity of Faith it self.* This is *home* indeed. *Aliquid adhaerebit*, is the Design of all these Objections. But they have Reason to plead for themselves who make it. For on this supposition, they say, *the Righteousness of Christ is ours before we do believe.* For Christ satisfied for all our sins, as if we had satisfied in our own persons. And he who is esteemed to have satisfied for all his sins in his own person, is acquitted from them all, and accounted just, whether he believe or no; nor is there any Ground or Reason why he should be required to believe. If therefore the Righteousness of Christ be really ours, because in the judgment of God we are esteemed to have wrought it in him, then it is ours before we do believe.

believe. If it be otherwise, then it is plain that that, Righteousness it self can never be made ours by believing; only the fruits and effects of it may be suspended on our Believing, whereby we may be made Partakers of them. Yea if Christ made any such satisfaction for us as is pretendd, it is really ours, without any farther Imputation. For being performed for us and in our stead, it is the highest injustice not to have us accounted pardoned and acquitted, without any farther either Imputation on the part of God, or Faith on ours. These things I have transcribed out of Socinus, *De Servator. lib. 4. cap. 2, 3, 4, 5.* which I would not have done, but that I find others to have gone before me therein, though to another purpose. And he concludes with a confidence which others also seem in some measure to have learned of him. For he saith unto his Adversary, *Hæc tua, tuorumq; sententia, adeo fæda & execrabilis est, ut pestilentiore[m] errorem post homines natos in populo Dei extitisse non credam;* speaking of the satisfaction of Christ and the Imputation of it unto Believers. And indeed his Serpentine wit was fertile in the Invention of cavils against all the mysteries of the Gospel. Nor was he obliged by any one of them, so as to contradict himself in what he opposed concerning any other of them. For denying the Deity of Christ, his Satisfaction, Sacrifice, Merit, Righteousness, and overthrowing the whole nature of his Mediation, nothing stood in his way which he had a mind to oppose. But I somewhat wonder how others can make use of his Inventions in this kind, who if they considered aright their proper tendency, they will find them to be absolutely destructive of what they seem to own. So it is in this present Objection against the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ; If it hath any force in it, as indeed it hath not, it is to prove that the satisfaction of Christ was impossible; and so he intended it. But it will be easily removed.

I answer first in general ; that the whole *fallacy* of this Objection lies in the opposing *one part* of the design and method of Gods grace in this mystery of our Justification, unto another ; or the taking of *one part* of it to be the *whole*, which as to its Efficacy and Perfection depends on somewhat else. Hereof we warned the Reader in our previous discourses. For the whole of it is a supposition, that the *satisfaction of Christ*, if there be any such thing, must have its whole effect, without Believing on our part, which is contrary unto the whole Declaration of the will of God in the Gospel. But I shall principally respect them who are pleased to make use of this Objection, and yet do not *deny the satisfaction of Christ*. And I say

1. When the Lord Christ died for us, and offered himself as a Propitiatory Sacrifice, *God laid all our sins on him*. *Ia.* 53. 6. And he then *bare them all in his own body on the Tree*, *1 Pet.* 2. 24. Then he *suffered in our stead*, and made full satisfaction for all our sins ; For he appeared *to put away sin by the Sacrifice of himself*, *Heb.* 9. 26. and by *one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are Sanctified*, *Chap.* 10. 14. He whose sins were not actually and absolutely satisfied for, in that *one Offering* of Christ, shall never have them expiated unto Eternity. For *henceforth he dieth no more*, there is *no more Sacrifice for sin*. The Repetition of a Sacrifice for sin, which must be the *Crucifying of Christ afresh*, overthrowes the foundation of Christian Religion.

2. Notwithstanding this *full plenary satisfaction* once made for the sins of the World that shall be saved ; yet all men continue equally to be born by nature *Children of Wrath*, and whilst they believe not, the Wrath of God abideth on them, *Joh.* 3. 36. that is, they are *obnoxious unto*, and under the Curse of the Law. Wherefore on the only making of that satisfaction, no one for whom it was made in the design of God, can be said to have *suffered in Christ*, nor to have an

interest in his satisfaction, nor by any way or means be made partaker of it antecedently unto another Act of God in its Imputation unto him. For this is but *one part* of the purpose of Gods Grace, as unto our Justification by the Blood of Christ, namely, that he by his *death should make satisfaction for our sins*. Nor is it to be separated from what also belongs unto it, in the same purpose of God. Wherefore from the Position or Grant of the *satisfaction of Christ*, no Argument can be taken unto the negation of a consequential Act of its *Imputation* unto us; nor therefore of the necessity of our Faith in the believing and receiving of it, which is no less the appointment of God, than it was that Christ should make that satisfaction. Wherefore.

3. That which the Lord Christ *paid for us*, is as truly paid, as if we had paid it our selves. So he speaks, *Psal. 69. 5.* אֵשֶׁר לֹא-נִלְחַתִּי אִנּוּ אֲשֵׁי. He made no *spoil* of the glory of God, what was done of that nature by us, he returned it unto him. And what he underwent and suffered, he underwent and suffered in our stead. But yet the act of God in laying our sins on Christ, conveyed no *actual Right* and Title to us, unto what he did and suffered. They are not immediately thereon, nor by virtue thereof *ours*, or esteemed ours, because God hath *appointed* somewhat else, not only antecedent thereunto, but as the means of it, unto his own Glory. These things both as unto their being and order, depend on the free Ordination of God. But yet,

4. It cannot be said that this satisfaction was made for us on such a condition as should *absolutely suspend* the event, and render it uncertain whether it should ever be for us or no. Such a constitution may be *Righteous in pecuniary solutions*. A man may lay down a *great sum of money* for the discharge of another, on such a condition as may never be fulfilled. For on the absolute failure of the condition, his money may and ought to be restored unto him, whereon he hath

Hath received no injury or damage. But in *pænal suffering* for crimes and sins, there can be no righteous constitution that shall make the event and efficacy of it to depend on a Condition *absolutely uncertain*, and which may not come to pass or be fulfilled. For if the Condition fail, no Recompence can be made unto him that hath suffered. Wherefore the way of the Application of the satisfaction of Christ unto them for whom it was made, is *sure* and *stedfast* in the purpose of God.

5. God hath appointed that there shall be an *immediate Foundation* of the Imputation of the Satisfaction and Righteousness of Christ unto us, whereon we may be said to have done and suffered in him, what he did and suffered in our stead, by that *Grant, Donation, and Imputation* of it unto us; or that we may be interested in it, that it may be made ours, which is all we contend for. And this is our *actual coalescency into one mystical person* with him by Faith. Hereon doth the necessity of Faith originally depend. And if we shall add hereunto the necessity of it likewise unto that especial Glory of God which he designs to exalt in our Justification by Christ, as also unto all the ends of our Obedience unto God, and the Renovation of our Natures into his Image, its station is sufficiently secured against all Objections. Our actual Interest in the satisfaction of Christ, depends on our actual Insertion into his mystical Body by Faith, according to the Appointment of God.

*4thly.* It is yet objected, That if the *Righteousness of Christ be made ours, we may be said to be Saviours of the World as he was, or to save others as he did. For he was so and did so by his Righteousness and no otherwise.* This Objection also is of the same nature with those foregoing, a meer *Sophistical Cavil.* For,

1. The Righteousness of Christ is not transfused into us, so as to be made *inherently and subjectively* ours, as it was in  
R r 2 him,

him, and which is necessarily required unto that effect, of saving others thereby. Whatever we may do, or be said to do with respect unto others, by virtue of any power or quality inherent in our selves, we can be said to do nothing unto others, or for them, by virtue of that which is imputed unto us, only for our own benefit. That any Righteousness of ours should benefit another, it is absolutely necessary that it should be wrought by our selves.

2. If the Righteousness of Christ could be *transfused* into us, and be made *inherently* ours, yet could we not be, nor be said to be the *Saviours of others* thereby. For our nature in our *individual persons*, is not *subjectum capax*, or capable to receive and retain a Righteousness useful and effectual unto that end. This *capacity* was given unto it in Christ by virtue of the *Hypostatical Union*, and no otherwise. The Righteousness of Christ himself as performed in the *Humane Nature*, would not have been sufficient for the Justification and Salvation of the Church, had it not been the Righteousness of his *Person*, who is both God and Man; for *God redeemed his Church with his own Blood*.

3. This Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, as unto its ends and use, hath its *measure from the Will of God*, and his purpose in that Imputation. And this is, that it should be the Righteousness of them unto whom it is imputed, and nothing else.

4. We do not say that the Righteousness of Christ *as made absolutely for the whole Church*, is imputed unto every Believer. But his satisfaction for every one of them in particular, according unto the Will of God, is imputed unto them; not with respect unto its general ends, but according unto every ones particular Interest. Every Believer hath his own *Homer* of this Bread of Life; and all are justified by the same Righteousness.

5. The Apostle declares, as we shall prove afterwards, that as *Adams actual sin* is imputed unto us unto condemnation, so is the *Obedience of Christ* imputed unto us, to the Justification of life. But *Adams sin* is not so imputed unto any person, as that he should then and thereby be the cause of sin and condemnation unto all other persons in the World; but only that he himself should become Guilty before God thereon. And so is it on the other side. And as we are made Guilty by *Adams actual sin* which is not inherent in us, but only imputed unto us; so are we made Righteous by the Righteousness of Christ which is not inherent in us, but only imputed unto us. And imputed unto us it is, because himself was Righteous with it, not for himself but for us.

It is yet said, That if we insist on personal Imputation unto every Believer of what Christ did, or if any Believer be personally Righteous in the very individual Acts of Christs Righteousness, many Absurdities will follow. But it was observed before; that when any design to oppose an Opinion from the absurdities which they suppose would follow upon it, they are much enclined so to state it, as that at least they may seem so to do. And this oftimes the most worthy and candid Persons are not free from in the heat of Disputation. So I fear it is here fallen out. For as unto *personal Imputation* I do not well understand it. All Imputation is unto a person, and is the Act of a person, be it of what, and what sort it will, but from neither of them can be denominated a *Personal Imputation*. And if an Imputation be allowed that is not unto the persons of men, namely, in this case unto all Believers, the nature of it hath not yet been declared as I know of.

That any have so expressed the Imputation pleaded for, That every Believer should be personally Righteous in the very individual Acts of Christs Righteousness, I know not; I have neither read nor heard any of them who have so expressed their mind. It may be some have done so; but I shall not under-

undertake the defence of what they have done. For it seems not only to suppose that Christ *did every individual Act* which in any instance is required of us, but also that those *Acts are made* our own inherently; both which are false and impossible. That which indeed is pleaded for in this Imputation, is only this; That what the Lord Christ did and suffered as the Mediator and Surety of the Covenant in answer unto the Law, for them and in their stead, is *imputed* unto every one of them unto the Justification of Life. And sufficient this is unto that end without any such supposals. (1) From the *Dignity of the Person* who yielded his Obedience, which rendered it both satisfactory and meritorious, and imputable unto many. (2) From the *Nature of the Obedience* it self, which was a perfect compliance with, a fulfilling of, and satisfaction unto the whole Law in all its demands. This on the supposition of that Act of Gods Sovereign Authority, whereby a Representative of the whole Church was introduced to answer the Law, is the Ground of his Righteousness being made theirs, and being every way sufficient unto their Justification. (3) From the *constitution of God*, that what was done and suffered by Christ as a *publick person* and our surety, should be reckoned unto us as if done by our selves. So the sin of *Adam* whilst he was a *publick Person*, and represented his whole Posterity, is imputed unto us all, as if we had committed that actual sin. This *Bellarmin* himself frequently acknowledgeth. *Peccavimus in primo homine quando ille peccavit, & illa ejus prævaricatio nostra etiam prævaricatio fuit. Non enim vere per Adami inobedientiam constitueremur peccatores, nisi inobedientia illius nostra etiam inobedientia esset. De Amis. Grat. & Stat. Peccat. lib. 5. cap. 18.* And elsewhere, That the *actual sin of Adam is imputed unto us, as if we all had committed that actual sin*; that is, broken the whole Law of God. And this is that whereby the Apostle illustrates the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ  
unto

unto Believers; and it may on as good grounds be charged with absurdities as the other. It is not therefore said that God judgeth that we have in our own persons done these very Acts, and endured that penalty of the Law which the Lord Christ did and endured. For this would overthrow all Imputation; But what Christ did and suffered, that God imputeth unto Believers unto the Justification of Life, as if it had been done by themselves; and his Righteousness as a publick person is made theirs by Imputation, even as the *sin of Adam* whilst a publick person, is made the sin of all his Posterity by Imputation.

Hereon none of the absurdities pretended, which are really such, do at all follow. It doth not so, that Christ in *his own person performed every individual Act* that we in our circumstances are obliged unto in a way of Duty; nor was there any need that so he should do. This Imputation, as I have shewed, stands on other Foundations. Nor doth it follow, that *every saved Persons Righteousness* before God is the same identically and numerically with Christs in his publick capacity as Mediator; For this Objection destroys it self, by affirming that as it was his, it was the Righteousness of God-Man; and so it hath an especial nature as it respects or relates unto his Person. It is the same that Christ in his publick capacity did work or effect. But there is a wide difference in the consideration of it, as *his absolutely* and as *made ours*. It was *formally* inherent in him, is only *materially* imputed unto us. Was *actively* his, is *passively* ours; was wrought in the Person of God-man; for the whole Church, is *imputed* unto each single Believer, as unto his own concernment only. *Adams sin* as imputed unto us, is not the sin of a Representative, though it be of his that was so; but is the particular sin of every one of us. But this Objection must be further spoken unto where it occurs afterwards. Nor will it follow, that on this supposition we should be *accounted to have done, that which was done long before we were in a capacity of doing*  
any.

*any thing.* For what is done for us and in our stead, before we are in any such capacity may be imputed unto us, as is the sin of *Adam*. And yet there is a manifold sense wherein men may be said to have done what was *done for them*, and in their name before their actual existence; so that therein is no absurdity. As unto what is added by the way that Christ did not do nor suffer the *Idem* that we were obliged unto; whereas he did what the *Law required*, and *suffered what the Law threated* unto the disobedient, which is the whole of what we are obliged unto, it will not be so easily proved; nor the Arguments very *suddenly answered* whereby the contrary hath been confirmed. That Christ did *sustain the place of a surety*, or was the *surety of the New Covenant*, the Scripture doth so expressly affirm, that it cannot be denied. And that there may be *sureties* in cases criminal, as well as civil and pecuniary, hath been proved before. What else occurs about the *singularity of Christs Obedience* as he was Mediator, proves only that his Righteousness as *formally and inherently* his, was peculiar unto himself, and that the *Adjuncts* of it which arise from its relation unto his person, as it was *inherent* in him, are not communicable unto them to whom it is imputed.

It is moreover urged, That upon *the supposed Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, it will follow that every Believer is justified by the works of the Law. For the Obedience of Christ was a legal Righteousness, and if that be imputed unto us, then are we justified by the Law, which is contrary unto express Testimonies of Scriptures in many places. Ans. (1) I know nothing more frequent in the Writings of some Learned Men, then that the Righteousness of Christ is *our legal Righteousness*; who yet I presume are able to free themselves of this Objection. (2) If this do follow in the true sense of being justified by the Law, or the Works of it, so denied in the Scripture, their *weakness* is much to be pitied who can see no other way  
whereby

whereby we may be freed from an Obligation to be justified by the Law, but by this Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. (3) The Scripture which affirms that *by the deeds of the Law no man can be justified*, affirms in like manner, that *by Faith we do not make void the Law, but establish it*; that *the Righteousness of the Law is fulfilled in us*; that *Christ came not to destroy the Law, but to fulfil it*, and is the *End of the Law for Righteousness unto them that do believe*. And that the Law must be fulfilled or we cannot be justified, we shall prove afterwards. (4) We are not hereon justified by the Law or the Works of it, in *the only sense* of that Proposition in the Scripture, and to coin *new senses* or significations of it, is not safe. The meaning of it in the Scripture is, that only *the doers of the Law shall be justified*, Rom. 2. 13. and that *he that doth the things of it shall live by them*, chap. 10. 5. namely, in his *own person*, by the way of personal Duty which alone the Law requires. But if we who have not fulfilled the Law in the way of inherent personal Obedience, are justified by the *Imputation of the Righteousness* of Christ unto us, then are we justified by Christ and not by the Law. But it is said, that *this will not relieve*. For if his Obedience be so imputed unto us, as that we are accounted by God in Judgment to have done what Christ did, it is all one upon the matter, and we are as much justified by the Law, as if we had in our own proper persons performed an *unsinning Obedience* unto it. This I confess I cannot understand. The Nature of this Imputation is here represented as formerly, in such a way as we cannot acknowledge; from thence alone this inference is made, which yet in my judgment doth not follow thereon. For grant an *Imputation of the Righteousness* of another unto us, be it of what nature it will, all Justification by the Law and Works of it in the sense of the Scripture is gone for ever. The Admission of *Imputation* takes off all power from the Law to justify; for it can justify none, but upon a Righteousness

teousness that is originally and inherently his own. *The man that doth them shall live in them.* If the Righteousness that is imputed be the Ground and Foundation of our Justification, and made ours by that Imputation, state it how you will, that *Justification* is of Grace and not of the Law. However, I know not of any that say we are accounted of God in *Judgment personally to have done what Christ did*; and it may have a sense that is false; namely, that God should judge us in our own persons to have done those Acts which we never did. But what Christ did for us and in our stead, is *imputed and communicated* unto us, as we coalesce into one *mystical* person with him by Faith, and thereon are we justified. And this absolutely overthrows all Justification by the Law or the Works of it; though the Law be established, fulfilled and accomplished, that we may be justified.

Neither can any on the supposition of the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ truly stated, be said *to merit their own Salvation*. Satisfaction and Merit are Adjuncts of the Righteousness of Christ as *formally* inherent in his own person; and as such it cannot be transfused into another. Wherefore as it is imputed unto individual Believers, it hath not those properties accompanying of it which belong only unto its *existence* in the person of the Son of God. But this was spoken unto before, as much also of what was necessary to be here repeated.

These *Objections* I have in this place taken notice of, because the answers given unto them do tend to the farther explanation of that Truth, whose confirmation by Arguments and Testimonies of Scripture I shall now proceed unto.

## CHAP. X.

### *Arguments for Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. The first Argument from the Nature and Use of our own Personal Righteousness.*

**T**Here is a Justification of convinced sinners on their Believing. Hereon are their sins pardoned, their persons accepted with God, and a Right is given unto them, unto the Heavenly Inheritance. This state they are immediately taken into upon their Faith, or Believing in Jesus Christ. And a state it is of actual peace with God. These things at present I take for granted, and they are the Foundation of all that I shall plead in the present Argument. And I do take notice of them because some seem, to the best of my understanding, to deny any real actual Justification of sinners on their Believing in this life. For they make Justification to be only a general conditional sentence declared in the Gospel, which as unto its Execution, is delayed unto the day of Judgment. For whilst men are in this world, the whole Condition of it being not fulfilled, they cannot be partakers of it, or be actually and absolutely justified. Hereon it follows, that indeed there is no real state of assured Rest and Peace with God by Jesus Christ, for any persons in this life. This at present I shall not dispute about, because it seems to me to overthrow the whole Gospel, the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and all the comfort of Believers about which I hope we are not as yet called to contend.

Our Enquiry is, how convinced sinners do on their Believing obtain the Remission of sins, Acceptance with God,

and a Right unto Eternal Life. And if this can no other way be done, but by the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ* unto them, then thereby alone are they justified in the sight of God. And this Assertion proceedeth on a supposition that there is a Righteousness required unto the Justification of any person whatever. For whereas God in the Justification of any person, doth declare him to be *acquitted from all crimes* laid unto his charge, and to *stand as Righteous in his sight*, it must be on the consideration of a Righteousness, whereon any man is so acquitted and declared; for the Judgment of God is according unto Truth. This we have sufficiently evidenced before in that *juridical procedure* wherein the Scripture represents unto us the Justification of a Believing sinner. And if there be no *other Righteousness* whereby we may be thus justified, but only that of Christ imputed unto us, then thereby must we be justified or not at all. And if there be any such other Righteousness, it must be *our own, inherent* in us, and wrought out by us. For these two kinds *inherent* and *imputed* Righteousness, *our own* and *Christ's* divide the whole nature of Righteousness, as to the End enquired after. And that there is *no such inherent Righteousness*, no such Righteousness of our own whereby we may be justified before God, I shall prove in the first place. And I shall do it, first from express Testimonies of Scripture, and then from the consideration of the thing it self. And two things I shall premise hereunto.

I. That I shall not consider this Righteousness of our own *absolutely* in it self, but as it may be conceived to be improved and advanced by its *Relation* unto the satisfaction and merit of Christ; For many will grant that *our inherent Righteousness* is not of it self sufficient to justify us in the sight of God. But take it as it hath *value* and *worth* communicated unto it from the merit of Christ, and so it is accepted unto that End, and judged worthy of Eternal Life. We could not *merit Life and Salvation*, had not Christ *merited that Grace*

for us whereby we may do so; and merited also that our Works should be of such a Dignity with respect unto Reward. We shall therefore allow what worth can be reasonably thought to be communicated unto this Righteousness from its respect unto the Merit of Christ.

2. Whereas persons of all sorts and parties do take various ways in the assignation of an interest in our Justification unto our *own Righteousness*, so as that no parties are agreed about it, nor many of the same mind among themselves, as might easily be manifested in the *Papists*, *Socinians*, and others, I shall so far as it is possible in the ensuing Arguments have respect unto them all. For my design is to prove, that it hath *no such Interest* in our Justification before God, as that the Righteousness of Christ should not be esteemed the only Righteousness whereon we are justified.

And first, we shall produce some of those many Testimonies which may be pleaded unto this purpose, *Psal.* 130. 3, 4. *If thou Lord shouldst mark Iniquities, O Lord, who should stand? But there is Forgiveness with thee that thou maist be feared.* There is an Enquiry included in these words, *how a man*, how *any man* may be justified before God; how he may *stand*, that is, in the presence of God, and be accepted with him; How he *shall stand in Judgment*, as it is explained, *Psal.* 1. 5. *The wicked shall not stand in the Judgment*, shall not be acquitted on their Trial. That which first offereth it self unto this End, is his *own Obedience*. For this the Law requires of him in the first place, and this his own *Conscience* calls upon him for. But the *Psalmist* plainly declares that no man can thence manage a plea for his Justification with any success. And the Reason is, because notwithstanding the best of the Obedience of the best of men, there are Iniquities found with them against the Lord their God. And if men come to their Trial before God whether they shall be justified or condemned, these also must be heard and taken into the

the Account. But then no man *can stand*, no man can be justified as it is elsewhere expressed. Wherefore the wisest and safest course is, as unto our Justification before God, utterly to forego this plea, and not to insist on our own *Obedience*, lest our *sins* should appear also, and be heard. No Reason can any man give on his own Account, why they should not so be. And if they be so, the best of men will be cast in their Trial, as the Psalmist declares.

Two things are required in this *Trial* that a sinner may stand. (1) That his *Iniquities* be not observed, for if they be so, he is lost for ever. (2) That a *Righteousness* be produced and pleaded that will endure the Trial. For Justification is upon a Justifying Righteousness. For the first of these, the *Psalmist* tells us it must be through *pardon or forgiveness*. But there is *Forgiveness with thee*, wherein lies our only relief against the condemnatory sentence of the Law with respect unto our Iniquities; that is, through the Blood of Christ; for in him we have Redemption through his Blood, even the *Forgiveness of sins*, *Ephes. 1. 7*. The other cannot be our own Obedience, because of our Iniquities. Wherefore this the same *Psalmist* directs us unto, *Psal. 71. 16*. *I will go in the strength of the Lord God, I will make mention of thy Righteousness, of thine only*. The Righteousness of God, and not his own, yea in opposition unto his own, is the only plea that in this case he would insist upon.

*If no man can stand a Trial before God upon his own Obedience, so as to be justified before him, because of his own personal Iniquities; and if our only plea in that case be the Righteousness of God, the Righteousness of God only and not our own, then is there no personal inherent Righteousness in any Believers whereon they may be justified; which is that which is to be proved.*

The same is again asserted by the same Person, and that more plainly and directly, *Psal. 143. 2*. *Enter not into Judgment*

## Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. 319

ment with thy Servant, for in thy sight shall no man living be justified. This Testimony is the more to be considered, because as it is derived from the Law, *Exod. 34. 7.* so it is transferred into the Gospel, and twice urged by the Apostle unto the same purpose, *Rom. 3. 20. Gal. 2. 16.*

The Person who insists on this plea with God, professeth himself to be *his Servant*, Enter not into Judgment with thy Servant; that is, one that loved him, feared him, yielded all sincere Obedience. He was not an *Hypocrite*, not an *unbeliever*, not an *unregenerate person*, who had performed no Works but such as were *legal*, such as the Law required, and such as were done in the strength of the Law only; such works as all will acknowledge to be excluded from our Justification; and which as many judge, are only those which are so excluded. *David* it was, who was not only converted, a true Believer, had the Spirit of God, and the Aids of special Grace in his Obedience, but had this Testimony unto his sincerity, that *he was a man after Gods own Heart*. And this witness had he in his own Conscience of his Integrity, Uprightness, and personal Righteousness, so as that he frequently avows them, appeals unto God concerning the Truth of them, and pleads them as a Ground of Judgment between him and his Adversaries. We have therefore a case stated in the Instance of a sincere and eminent Believer, who excelled most in inherent personal Righteousness.

This Person under these circumstances, thus testified unto both by God and in his own Conscience, as unto the sincerity, yea as unto the eminency of his Obedience; considers how he may *stand before God*, and *be justified in his sight*. Why doth he not now plead his *own merits*; and that if not *ex condigno*, yet at least *ex congruo*, he deserved to be *acquitted and justified*. But he left this plea for that Generation of men that were to come after, who would *justify themselves*, and despise others. But suppose he had no such confidence

in the *merit of his Works*, as some have now attained unto, yet why he doth not *freely enter into Judgment* with God, put it unto the Trial whether he should be justified or no, by pleading that he had *fulfilled the Condition of the New Covenant*, that Everlasting Covenant which God made with him, ordered in all things and sure? For upon a supposition of the *procurement of that Covenant*, and the Terms of it by Christ, (for I suppose the virtue of that *Purchase* he made of it, is allowed to extend unto the Old Testament) this was all that was required of him? Is it not to be feared that he was one of them who *see no necessity*, or *leave none of Personal Holiness* and Righteousness, seeing he makes no mention of it, now it should stand him in the greatest stead? At least he might plead *his Faith* as his *own Duty and Work*, to be imputed unto him for Righteousness? But whatever the Reason be, he waves them all, and absolutely deprecates a *Trial* upon them. *Come not*, saith he, O Lord, *into Judgment with thy Servant*, as it is promised that he who believes should *not come into Judgment*; Joh. 5. 24.

And if this Holy Person renounce the whole consideration of all his *personal inherent Righteousness*, in every kind, and will not insist upon it under any pretence, in any place, as unto any use in his Justification before God, we may safely conclude there is no such Righteousness in any whereby they may be justified. And if men would but leave those shades and coverts under which they hide themselves in their Disputations, if they would forego those pretences and Distinctions wherewith they delude themselves and others, and tell us plainly what *plea they dare make in the presence of God*, from their own Righteousness and Obedience that they may be justified before him, we should better understand their minds than now we do. There is one I confess, who speaks with some confidence unto this purpose. And that is *Vasquez* the *Jesuite*; in 1. 2. Disp. 204. cap. 4. *Inherens Justitia ita reddit*

## Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. 321

*reddit animam justam & sanctam, ac proinde filiam Dei, ut hoc ipso reddat eam heredem, & dignam æterna Gloria; imo ipse Deus efficere non potest ut hujusmodi justus dignus non sit æterna beatitudine.* Is it not sad that David should discover so much Ignorance of the worth of his inherent Righteousness, and discover so much pusillanimity with respect unto his Trial before God, whereas God himself could not otherwise order it, but that he was and must be worthy of eternal Blessedness?

The Reason the Psalmist gives why he will not put it unto the Trial whether he should be acquitted or justified upon his own obedience, is this general Axiom; *for in thy sight, or before thee, shall no man living be justified.* This must be spoken *absolutely*, or with respect unto some *one way* or cause of Justification. If it be spoken *absolutely*, then this work ceaseth for ever, and there is indeed no such thing as Justification before God. But this is contrary unto the whole Scripture, and destructive of the Gospel. Wherefore it is spoken with respect unto our *own Obedience* and works. He doth not pray absolutely that he *would not enter into Judgment with him*, for this were to forego his Government of the world, but that he would not do so on the account of his own Dutys and Obedience. But if so be these Dutys and Obedience did answer in any sense or way, what is required of us as a Righteousness unto Justification, there was no Reason why he should *deprecate* a Trial by them or upon them. But whereas the Holy Ghost doth so positively affirm, that *no man living shall be justified in the sight of God*, by or upon his own Works or Obedience, it is I confess marvellous unto me, that some should so intepret the Apostle James, as if he affirmed the exprefs contrary. Namely, that we are justified in the sight of God by our own Works, whereas indeed he says no such thing. This therefore is an Eternal Rule of Truth, by, or upon his own Obedience, no man living can be

justified in the sight of God. It will be said that if God enter into Judgment with any on their own Obedience by and according to the Law, then indeed none can be justified before him. But God judging according to the Gospel, and the terms of the new Covenant, men may be justified upon their own Duties, Works, and Obedience. Ans. ( 1 ) The negative Assertion is general, and unlimited ; that *no man living shall* ( on his own Works or Obedience ) be justified in the sight of God. And to limit it unto this or that way of Judging, is not to distinguish but to contradict the Holy Ghost. ( 2 ) The Judgment intended is only with respect unto *Justification*, as is plain in the words. But there is no Judgment on our Works or Obedience, with respect unto Righteousness and Justification, but by the proper Rule and Measure of them, which is the Law. If they will not endure the Trial by the Law, they will endure no Trial as unto Righteousness and Justification in the sight of God. ( 3 ) The Prayer and Plea of the *Psalmist* on this supposition, are to this purpose ; *O Lord enter not into Judgment with thy servant, by or according unto the Law ; but enter into Judgment with me, on my own Works and Obedience according to the Rule of the Gospel ; for which he gives this Reason, because in thy sight shall no man living be justified ;* which how remote it is from his Intention need not be declared. ( 4 ) The Judgment of God unto Justification according to the Gospel, doth not proceed on our Works of Obedience, but upon the Righteousness of Christ, and our interest therein by Faith, as is too evident to be modestly denied. Notwithstanding this exception, therefore hence we argue.

*If the most Holy of the servants of God, in and after a course of sincere fruitful Obedience, testified unto by God himself, and Witnessed in their own Consciences, that is, whilst they have the greatest evidences of their own sincerity, and that indeed they are the servants of God, do renounce all thoughts of such a Righteousness thereby, as whereon in any sense they may be justified be-*

## *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ.* 323

before God; then there is no such Righteousness in any, but it is the Righteousness of Christ alone imputed unto us whereon we are so justified. But that so they do, and ought all of them so to do, because of the general Rule here laid down, that in the sight of God no man living shall be justified, is plainly affirmed in this Testimony.

I no way doubt but that many learned men, after all their Pleas for an Interest of *Personal Righteousness* and Works in our Justification before God, do as unto their own practice betake themselves unto this method of the *Psalmist*, and cry as the Prophet *Daniel* doth in the name of the Church; *we do not present our supplications before thee for our own Righteousness, but for thy great mercies*, Chap. 9. 18. And therefore *Job* (as we have formerly observed) after a long and earnest defence of his own Faith, Integrity, and Personal Righteousness, wherein he justified himself against the charge of Sathan and men, being called to plead his cause in the sight of God, and declare on what grounds he expected to be justified before him, *renounceth* all his former Pleas, and betakes himself unto the same with the *Psalmist*, Chap. 40. 4. Chap. 42. 6.

It is true in particular cases, and as unto some especial end in the Providence of God, *a man may plead his own Integrity* and Obedience before God himself. So did *Hezekiah* when he prayed for the sparing of his life, Isa. 38. 3. *Remember now O Lord I beseech thee, how I have walked before thee in Truth, and with a perfect heart, and have done that which is good in thy sight.* This I say may be done with respect unto temporal Deliverance, or any other particular end wherein the glory of God is concerned. So was it greatly in sparing the life of *Hezekiah* at that time. For whereas he had with great Zeal and Industry reformed Religion and restored the true worship of God, the *cutting him off in the midst of his days*, would have occasioned the Idolatrous multitude to have reflected on him as one dying under a token of Divine

displeasure. But none ever made this Plea before God, for the absolute Justification of their persons. So *Nehemiah* in that great contest which he had about the worship of God, and the service of his house, pleads the *Remembrance of it before God*, in his Justification against his Adversaries, but resolves his own personal acceptance with God into pardoning mercy, and *spare me according unto the multitude of thy mercies*, Chap. 13. 22.

Another Testimony we have unto the same purpose, in the Prophet *Isaiab*, speaking in the name of the Church, Chap. 64. 6. *We are all as an unclean thing, and all our Righteousnesses are as filthy Rags*. It is true the Prophet doth in this place make a deep confession of the sins of the people. But yet withal he joyns *himself* with them, and asserts the especial Interest of those concerning whom he speaks by *Adoption*; that God was their Father, and they his people, Chap. 63. 16. Chap. 64. 8, 9. And the Righteousnesses of all that are the Children of God are of the same kind; however they may differ in *Degrees*, and some of them may be more Righteous than others. But it is all of it described to be such, as that we cannot I think justly, expect Justification in the sight of God, upon the account of it. But whereas the consideration of the nature of our inherent Righteousness belongs unto the second way of the confirmation of our present Argument, I shall not farther here insist on this Testimony.

Many others also unto the same purpose, I shall wholly omit; namely, all those wherein the Saints of God, or the Church, in an humble acknowledgment and confession of their own sins, do *betake themselves unto the Mercy and Grace of God alone*, as dispensed through the Mediation and Blood of Christ; and all those wherein God *promiseth to pardon and blot out our Iniquities for his own sake, for his names sake*; to bless the people *not for any good* that was in them, nor for their

## *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ.* 325

their Righteousness, nor for their Works, the consideration whereof he excludes from having any influence into any actings of his Grace towards them; And all those wherein God expresseth his *Delight in them alone*, and his Approbation of them who *hope in his mercy*, trust in his name, betaking themselves unto him as their only Refuge, pronouncing them *accursed who trust in any thing else*, or glory in themselves; such as contain *singular promises* unto them that betake themselves unto God, as *Fatherless, Hopeless*, and lost in themselves.

There is none of the Testimonies which are multiplied unto this purpose, but they sufficiently prove, that the best of Gods Saints, have not a *Righteousness of their own*, whereon they can in any sense be justified before God. For they do all of them in the places referred unto, renounce any such Righteousness of their own, all that is in them, all that they have done or can do, and betake themselves unto Grace and Mercy alone. And whereas, as we have before proved, God in the Justification of any doth exercise Grace towards them with respect unto a Righteousness, whereon he declares them Righteous and accepted before him, they do all of them respect a Righteousness which is not *inherent* in us but *imputed us*.

Herein lies the substance of all that we enquire into, in this matter of Justification. All other disputes about qualifications, conditions, causes *and* *ov* *ix* any kind of Interest for own Works and Obedience in our Justification before God, are but the speculations of *men at ease*. The Conscience of a convinced sinner, who presents himself in the presence of God, finds all *practically* reduced unto this one point, namely, whether he will *trust* unto his own personal inherent Righteousness, or in a full Renuntiation of it, *betake* himself unto the Grace of God, and the Righteousness of Christ alone. In other things he is not concerned. And let men  
*phrase*

*phrase* his own Righteousness unto him as they please, let them pretend it *meritorious*, or only *Evangelical* not legal, only an accomplishment of the *condition* of the new Covenant, a *cause without which* he cannot be justified, it will not be easie to frame his mind unto any confidence in it, as unto Justification before God ; So as not to deceive him in the Issue.

The second part of the present Argument is taken from the *nature of the thing it self*, or the consideration of this personal inherent Righteousness of our own, what it is and wherein it doth consist, and of what use it may be in our Justification. And unto this purpose it may be observed.

1. That we grant an *inherent Righteousness* in all that do believe, as hath been before declared. *For the fruit of the Spirit is in all Goodness and Righteousness and Truth*, Ephes. 5. 9. Being made free from sin, we become the *Servants of Righteousness*, Rom. 6. 20. And our Duty it is to *follow after Righteousness, Godliness, Faith, Love, Meekness*, 1 Tim. 2. 22. And although *Righteousness* be mostly taken for an *especial Grace*, or Duty, distinct from other Graces and Duties, yet we acknowledge that it may be taken for the *whole of our Obedience* before God ; and the word is so used in the Scripture, where our *own Righteousness* is opposed unto the Righteousness of God. And it is either *Habitual* or *Actual*. There is an *Habitual* Righteousness inherent in Believers, as they have *put on the new man which after God is created in Righteousness and true Holiness*, Ephes. 4. 24. As they are the *Workmanship of God created in Jesus Christ unto good Works*, Chap. 2. 8. And there is an *Actual* Righteousness consisting in those good Works whereunto we are so created, or the fruits of Righteousness, which are to the praise of God by Jesus Christ. And concerning this Righteousness it may be observed ; ( 1 ) That men are said in the Scripture, to be just or righteous by it, but no one is said to be justified by it before God. ( 2 ) That it is not ascribed unto, or found  
in

in any, but those that are *actually justified* in order of nature antecedent thereunto.

This being the constant Doctrine of all the reformed Churches and Divines, it is an *open Calumny* whereby the contrary is ascribed unto them, or any of those who believe the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto our Justification before God. So *Bellarmino* affirms that no Protestant Writers acknowledge an *inherent Righteousness*, but only *Bucer* and *Chemnitius* when there is no one of them, by whom either the thing it self, or the necessity of it is denied. But some excuse may be made for him, from the manner whereby they expressed themselves, wherein they always carefully distinguished between *inherent Holiness*, and that *Righteousness* whereby we are justified. But we are now told by one, that if we should *affirm it an Hundred times* he could scarce believe us. This is somewhat severe; for although he speaks but to one, yet the charge falls equally upon all who maintain that Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, which he denies; who being at least the generality of all Protestant Divines, they are represented either as so foolish, as not to know what they say, or so dishonest as to say one thing and believe another. But he endeavours to justify his censure by sundry Reasons; And first he says, *that inherent Righteousness can on no other account be said to be ours, than that by it we are made Righteous, that is, that it is the condition of our Justification required in the new Covenant. This being denied, all inherent Righteousness is denied.* But how is this proved? what if one should say, that every Believer is *inherently Righteous*, but yet that this inherent Righteousness was not the condition of his Justification, but rather the consequent of it, and that it is no where required in the new Covenant as the condition of our Justification, how shall the contrary be made to appear? The Scripture plainly affirms that there is such an *inherent Righteousness* in  
all

all that believe ; and yet as plainly that we are justified before God, by Faith without works. Wherefore that it is the condition of our Justification and so antecedent unto it, is expressly contrary unto that of the Apostle ; *unto him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his Faith is counted unto him for Righteousness*, Rom. 4. 5. Nor is it *the condition of the Covenant it self*, as that whereon the whole Grace of the Covenant is suspended. For as it is habitual wherein the Denomination of Righteous is principally taken, it is a *Grace of the Covenant it self*, and so not a *condition of it*, Jerem. 31. 33. Chap. 32. 39. Ezek. 36. 25, 26, 27. If no more be intended, but that it is as unto its *actual* exercise what is indispensably required of all that are taken into Covenant, in order unto the compleat ends of it, we are agreed. But hence it will not follow that it is the *condition of our Justification*. It is added, *that all Righteousness respects a Law and a Rule, by which it is to be tried. And he is Righteous, who hath done these things which that Law requires, by whose Rule he is to be judged.* But ( 1 ) This is not the way whereby the Scripture expresseth our Justification before God, which alone is under consideration ; namely, that we bring unto it a personal Righteousness of our own, answering the Law whereby we are to be judged. Yea an Assertion to this purpose is forraign to the Gospel, and destructive of the Grace of God by Jesus Christ. ( 2 ) It is granted, that all Righteousness respects a Law as the Rule of it ; And so doth this whereof we speak, namely, the *Moral Law*, which being the sole eternal unchangeable Rule of Righteousness, if it do not in the substance of it answer thereunto, a Righteousness it is not. But this it doth, in as much, as that so far as it is *habitual*, it consists in the Renovation of the Image of God, wherein that Law is written in our Hearts ; and all the actual Duties of it are as to the substance of them, what is required by that Law. But as

## *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, 329*

unto the *manner of its communication* unto us, and of its performance by us from Faith in God by Jesus Christ, and Love unto him, as the Author and Fountain of all the Grace and Mercy procured and administred by him, it hath respect unto the Gospel. What will follow from hence? why that he is *just* that doth those things which that Law requires whereby he is to be judged. He is so certainly. For not the *Hearers of the Law are just before God, but the doers of the Law shall be justified*, Rom. 2. 13. So *Moses* describeth the Righteousness of the Law, *that the man that doth those things shall live in them*, Rom. 10. 5. But although the Righteousness whereof we discourse, be *required* by the Law, as certainly it is, for it is nothing but the Law in our hearts, from whence we walk in the ways and keep the Statutes or Commandments of God; yet doth it not so *answer the Law*, as that any man can be justified by it. But then it will be said, that if it doth not *answer that Law and Rule* whereby we are to be judged, then it is *no Righteousness*; for all Righteousness must answer the Law whereby it is required. And I say it is most true, it is *no perfect Righteousness*; it doth not so answer the Rule and Law, as that we can be justified by it, or safely judged on it. But so far as it doth *answer the Law*, it is a Righteousness, that is, imperfectly so, and therefore is an *imperfect Righteousness*; which yet giveth the Denomination of Righteous unto them that have it, both absolutely and comparatively. It is said therefore, that it is *the Law of Grace or the Gospel from whence we are denominated Righteous with this Righteousness*. But that we are by the Gospel denominated *Righteous* from any Righteousness that is not required by the moral Law, will not be proved. Nor doth the Law of Grace or the Gospel any where require of us, or prescribe unto us this Righteousness, as that whereon we are to be justified before God. It requires Faith in Christ Jesus, or the receiving of him as he is proposed in the Promises of

it, in all that are to be justified. It requires in like manner *Repentance from dead works* in all that believe; as also the *fruits of Faith*, Conversion unto God, and Repentance, in the works of Righteousness, which are to the praise of God by Jesus Christ; with perseverance therein unto the end. And all this may, if you please, be called our *Evangelical Righteousness*, as being our Obedience unto God according to the Gospel. But yet the Graces and Duties wherein it doth consist, do no more perfectly answer the commands of the Gospel, then they do those of the moral Law. For that the Gospel abates from the Holiness of the Law, and makes that to be no sin which is sin by the Law, or approves absolutely of less intension or lower degrees in the Love of God, than the Law doth, is an impious Imagination.

And that the Gospel requires all these things entirely and equally, as the *Condition of our Justification before God*, and so antecedently thereunto, is not yet proved, nor ever will be. It is hence concluded, *That this is our Righteousness, according unto the Evangelical Law which requires it, by this we are made Righteous, that is, not guilty of the non-performance of the condition required in that Law.* And these things are said to be very plain. So no doubt they seemed unto the Author; unto us they are intricate and perplexed. However, I wholly deny that our *Faith, Obedience, and Righteousness, considered as ours, as wrought by us*, although they are all accepted with God through Jesus Christ according to the Grace declared in the Gospel, do perfectly answer the commands of the Gospel, requiring them of us, as to matter, manner, and degree, and that therefore it is utterly impossible that they should be the cause or condition of our Justification before God. Yet in the Explanation of these things, it is added by the same Author, that *our maimed and imperfect Righteousness is accepted unto Salvation, as if it were every way absolute and perfect, for that so it should be, Christ hath merited*

by

## *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ.* 331

by his most perfect Righteousness. But it is Justification and not Salvation that alone we discourse about; and that the works of Obedience or Righteousness, have another respect unto Salvation, then they have unto Justification, is too plainly and too often expressed in the Scripture, to be modestly denied. And if this *weak and imperfect Righteousness* of ours, be esteemed and accepted as every way perfect before God, then either it is because God judgeth it to be perfect, and so declares us to be most just, and justified thereon in his sight, or he judgeth it not to be compleat and perfect, yet declareth us to be perfectly Righteous in his sight thereby. Neither of these I suppose can well be granted. It will therefore be said, it is neither of them; but *Christ hath obtained by his compleat and most perfect Righteousness and Obedience, that this lame and imperfect Righteousness of ours should be accepted as every way perfect.* And if it be so, it may be some will think it best not to go about by this weak halt, and imperfect Righteousness, but as unto their Justification betake themselves immediately unto the most *perfect Righteousness* of Christ, which I am sure the Scripture encourages them unto. And they will be ready to think, that the Righteousness which cannot *justify it self*, but must be obliged unto Grace and Pardon through the *merits of Christ*, will never be able to justify them. But what will ensue on this Explanation of the Acceptance of our imperfect Righteousness unto Justification upon the merit of Christ? This only so far as I can discern, that Christ hath merited and procured, either that God should *judge that to be perfect* which is imperfect, and declare us *perfectly Righteous* when we are not so, or that he should judge the Righteousness still to be imperfect (as it is) but declare us to be perfectly Righteous with and by this imperfect Righteousness. These are the *plain paths* that men walk in, who cannot deny but that there is a Righteousness required unto our Justification, or that we

may be declared Righteous before God, in the sight of God, according unto the Judgment of God, yet denying the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, will allow of no other Righteousness unto this end, but that which is so *weak and imperfect* as that no man can justify it in his own Conscience, nor without a phrensie of pride, can think or imagine himself perfectly Righteous thereby.

And whereas it is added, that *he is blind who sees not that this Righteousness of ours is subordinate unto the Righteousness of Christ*, I must acknowledge my self otherwise minded, notwithstanding the severity of this censure. It seems to me, that *the Righteousness of Christ is subordinate unto this Righteousness of our own*, as here it is stated, and not the contrary. For the end of all is our Acceptance with God as Righteous. But according unto these thoughts, it is our own Righteousnesses whereon we are immediately accepted with God as Righteous.

Only Christ hath deserved by his Righteousness, that our Righteousness may be so accepted, and is therefore as unto the End of our Justification before God, *subordinate thereunto*.

But to return from this Digression, and to proceed unto our Argument. This *personal inherent Righteousness* which according to the Scripture we allow in Believers, is not that whereby, or wherewith, we are justified before God. For it is not *perfect, nor perfectly answereth any Rule of Obedience* that is given unto us, and so cannot be our Righteousness before God unto our Justification. Wherefore we must be justified by the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us, or be justified without respect unto any Righteousness, or not be justified at all. And a threefold imperfection doth accompany it.

First, as to the *Principle* of it, as it is habitually resident in us. For (1) There is a *contrary principle* of sin abiding with it in the *same subject* whilst we are in this World. For *contrary Qualities* may be in the same subject whilst neither of them is in the *highest Degree*. So it is in this case, Gal. 5. 17. *For the Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the Flesh, and these are contrary one to the other, so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.* (2) None of the Faculties of our Souls are *perfectly renewed* whilst we are in this World. The *inward man is renewed day by day*, 2 Cor. 4. 16. And we are always to be *purging our selves* from all pollution of flesh and spirit, 2 Cor. 7. 1. And hereunto belongs whatever is spoken in the Scripture, whatever Believers find in themselves by experience of the *Remainders of In-dwelling-sin*, in the Darkness of our minds, whence at best we know but in part, and through Ignorance are ready to wander out of the way, Heb. 5. 2. in the *Deceitfulness of the Heart*, and disorder of Affections. I understand not how any one can think of pleading his own Righteousness in the sight of God, or suppose that he can be justified by it upon this single account of the Imperfection of its *Inherent Habit or Principle*. Such notions arise from the Ignorance of God and our selves, or the want of a due consideration of the one and the other. Neither can I apprehend how a *thousand Distinctions* can safely introduce it into any place or consideration in our Justification before God. He that can search in any measure by a spiritual light into his own Heart and Soul, will find, *God be merciful to me a sinner*, a better plea than any he can be furnished withall from any worth of his own. *What is man that he should be clean, and he that is born of a woman that he should be righteous*, Job 15. 14, 15, 16. chap. 18. 19. Hence saith Gregory in Job 9. lib. 9. cap. 14. *Ut saepe diximus omnis Justitia humana injustitia esse convincitur si distincte judicetur.* Bernard speaks to the same purpose, and almost in the same words,

words, *Serm. 1. fest. omn. sanct. Quid potest esse omnis humana justitia coram Deo? nonne juxta Prophetam, velut pannus menstruatus reputabitur; & si distincte judicetur, injustitia invenietur omnis Justitia nostra & minus habens.* A man cannot be justified in any sense by that *Righteousness* which upon Trial will appear rather to be an *Unrighteousness*.

2. It is *imperfect* with respect unto every *Act and Duty* of it, whether internal or external. There is *Iniquity* cleaving unto our *holy things*, and all our *Righteousnesses* are as *filthy rags*, *Isa. 64. 6.* It hath been often and well observed, that if a man, the best of men, were left to choose the best of his works that ever he performed, and thereon to enter into Judgment with God, if only under this notion, that he hath answered and fulfilled the Condition required of him, as unto his Acceptation with God, it would be his wisest course, (at least it would be so in the Judgment of *Bellarmin*) to renounce it, and betake himself unto *Grace and Mercy* alone.

3. It is imperfect by reason of the *Incurſion of actual sins*. Hence our Saviour hath taught us continually to pray for the *forgiveness of our sins*; and if we say, that *we have no sin we deceive our selves*; for in many things we offend all. And what confidence can be placed in this *Righteousness*, which those who plead for it in this cause, acknowledge to be *weak, maimed, and imperfect*.

I have but touched on these things, which might have been handled at large, and are indeed of great consideration in our present Argument. But enough hath been spoken to manifest, that although this *Righteousness of Believers* be on other accounts like the *fruit of the Vine*, that glads the Heart of God and man, yet as unto our *Justification before God*, it is like the *Wood of the Vine*, a pin is not to be taken from it to hang any weight of this cause upon.

Two things are pleaded in the behalf of this Righteousness and its Influence into our Justification. (1) That it is *absolutely compleat and perfect*. Hence some say that they are *perfect and sinless* in this life. They have no more concern in the *mortification of sin*, nor of *growth in Grace*. And indeed this is the only *rational pretence* of ascribing our Justification before God thereunto. For were it so with any, what should hinder him from being *justified thereon* before God, but only that he hath *been a sinner*, which spoils the whole market. But this vain Imagination is so contrary unto the Scripture, and the Experience of all that know the Terrour of the Lord, and what it is to walk humbly before him, as that I shall not insist on the Refutation of it.

2. It is pleaded, that although *this Righteousness be not an exact fulfilling of the moral Law*, yet is it the *Accomplishment of the Condition of the New Covenant*, or entirely answereth the *Law of Grace*, and all that is required of us therein.

*Ans.* 1. This wholly takes away *sin* and the *pardon* of it, no less then doth the conceit of sinless perfections which we now rejected. For if our Obedience do answer the *only Law and Rule of it* whereby it is to be tried, measured and judged, then is there *no sin* in us, nor need of pardon. No more is required of any man to keep him absolutely free from sin, but that he fully answer, and exactly comply with the Rule and Law of his Obedience whereby he must be judged. On this supposition therefore there is neither sin, nor any need of the pardon of it. To say that there is still both sin, and need of pardon with respect unto the *moral Law of God*, is to confess that Law to be the *Rule of our Obedience*, which this Righteousness doth no way answer; and therefore none by it can be justified in the sight of God.

2. Although this Righteousness be *accepted* in justified persons by the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, yet consider the principle of it, with all the Acts and Duties wherein it doth

consist, as they are required and prescribed in the *Gospel* unto us, and they do neither joyntly nor severally fulfil and answer the *commands of the Gospel* no more then they do the commands of the Law. Wherefore they cannot all of them constitute a Righteousness consisting in an exact conformity unto the Rules of the Gospel, or the Law of it. For it is impious to imagine that the Gospel requiring any Duty of us, *suppose the Love of God*, doth make any *Abatement*, as unto the matter, manner, or degrees of perfection in it, from what was required by the Law. Doth the Gospel require a *lower degree* of Love to God, a *less perfect* Love than the Law did? God forbid. The same may be said concerning the inward frame of our natures, and all other Duties whatever; wherefore although this Righteousness is accepted in justified Persons, (as God had *respect unto Abel*, and then *unto his Offering*) in the way and unto the ends that shall be afterwards declared; yet as it relates unto the commands of the Gospel, both it and all the Duties of it, are no less imperfect, then it would be, if it should be left unto its Trial by the Law of Creation only.

3. I know not what some men intend. On the one hand they affirm that our Lord Jesus Christ hath enlarged and heightened the *spiritual sense* of the moral Law, and not only so, but *added* unto it new precepts of more exact Obedience than it did require. But on the other they would have him to have *brought down* or taken off the Obligation of the Law, so as that a man according as he hath adapted it unto the use of the Gospel, shall be judged of God to have fulfilled the whole Obedience which it requires, who never answered any *one precept* of it according unto its original sense and obligation. For so it must be, if this imperfect Righteousness be on any account esteemed a *fulfilling of the Rule* of our Obedience, as that thereon we should be justified in the sight of God.

## *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ.* 337

4. This opinion puts an irreconcilable Difference between the *Law* and the *Gospel*, not to be composed by any distinctions. For according unto it, God declares by the *Gospel* a man to be *perfectly Righteous*, justified and blessed, upon the consideration of a *Righteousness that is imperfect*; and in the *Law* he pronounceth every one accursed who continueth not *in all things* required by it, and as they are therein required. But it is said that this Righteousness is no otherwise to be considered, but as *the condition of the new Covenant whereon we obtain Remission of sins on the sole account of the satisfaction of Christ* wherein our Justification doth consist.

*Ans.* 1. Some indeed do say so, but not all, not the most, not the *most learned* with whom in this controversie we have to do. And in our Pleas for what we believe to be the Truth, we cannot always have respect unto every *private opinion* whereby it is opposed. (2) That Justification consists only in the *pardon of sin*, is so contrary to the signification of the Word, the constant use of it in the Scripture, the common notion of it amongst mankind, the sense of men in their own Consciences who find themselves under an Obligation unto Duty, and express Testimonies of the Scripture, as that I somewhat wonder, how it can be pretended. But it shall be spoken unto elsewhere. (3) If this Righteousness, be the *fulfilling of the condition of the new Covenant* whereon we are justified, it must be in it self such as exactly answereth some *Rule or Law of Righteousness* and so be perfect, which it doth not; and therefore cannot bear the place of a Righteousness in our Justification. (4) That this Righteousness is the condition of our Justification before God, or of that interest in the Righteousness of Christ whereby we are justified, is not proved, nor ever will be.

I shall briefly add two or three considerations excluding this *personal Righteousness* from its pretended interest in our Justification, and close this Argument.

1. *That Righteousness which neither answereth the Law of God, nor the end of God in our Justification by the Gospel, is not that whereon we are Justified.* But such is this inherent Righteousness of Believers, even of the best of them. (1) That it answereth not the *Law of God*, hath been proved from its Imperfection. Nor will any sober person pretend that it exactly and perfectly fulfills the Law of our Creation. And this Law cannot be disannulled whilst the Relation of Creator and Rewarder on the one hand, and of Creatures capable of Obedience and Rewards on the other between God and us doth continue. Wherefore that which answereth not this *Law* will not justify us. For God will not abrogate that Law, that the Transgressors of it may be justified. Do we saith the Apostle ( by the Doctrine of Justification by Faith without Works ) *make void the Law? God forbid; yea we establish it, Rom. 3. 31.* ( 2 ) That we should be justified with respect unto it, answereth not the end of God in our Justification by the Gospel. For this is to take away all *glorying in our selves*, and all occasion of it, every thing that might give countenance unto it, so as that the whole might be to the praise of his own Grace by Christ, *Rom. 3. 27. 1 Cor. 1. 29, 30, 31.* How it is Faith alone that gives glory to God herein, hath been declared in the Description of its nature. But it is evident that no man hath, or can have possibly any other, any greater occasion of *boasting* in himself, with respect unto his Justification, then that he is justified on his *performance of that condition of it, which consists in his own personal Righteousness.*

2. *No man was ever justified by it in his own Conscience, much less can he be justified by it in the sight of God.* For God is greater then our Hearts and knoweth all things. There is

## *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ.* 339

no man so Righteous, so Holy in the whole World, nor ever was, but his *own Conscience* would charge him in many things with his coming short of the Obedience required of him, in matter or manner, in the kind or degrees of perfection. For *there is no man that liveth and sinneth not.* Absolutely, *Nemo absolvitur se iudice.* Let any man be put unto a Trial in himself whether he can be justified in his own Conscience, by his own Righteousness, and he will be cast in the Trial at his own Judgment seat. And he that doth not thereon conclude, that there must be *another Righteousness* whereby he must be justified, that originally and inherently is not his own, will be at a loss for peace with God. But it will be said, *that men may be justified in their Consciences, that they have performed the condition of the new Covenant, which is all that is pleaded with respect unto this Righteousness.* And I no way doubt but that men may have a comfortable persuasion of their own *sincerity* in Obedience, and satisfaction in the Acceptance of it with God. But it is when they try it, as an effect of Faith, whereby they are justified, and not as the condition of their Justification. Let it be thus stated in their minds that God *requireth a personal Righteousness in order unto their Justification*, whereon their Determination must be, *this is my Righteousness which I present unto God that I may be justified*, and they will find difficulty in arriving at it, if I be not much mistaken.

3. *None of the Holy men of old whose Faith and Experience are recorded in the Scripture, did ever plead their own personal Righteousness under any Notion of it, either as to the merit of their Works, or as unto their compleat performance of what was required of them as the condition of the Covenant in order unto their Justification before God.* This hath been spoken unto before.

## C H A P. XI.

*The nature of the Obedience that God requireth of us. The Eternal obligation of the Law thereunto.*

**O**Ur second Argument shall be taken from the *nature of that Obedience* or Righteousness which God requireth of us, that we may be accepted of him and approved by him. This being a large subject if fully to be handled, I shall reduce what is of our present concernment in it, unto some special Heads or Observations.

1. God being a most perfect, and therefore a most free Agent, all his actings towards mankind, all his dealings with them, all his Constitutions and Laws concerning them, are to be resolved into his own Sovereign will and pleasure. No other reason can be given of the *Original*, of the whole *Systeme* of them. This the Scripture testifieth unto, *Psal.* 115. 3. 135. 6. *Prov.* 16. 4. *Ephes.* 1. 9, 11. *Rev.* 4. 11. The being, existence, and natural circumstances of all Creatures; being an effect of the free Counsel and pleasure of God, all that belongs unto them must be ultimately resolved thereinto.

2. Upon a supposition of some *free Acts of the will of God* and the execution of them, constituting an order in the things that *outwardly are of him*, and their mutual respect unto one another, some things may become necessary in this *Relative state*, whose being was not *absolutely* necessary in its own nature. The order of all things and their mutual respect unto one another, depends on Gods free Constitution,

no less than their being absolutely. But upon a supposition of that Constitution, things have in that order, a necessary Relation one to another, and all of them unto God. Wherefore

3. It was a *free Sovereign act of Gods will* to create, effect or produce such a Creature as man is; that is, of a nature intelligent, rational, capable of moral Obedience with Rewards and Punishments. But on supposition hereof, man so freely made, could not be governed any other ways but by a *moral Instrument of Law* or Rule, influencing the rational faculties of his Soul unto Obedience, and guiding him therein. He could not in that constitution be contained under the *Rule of God*, by a mere *Physical influence*, as are all irrational or brute Creatures. To suppose it, is to deny or destroy, the essential faculty and powers wherewith he was created. Wherefore on the *supposition of his being*, it was necessary that a Law or Rule of Obedience should be prescribed unto him, and be the *Instrument* of Gods Government towards him.

4. This necessary Law, so far forth as it was necessary, did immediately and unavoidably ensue upon the constitution of our natures in Relation unto God. Supposing the nature, being, and properties of God, with the works of Creation on the one hand; and suppose the being, existence and the nature of man, with his necessary Relation unto God, on the other, and the Law whereof we speak is nothing but the *Rule of that Relation*, which can neither be, nor be preserved without it. Hence is this Law eternal, indispensable, admitting of no other variation; than doth the Relation between God and man, which is a necessary exurgence from their distinct natures and properties.

5. The *substance of this Law* was, that man adhering unto God, absolutely, universally; unchangeably, uninterruptedly, in trust, love, and fear, as the chiefest good, the first Author

of his being, of all the present and future Advantages whereof it was capable, *should yield Obedience* unto him, with respect unto his infinite Wisdom, Righteousness and Almighty Power, to protect, reward, and punish, in all things known to be his will and pleasure, either by the light of his own mind, or especial Revelation made unto him. And it is evident that no more is required unto the constitution and establishment of this Law, but that *God be God, and Man be Man*, with the necessary Relation that must thereon ensue between them. Wherefore

6. This Law doth eternally and *unchangeably oblige* all men unto Obedience to God; even that Obedience which it requires, and in the manner wherein it requires it. For both the substance of what it requires, and the manner of the performance of it, as unto measures and degrees, are equally necessary and unalterable, upon the suppositions laid down. For God cannot *deny himself*, nor is the nature of man changed as unto the essence of it whereunto alone respect is had in this Law, by any thing that can fall out. And although God might superadd unto the *original Obligations* of this Law, what Arbitrary commands he pleased, such as did not necessarily proceed or arise from the Relation between him and us, which might be, and be continued without them; yet would they be resolved into that Principle of this Law, that God in all things was absolutely to be trusted and obeyed.

7. *Known unto God are all his Works from the foundation of the World.* In the constitution of this order of things he made it possible, and foresaw it would be future, that man would rebell against the *preceptive power* of this Law, and disturb that order of things wherein he was placed under his moral Rule. This gave occasion unto that effect of infinite Divine Righteousness, in constituting the punishment that man should fall under upon his Transgression of this Law.

Neither

Neither was this an effect of *Arbitrary will and pleasure*, any more than the Law it self was. Upon the supposition of the Creation of man, the Law mentioned was necessary from all the Divine Properties of the nature of God; And upon a supposition that man would Transgress that Law, God being now considered as his Ruler and Governour, the *Constitution of the punishment* due unto his Sin and Transgression of it, was a necessary effect of Divine Righteousness. This it would not have been, had the Law it self been Arbitrary. But that being necessary, so was the penalty of its Transgression. Wherefore the constitution of this penalty, is liable to no more change, alteration, or abrogation, then the Law it self, without an alteration in the state and relation between God and man.

8. This is that Law, which our Lord Jesus Christ came *not to destroy, but to fulfil*, that he might be the end of it for Righteousness unto them that do believe. This Law he *abrogated not*, nor could do so without a Destruction of the Relation that is between God and man, arising from or ensuing necessarily on their distinct Beings and Properties. But as this cannot be destroyed, so the Lord Christ came unto a contrary end; namely, to repair and restore it where it was weakned. Wherefore

9. This Law, *the Law of Sinless perfect Obedience*, with its sentence of the punishment of Death on all Transgressors, doth and must abide in force for ever in this World; For there is no more required hereunto, but that God be God, and Man be Man. Yet shall this be farther proved.

1. There is nothing, not *one word* in the Scripture intimating any alteration in, or Abrogation of this Law; so as that any thing should *not be duty* which it makes *to be duty*, or any thing *not be sin*, which it makes *to be sin*, either as unto matter or degrees, or that the thing which it makes to be sin, or which is sin by the Rule of it, should not merit and deserve that

that punishment which is declared in the sanction of it, or threatned by it. *The wages of sin is Death.* If any Testimony of Scripture can be produced unto either of these purposes; namely, that either any thing is not sin, in the way of Omission or Commission, in the matter or manner of its performance, which is made to be so by this Law, or that any such sin, or any thing that would have been sin by this Law, is *exempted from the punishment* threatned by it, as unto merit or desert, it shall be attended unto. It is therefore in universal force towards all mankind. There is no Relief in this case; But *behold the Lamb of God.*

In exception hereunto it is pleaded, that when it was first given unto *Adam*, it was the *Rule and Instrument* of a Covenant between God and man, a Covenant of Works and perfect Obedience. But upon the entrance of sin, it ceased to have the *nature of a Covenant* unto any. And it is so ceased, that on an impossible supposition, that any man should *fulfil the perfect Righteousness* of it, yet should he not be justified or obtain the benefit of the Covenant thereby. It is not therefore only *become ineffectual* unto us as a Covenant by reason of our weakness and disability to perform it, but it is ceased in *its own nature* so to be. But these things as they are not unto our present purpose, so are they wholly unproved. For

I. Our Discourse is not about the *Fæderal adjunct* of the Law, but about its *moral nature* only. It is enough, that as a *Law*, it continueth to oblige all mankind unto perfect Obedience, under its Original penalty. For hence it will unavoidably follow, that unless the commands of it be complied withal and fulfilled, the penalty will fall on all that Transgress it. And those who grant that this Law is still in force as unto its being a *Rule of Obedience*, or as unto its requiring Duties of us, do grant all that we desire. For it requires no Obedience, but what it did in its Original constitution, that

is *sinless* and perfect; and it requires no Duty, nor prohibits any sin, but under the Penalty of Death upon disobedience.

2. It is true, that he who is *once a sinner*, if he should afterwards yield all that perfect Obedience unto God that the *Law requires*, he could not thereby obtain the Benefit of the Promise of the Covenant. But the sole Reason of it is, because he *is antecedently a sinner*, and so obnoxious unto the Curse of the Law. And no man can be obnoxious unto its Curse, and have a right unto its Promise at the same time. But so to lay the supposition, that the same person is by any means free from the Curse due unto sin, and then to deny that upon the performance of that perfect *sinless Obedience* which the Law requires, that he should not have right unto the Promise of Life thereby, is to deny the Truth of God, and to reflect the highest dishonour upon his Justice. Jesus Christ himself was justified by this Law. And it is immutably true, that he who doth the things of it shall live therein.

3. It is granted, that man continued not in the Observation of this Law, as it was the *Rule of the Covenant* between God and him. The Covenant it was not, but the *Rule of it*, which that it should be was *superadded* unto its Being as a Law. For the Covenant comprized things that were not any part of a Result from the *necessary Relation* of God and Man. Wherefore man by his sin as unto *Demerit*, may be said to break this Covenant, and as unto any Benefit unto themselves to disannul it. It is also true, that God did never formally and absolutely renew or give again this Law *as a Covenant* a second time. Nor was there any need that so he should do, unless it were *declaratively* only, for so it was renewed at *Sinai*. For the whole of it being an *Emanation of Eternal Right and Truth*, it abides and must abide in full force for ever. Wherefore it is only thus far *broke as a Covenant*, that

all Mankind having sinned against the Commands of it, and so by Guilt, with the Impotency unto Obedience which ensued thereon, defeated themselves of any Interest in its Promise, and possibility of attaining any such interest, they cannot have any Benefit by it. But as unto its power to *oblige* all mankind unto Obedience, and the unchangeable Truth of its Promises and Threatnings, it abideth the same as it was from the Beginning.

2ly, Take away this *Law*, and there is left no *standard of Righteousness* unto mankind, no certain boundaries of Good and Evil, but those pillars whereon God hath fixed the Earth are left to move and flote up and down like the Isle of *Delos* in the Sea. Some say, the Rule of Good and Evil unto men is not this *Law* in its original constitution, but the *Light of Nature*, and the Dictates of Reason. If they mean that Light which was primogenial and concreated with our natures, and those Dictates of Right and Wrong which Reason originally suggested and approved, they only say in other words, that *this Law is still the unalterable Rule of Obedience* unto all mankind. But if they intend the remaining Light of Nature that continues in every individual in this depraved state thereof, and that under such *additional Depravations* as Traditions, Customs, Prejudices, and Lusts of all sorts, have affixed unto the most, there is nothing more irrational, and it is that which is charged with no less inconvenience than that it leaves no *certain Boundaries* of Good and Evil. That which is *Good* unto one, will on this Ground be in its own *nature evil* unto another, and so on the contrary; and all the Idolaters that ever were in the World might on this pretence be excused.

3ly, *Conscience* bears witness hereunto. There is no Good nor Evil required or forbidden by this *Law*, that upon the Discovery of it any man in the World can perswade or bribe his *Conscience* not to comply with it in Judgment, as  
unto

unto his concernment therein. It will *accuse* and *excuse*, condemn and free him, according to the sentence of this Law, let him do what he can to the contrary.

In brief it is acknowledged, that God by virtue of his supream Dominion over all, may in some Instances change the *nature and order of things*, so as the Precepts of the Divine Law shall not in them operate in their ordinary efficacy. So was it in the case of his command unto *Abraham* to slay his Son, and unto the *Israelites* to rob the *Ægyptians*. But on a supposition of the continuance of that *order of things* which this Law is the preservative of, such is the intrinsic nature of the Good and Evil commanded and forbidden therein, that it is not the subject of divine Dispensation, as even the School-men generally grant.

10. From what we have discoursed two things do unavoidably ensue.

1. That whereas all mankind have by sin fallen under the *Penalty* threatned unto the Transgression of this Law ; and suffering of this *Penalty* which is Eternal Death, being inconsistent with Acceptance before God, or the enjoyment of Blessedness, it is utterly impossible that any one individual person of the posterity of *Adam* should be justified in the sight of God, accepted with him or blessed by him, unless this *Penalty* be answered, undergone, and suffered by them or for them ; the *δικαιωμα τῆς ὀψῆς* herein is not to be abolished but established.

2. That unto the same End of *Acceptation with God*, Justification before him, and Blessedness from him, the Righteousness of this Eternal Law must be fulfilled in us, in such a way, as that in the Judgment of God which is according unto Truth, we may be esteemed to have *fulfilled it*, and be dealt with accordingly. For upon a supposition of a failure herein, the sanction of the Law is not Arbitrary, so as that the *Penalty* may or may not be inflicted, but *necessary* from

the Righteousness of God as the supream Governour of all.

11. About the first of these our Controversie is with the *Socinians* only, who deny the satisfaction of Christ, and any necessity thereof. Concerning this I have treated elsewhere at large, and expect not to see an *Answer* unto what I have disputed on that Subject. As unto the latter of them, we must enquire how we may be supposed to comply with the *Rule, and answer the Righteousness* of this unalterable Law, whose Authority we can no way be exempted from. And that which we plead is, that *the Obedience and Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us*; His Obedience as the surety of the New Covenant, granted unto us, made ours by the gracious Constitution, Sovereign Appointment and Donation of God, is that whereon we are judged and esteemed to have *answered the Righteousness* of the Law. *By the Obedience of One many are made Righteous*, Rom. 5. 19. *That the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us*, Rom. 8. 4. And hence we argue.

*If there be no other way whereby the Righteousness of the Law may be fulfilled in us, without which we cannot be justified, but must fall inevitably under the Penalty threatned unto the Transgression of it, but only the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us, then is that the sole Righteousness whereby we are justified in the sight of God*; But the former is true, and so therefore is the latter.

12. On the supposition of this Law, and its original obligation unto Obedience with its Sanction and Threatnings, there can be but one of three ways whereby we may come to be justified before God, who have sinned, and are no way able in our selves to perform the Obedience for the future which it doth require. And each of them have a respect unto a *Sovereign Act of God* with reference unto this Law. The first is the *Abrogation* of it, that it should no more oblige us either unto Obedience or Punishment. This we have proved *impossible*; and they will wofully deceive their own Souls, who

who shall trust unto it. The second is by transferring of its *Obligation* unto the End of Justification on a *surety* or *common undertaker*. This is that which we plead for, as the substance of the mystery of the Gospel, considering the Person and Grace of this Undertaker or Surety. And herein all things do tend unto the Exaltation of the Glory of God in all the holy properties of his nature, with the fulfilling and establishing of the Law it self, *Math. 5. 17. Rom. 3. 31. chap. 8. 4. chap. 10. 3, 4.* The third way is by an Act of God towards the Law, and another towards us, whereby the *nature of the Righteousness which the Law requireth is changed*; which we shall examine as the only reserve against our present Argument.

13. It is said therefore that by *our own personal Obedience we do answer the Righteousness of the Law so far as it is required of us*. But whereas no sober person can imagine that we can, or that any one in our lapsed condition ever did yield in our own persons that *perfect sinless Obedience* unto God which is required of us in the Law of Creation, two things are supposed that our Obedience, such as it is, may be accepted with God as if it were *sinless* and *perfect*. For although some will not allow that the Righteousness of Christ is imputed unto us for *what it is*, yet they contend that our own Righteousness is imputed unto us for *what it is not*. Of these things the one respecteth the *Law*, the other our *Obedience*.

14. That which respecteth the Law is not the *Abrogation* of it. For although this would seem the most expedite way for the Reconciliation of this Difficulty, namely, that the Law of Creation is utterly *abrogated* by the Gospel, both as unto its Obligation unto Obedience and Punishment; and no Law to be continued in force but that which requires only *sincere Obedience* of us, whereof there is as unto Duties the manner of their performance, not any absolute Rule or Measure, yet this is not by many pretended. They say not that

that this Law is so *abrogated*, as that it should not have the power and efficacy of a *Law* towards us. Nor is it possible it should be so; nor can any pretence be given how it should be. It is true, it was broken by man, is so by us all, and that with respect unto its principal End of our Subjection unto God, and dependance upon him, according to the Rule of it. But it is *foolish* to think that the fault of those unto whom a *Righteous Law* is rightly given, should *abrogate* or *disannul* the Law it self. A Law that is good and just may cease and expire as unto any power of Obligation upon the ceasing or expiration of the Relation which it did respect. So the Apostle tells us, that when the *Husband of a Woman is dead*, she is *free from the Law of her Husband*, *Rom. 7. 2.* But the Relation between God and us, which was constituted in our first Creation, can never cease. But a Law cannot be *abrogated* without a new Law given, and made by the same, or an equal power that made it, either expressly revoking it, or enjoying things inconsistent with it, and contradictory unto its observation. In the latter way the Law of *Mosaical Institutions* was abrogated and disannulled. There was not any positive Law made for the taking of it away; but the Constitution and Introduction of a new way of Worship by the Gospel inconsistent with it, and contrary unto it, deprived it of all its obligatory power and efficacy. But neither of these ways hath God taken away the obligation of the Original Law of Obedience, either as unto *Duties* or Recompences of Reward. Neither is there any *direct Law* made for its *Abrogation*; nor hath he given any *new Law* of moral Obedience either inconsistent with, or contrary unto it. Yea in the Gospel it is declared to be *established* and fulfilled.

It is true, as was observed before, that this Law was made the Instrument of a *Covenant* between God and Man; and so there is another Reason of it; For God hath actually *introduced*

duced another Covenant inconsistent with it, and contrary unto it. But yet neither doth this instantly and *ipso facto* free all men unto the Law, in the way of a Covenant. For unto the Obligation of a Law there is no more required, but that the *matter* of it be Just and Righteous, that it be given or made by him who hath *just Authority* so to give or make it, and be *sufficiently declared* unto them who are to be obliged by it. Hence the making and promulgation of a *new Law*, doth *ipso facto* abrogate any former Law that is contrary unto it, and frees all men from Obedience unto it, who were before obliged by it. But in a *Covenant* it is not so. For a *Covenant* doth not operate by *meer Sovereign Authority*; it becomes not a *Covenant* without the consent of them with whom it is made. Wherefore no *Benefit* accrues unto any, or freedom from the *Old Covenant*, by the constitution of the new, unless he hath actually complied with it, hath chosen it, and is interested in it thereby. The first *Covenant* made with *Adam*, we did in him consent unto, and accept of. And therein notwithstanding our sin, do we and must we abide, that is, under the *Obligation* of it unto Duty and Punishment, until by Faith we are made partakers of the new. It cannot therefore be said, that we are not concerned in the fulfilling of the Righteousness of this Law, because it is *abrogated*.

15. Nor can it be said that the Law hath received a new *Interpretation*, whereby it is declared, that it doth not *oblige*, nor shall be construed for the future to oblige any unto sinless and perfect Obedience, but may be complied with on far easier terms. For the Law being given unto us when we were sinless, and on purpose to continue and preserve us in that condition, it is absurd to say that it did not *oblige* us unto sinless Obedience; and not an *Interpretation*, but a plain Depravation of its sense and meaning. Nor is any such thing once intimated in the Gospel. Yea the *Discourses of our Sa-  
viour*

*viour* upon the Law, are absolutely destructive of any such Imagination. For whereas the *Scribes and Pharisees* had attempted by their false Glosses and Interpretations to accommodate the Law unto the Inclinations and Lusts of men, ( a course since pursued both notionally and practically, as all who design to burden the Consciences of men with their own commands, do endeavour constantly to recompence them, by an Indulgence with respect unto the commands of God ) He on the contrary rejects all such pretended *Epikeia's* and Interpretations, restoring the *Law unto its pristine Crown*, as the Jews Tradition is, that the *Messiah* shall do.

16. Nor can a *Relaxation of the Law* be pretended, if there be any such thing in Rule. For if there be, it respects the whole *being of the Law*, and consists either in the *suspension* of its *whole Obligation*, at least for a season, or the *substitution* of another person to answer its demands who was not in the original Obligation, in the room of them that were. For so some say, that the Lord Christ was *made under the Law for us* by an Act of *Relaxation* of the original Obligation of the Law ; how properly, *ipsi viderint*. But here in no sense it can have place.

17. The Act of God towards the Law in this case intended, is, a *Derogation* from its obliging power as unto Obedience. For whereas it did originally oblige unto *perfect sinless Obedience*; in all Duties, both as unto their substance, and the manner of their performance, it shall be allowed to oblige us still unto *Obedience*, but not unto that which is absolutely the same, especially not as unto the compleatness and perfection of it. For if it do so, either it is fulfilled in the Righteousness of Christ for us, or no man living can ever be justified in the sight of God. Wherefore by an Act of *Derogation* from its Original power, it is provided, that it shall oblige us still unto *Obedience*, but not that which is *absolutely sinless*

less and perfect; but although it be performed with less intension of Love unto God, or in a lower Degree, then it did at first require, so it be *sincere* and *universal* as unto all the parts of it, it is all that the Law now requireth of us. This is all that it now requires, as it is adapted unto the service of the new Covenant, and made the *Rule of Obedience* according to the Law of Christ. Hereby is its *preceptive part*, so far as we are concerned in it, answered and complied withall. Whether these things are so or no, we shall see immediately in a few words.

18. Hence it follows, that the act of God with respect unto our Obedience, is not an act of Judgment according unto any Rule or Law of his own; but an *Acceptilation*, or an esteeming, accounting, accepting that *as perfect*, or in the Room of that which is perfect, which really and in truth is *not so*.

19. It is added that both these depend on, and are the *procurements* of the Obedience, suffering, and merits of Christ. For on their account it is, that our weak and imperfect Obedience, is accepted as if it were perfect, and the power of the Law, to require Obedience absolutely perfect is taken away. And these being the effects of the Righteousness of Christ, that Righteousness may on their account, and so far, be said to be imputed unto us.

20. But notwithstanding the great endeavours that have been used to give a colour of Truth unto these things, they are both of them but fictions and imaginations of men that have no ground in the Scripture, nor do comply with the experience of them that believe. For to touch a little on the

latter, in the first place ; There is no true Believer but hath these two things fixed in his mind and conscience.

1. That there is nothing in principles, habits, qualities, actions, wherein he comes short of a perfect compliance with the Holy Law of God, even as it required perfect Obedience, but that it hath in it the *nature of sin*, and that in it self deserving the Curse annexed Originally unto the breach of that Law. They do not therefore apprehend that its *Obligation* is taken off, weakned or *derogated* from in any thing. ( 2 ) That there is no Relief for him, with respect unto what the Law requires, or unto what it threatens, but by the *Mediation of Jesus Christ* alone, who of God is made Righteousness unto him. Wherefore they do not rest in, or on the acceptation of their own Obedience such as it is, to answer the Law, but trust unto Christ alone for their acceptation with God.

21. They are both of them *doctrinally* untrue ; For as unto the former ; ( 1 ) It is *unwritten*. There is no Intimation in the Scripture of any such Dispensation of God with reference unto the Original Law of Obedience. Much is spoken of our Deliverance from the Curse of the Law by Christ, but of the Abatement of its preceptive power nothing at all. ( 2 ) It is *contrary to the Scripture*. For it is plainly affirmed that the *Law is not to be abolished, but fulfilled* ; not to be *made void*, but to be *established* ; that the *Righteousness of it must be fulfilled in us*. ( 3 ) It is a supposition both unreasonable and impossible. For ( 1 ) the Law was a *Representation* unto us of the *Holiness of God*, and his Righteousness in the Government of his Creatures. There can be no Alteration made herein, seeing with God himself there is no variableness nor shadow of changing. ( 2 ) It would leave

leave no *standard of Righteousness*, but only a *Lesbian Rule*, which turns and apply's it self unto the light and abilities of men, and leaves at least as many *various measures* of Righteousness as there are Believers in the World. ( 3 ) It includes a *variation in the center of all Religion*, which is the natural and moral Relation of men unto God. For so there must be, if all that was once necessary thereunto, do not still continue so to be. ( 4 ) It is dishonourable unto the mediation of Christ. For it makes the principal end of it to be, that God should accept of a *Righteousness unto our Justification*, inexpressibly beneath that which he required in the Law of our Creation. And this in a sense makes him the *Minister of sin*, or that he hath procured an Indulgence unto it; not by the way of satisfaction and pardon whereby he takes away the guilt of it from the Church; but by taking from it its nature and demerit, so as that what was so originally should not continue so to be, or at least not to deserve the punishment it was first threatned withal. ( 5 ) It reflects on the goodness of God himself. For on this supposition that he hath *reduced his Law* into that state and order, as to be satisfied by an observation of it *so weak, so imperfect*, accompanied with so many failures and sins, as it is with the Obedience of the best men in this World, ( whatever thoughts unto the contrary the Phrensic of Pride may suggest unto the minds of any ) what reason can be given consistent with his goodness, why he should give a Law at first of perfect Obedience, which one sin laid all mankind under the penalty of unto their Ruine ?

22. All these things and sundry others of the same kind, do follow also on the *second supposition* of an *Acceptilation* or an Imaginary estimation of that as perfect, which is imperfect, as sinless which is attended with sins innumerable. But the  
*Judgment*

*Judgment of God is according unto Truth; neither will he reckon that unto us for a perfect Righteousness in his sight, which is so imperfect as to be like tattered Rags, especially, having promised unto us, Robes of Righteousness and Garments of Salvation.*

*That which necessarily followeth on these Discourses is, That there is no other way whereby the original, immutable Law of God, may be established, and fulfilled with respect unto us, but by the Imputation of the perfect Obedience and Righteousness of Christ, who is the end of the Law for Righteousness unto all that do believe.*

## CHAP. XII.

### *The Imputation of the Obedience of Christ unto the Law, Declared and Vindicated.*

FROM the foregoing General Argument, another doth issue in Particular, with respect unto *the Imputation of the Active Obedience or Righteousness of Christ unto us*, as an Essential part of that Righteousness whereon we are justified before God. And it is as followeth, *If it were necessary that the Lord Christ, as our Surety, should undergo the penalty of the Law for us, or in our stead, because we have all sinned; then it was necessary also, that as our Surety he should yield obedience unto the preceptive part of the Law for us also: And if the Imputation of the former be needful for us unto our Justification before God, then is the Imputation of the latter also necessary unto the same End and Purpose.* For why was it necessary, or why would God have it so, that the Lord Christ, as the Surety of the Covenant should *undergo the curse and penalty of the Law*, which we had incurred the guilt of, by sin, that we may be justified in his sight? Was it not, that the Glory and Honor of his Righteousness, as the Author of the Law, and the Supream Governor of all Mankind, thereby might not be violated in the *absolute impunity* of the infringers of it: And if it were requisite unto the glory of God, that the *penalty of the Law* should be undergone for us, or suffered by our Surety in our stead, because we had sinned: Wherefore is it not as requisite unto the glory of God, that the *preceptive part of the Law* be complied withal for us, in as much as obedience thereunto is required of us? And as we are no more able of our selves to *fulfil the Law*, in a way of obedience,

then to *undergo the penalty* of it, so as that we may be justified thereby : So no Reason can be given, why God is not as much concerned in Honor and Glory, that the *preceptive power* and part of the Law be complied withal, by perfect Obedience, as that the *sanction* of it be established by undergoing the penalty of it. Upon the same Grounds therefore, that the Lord Christs suffering the *penalty of the Law* for us, was necessary that we might be justified in the sight of God, and that the satisfaction he made thereby be imputed unto us, as we our selves had made satisfaction unto God, as *Bellarmino* speaks and grants: On the same it was equally necessary, that is, as unto the glory and honor of the *Legislator* and *Supream Governor* of all by the Law, that he should fulfil the *Preceptive part of it*, in his perfect obedience thereunto, which also is to be imputed unto us for our Justification.

Concerning the first of these, namely, the satisfaction of Christ, and the Imputation of it unto us, our principal Difference is with the *Socinians*. And I have elsewhere written so much in the vindication of the Truth therein, that I shall not here again reassume the same Argument: It is here therefore taken for granted, although I know that there are some different Apprehensions about the notion of *Christs suffering in our stead*, and of the Imputation of those sufferings unto us. But I shall here take no notice of them, seeing I press this Argument no farther, but only so far forth, that the *obedience of Christ unto the Law*, and the Imputation thereof unto us, is no less necessary unto our Justification before God, then his *suffering of the penalty of the Law*, and the Imputation thereof unto us, unto the same end. The nature of this Imputation, and what it is formally that is imputed, we have considered elsewhere.

That the Obedience of Christ the Mediator is thus imputed unto us, shall be afterwards proved in particular by Testimonies of the Scripture. Here I intend only the vindication

dication of the Argument as before laid down, which will take us up a little more time than ordinary. For there is nothing in the whole Doctrine of Justification, which meets with a more fierce and various opposition: But the Truth is great and will prevail.

The things that are usually objected and vehemently urged against the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ unto our Justification, may be reduced unto three heads. (1.) That it is *impossible*. (2.) That it is *useless*. (3.) That it is *pernicious* to believe it. And if the Arguments used for the enforcement of those Objections, be as cogent as the *charge it self is fierce and severe*, they will unavoidably overthrow the persuasions of it in the minds of all sober persons. But there is oft-times a wide difference between what is *said*, and what is *proved*, as will appear in the present case.

1. It is pleaded *impossible* on this single ground; namely, That the *Obedience of Christ unto the Law was due from him on his own account, and performed by him for himself, as a man made under the Law*. Now what was necessary unto *himself*, and done for *himself*, cannot be said to be done for us, so as to be imputed unto us.

2. It is pretended to be *useless* from hence, because all our *sins of omission and commission being pardoned in our justification on the account of the Death and satisfaction of Christ, we are thereby made compleatly righteous; so as that there is not the least necessity for, or use of the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ unto us*.

3. *Pernicious* also they say it is, as that which takes away the necessity of our own personal Obedience, introducing *Antinomianism, Libertinism, and all manner of evils*.

For this last part of the charge, I refer it unto its proper place: For although it be urged by some against this part of the Doctrine of Justification in a peculiar manner, yet is it managed by others, against the whole of it. And

364 *The Imputation of the obedience of Christ*  
although we should grant, that the *Obedience of Christ unto the Law*, is not imputed unto us unto our Justification, yet shall we not be freed from disturbance by this false accusation; unless we will renounce the whole of the *satisfaction and merit of Christ also*: And we intend not to purchase our Peace with the whole World, at so dear a rate. Wherefore I shall in its proper place give this part of the charge its due consideration, as it reflects on the whole Doctrine of Justification, and all the causes thereof, which we believe and profess.

The first part of this charge, concerning *the Impossibility of the Imputation of the obedience of Christ unto us*, is insisted on by *Socinus de Servat. part 3. cap. 5*. And there hath been nothing since pleaded unto the same purpose, but what hath been derived from him, or wherein, at least, he hath not prevented the Inventions of other Men, and gone before them. And he makes this consideration the principal engine wherewith he endeavors the overthrow of the whole *Doctrine of the merit of Christ*. For he supposeth, that if all he did in a way of Obedience, was due from himself on his own Account, and was only the duty which *he owed unto God for himself* in his station and circumstances, as a Man in this World, it cannot be *meritorious for us*, nor any way imputed unto us. And in like manner to weaken the Doctrine of his *Satisfaction*, and the Imputation thereof unto us, he contends that Christ *offered as a Priest for himself*, in that kind of offering which he made on the Cross. *Part. 2. cap. 22*. And his real opinion was, that whatever was of offering or sacrifice *in the Death of Christ*, it was for himself; that is, it was an *Act of Obedience* unto God which pleased him, as the *savor of a sweet smelling sacrifice*. His offering for us, is only the presentation of himself in the presence of God in Heaven; now he hath no more *to do for himself* in a way of Duty. And the truth is, if the Obedience of Christ had

had

had respect unto himself only; that is, If he yielded it unto God, on the necessity of his condition, and did not do it for us, I see no foundation left to assert his *merit* upon, no more then I do for the Imputation of it unto them that believe.

That which we plead is, *That the Lord Christ fulfilled the whole Law for us*; he did not only undergo the penalty of it due unto our sins, but also yielded that perfect Obedience which it did require. And herein I shall not immix my self in the debate of the distinction between the *Active and Passive Obedience of Christ*. For he exercised the highest Active Obedience in his suffering, when he offered himself to God through the Eternal Spirit. And all his Obedience, considering his Person was mixed with suffering, as a part of his *Exinanition and Humiliation*; whence it is said, *That though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things that he suffered*. And however, doing and suffering are in various categories of things, yet *Scripture testimonies* are not to be regulated by *Philosophical artifices and terms*. And it must needs be said, that the *Sufferings of Christ* as they were purely penal, are imperfectly called *His passive Righteousness*. For all *Righteousness* is either in *habit*, or in *action*, whereof *suffering* is neither; nor is any Man *righteous*, or so esteemed from what he *suffereth*. Neither do *sufferings* give satisfaction unto the commands of the Law, which require only Obedience. And hence it will unavoidably follow, that we have need of more then *the meer sufferings of Christ*, whereby we may be justified before God, if so be that any *Righteousness* be required thereunto. But the whole of what I intend is, That *Christ's fulfilling of the Law in Obedience unto its commands*, is no less imputed unto us for our Justification, then his undergoing the Penalty of it is.

I cannot but judge it sounds ill in the ears of all Christians, *That the Obedience of our Lord Jesus Christ as our Media-*

366 *The Imputation of the obedience of Christ*  
tor and Surety unto the whole Law of God, was for himself alone, and not for us; or that what he did therein, was not that he might be the end of the Law for Righteousness unto them that do believe, nor a means of the fulfilling of the Righteousness of the Law in us; especially considering, that the Faith of the Church is, *That he was given to us, born to us; that for us Men, and for our salvation he came down from Heaven, and did, and suffered what was required of him.* But whereas some who deny the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ, unto us for our Justification, do insist principally on the second thing mentioned, namely, the *unusefulness* of it, I shall under this first part of the charge, consider only the Arguings of *Socinus*, which is the whole of what some at present do endeavor to perplex the truth withal.

To this purpose is his discourse, *Part 3. cap. 5. de Servat. Jam vero manifestum est, Christum quia homo natus fuerat, & quidem, ut inquit Paulus, factus sub lege, legi divinæ inquam, quæ æterna & immutabilis est, non minus quam cæteri homines obnoxium fuisse. Alioqui potuisset Christus æternam Dei legem negligere, sive etiam universam si voluisset infringere, quod impium est vel cogitare. Immo ut supra alicubi explicatum fuit, nisi ipse Christus legi divinæ servandæ obnoxius fuisset, ut ex Pauli verbis colligitur, non potuisset iis, qui ei legi servandæ obnoxii sunt, opem ferre & eos ad immortalitatis firmam spem traducere. Non differebat igitur hac quidem ex parte, Christus quando homo natus erat a cæteris hominibus. Quocirca nec etiam pro aliis, magis quam quilibet alius homo, legem divinam conservando satisfacere potuit, quippe qui ipse eam servare omnino debuit.* I have transcribed his words, that it may appear with whose weapons some young Disputers, among our selves, do contend against the Truth.

The substance of his Plea is, *That our Lord Jesus Christ was for himself, or on his own account, obliged unto all that obedience which he performed.* And this he endeavors to prove  
with

with this Reason, *Because if it were otherwise, then he might, if he would, have neglected the whole Law of God, and have broken it at his pleasure.* For he forgot to consider, That if he were not obliged unto it upon his own account, but was so on ours, whose cause he had undertaken, the obligation on him unto most perfect obedience, was equal to what it would have been, had he been originally obliged on his own account. However hence he infers, that what he did, could not be for us, because *it was so for himself, no more then what any other man is bound to do in a way of duty for himself, can be esteemed to have been done also for another.* For he will allow of none of those considerations of the *Person of Christ* which makes what he did and suffered, of another nature and efficacy, then what can be done or suffered by any other Man. All that he adds, in the process of his discourse, is, *That what ever Christ did that was not required by the Law in general, was upon the especial command of God, and so done for himself; whence it cannot be imputed unto us.* And hereby he excludes the Church from any benefit by the Mediation of Christ, but only what consists in his Doctrine, Example, and the Exercise of his Power in Heaven for our good, which was the thing that he aimed at: But we shall consider those also which make use of his Arguments, though not as yet openly unto all his Ends.

To clear the Truth herein, the things ensuing must be observed.

I. The Obedience we treat of, was the Obedience of Christ the Mediator. But the Obedience of *Christ as the Mediator of the Covenant*, was the Obedience of his Person: *For God redeemed his Church with his own Blood, Acts 20. 28.* It was performed in the Humane Nature, but the Person of Christ was he that performed it. As in the Person of a Man, some of his acts, as to the immediate principle of operation, are *acts of the Body*, and some are *so of the Soul*; yet in their performance

performance and accomplishment, are they the acts of the Person. So the Acts of Christ in his Mediation, as to their *ἐνεργήματα* or *immediate operation*, were the actings of his distinct Natures; some of the Divine, and some of the Humane, immediately. But as unto their *σποτέλεσματα*, and *the perfecting efficacy of them*, they were the Acts of his whole Person: His Acts who was that Person, and whose Power of Operation was a property of his Person. Wherefore the Obedience of Christ which we plead to have been for us, was *the Obedience of the Son of God*; but *the Son of God* was never absolutely made *ὑπὸ νόμον* under the Law, nor could be formally obliged thereby. He was indeed, as the Apostle witnesseth, made so in his *Humane Nature*, wherein he performed this Obedience, *made of a Woman, made under the Law, Gal. 4. 4.* He was so far forth *made under the Law*, as he was made of a Woman. For in his Person he abode *Lord of the Sabbath, Mark 2. 28.* And therefore of the whole Law. But the Obedience it self, was the Obedience of *that Person*, who never was, nor ever could absolutely be made under the Law, in his whole Person. For the *Divine Nature* cannot be subjected unto an outward work of its own, such as the Law is; nor can it have an *Authoritative* commanding power over it, as it must have, if it were made *ὑπὸ νόμον* under the Law. Thus the Apostle argues, *That Levi paid Tithes in Abraham*, because he was then in his *Loyns*, when *Abraham* himself paid Tithes unto *Melchisedec. Heb. 7.* And thence he proves, That he was inferior unto the Lord Christ, of whom *Melchisedec* was a Type. But may it not thereon be replied, that then no less the Lord Christ was in the *Loyns* of Abraham than Levi: For verily, as the same Apostle speaks, *he took on him the Seed of Abraham.* It is true therefore, that he was so in respect of his *Humane Nature*; but as he was typed and represented by *Melchisedec* in his whole Person, without Father, without Mother, without Genealogy, without beginning of Days or End of

*Life:*

Life : So he was not absolutely in *Abrahams* Loyns, and was exempted from being *tithed in him*. Wherefore the Obedience whereof we treat, being not the Obedience of the *Humane Nature abstractedly*, however performed in and by the *Humane Nature*, but the Obedience of *the Person of the Son of God*, however the *Humane Nature* was subject to the Law, (in what Sense, and unto what Ends shall be declared afterwards) it was not for himself, nor could be for himself, because his *whole Person* was not obliged thereunto. It is therefore a fond thing to compare the Obedience of Christ, with that of any other Man, whose *whole person* is under the Law. For although that may not be for himself and others, (which yet we shall shew that in some cases it may;) yet this may, yea must *be for others*, and not for himself. This then we must strictly hold unto. If the Obedience that Christ yielded unto the Law were for himself, whereas it was the Act of his Person, his *whole Person*, and the Divine Nature therein, were *made under the Law*, which cannot be. For although it is acknowledged, that in the Ordination of God, his *Exinanition* was to precede his *Glorious Majestical Exaltation*, as the Scripture witnesseth. *Phil. 2. 9. Luk. 24. 26. Rom. 14. 9.* yet absolutely his Glory was an immediate consequent of the *Hypostatical Union*. *Heb. 1. 6. Matth. 2. 11.*

*Socinus*, I confess, evades the force of this Argument, by denying the *Divine Person of Christ*. But in this Disputation I take that for granted, as having proved it elsewhere, beyond what any of his followers are able to contradict. And if we may not *build on Truths* by him denied, we shall scarce have any *one principle of Evangelical Truth* left us to prove any thing from. However, I intend them only at present, who concur with him in the matter under debate, but renounce his opinion concerning *the Person of Christ*.

2. As our Lord Jesus Christ owed not in his *own Person* this Obedience for himself, by vertue of any Authority or Power that the Law had over him, so he *designed and intended it not for himself*, but for us. This added unto the former consideration, gives full evidence unto the Truth pleaded for: For if he was not obliged unto it for himself, his Person that yielded it, not being under the Law; and if he *intended it not for himself*, then it must be for us, or be useles: It was in our *Humane Nature*, that he performed all this Obedience. Now the *susception of our Nature*, was a voluntary Act of his own, with reference unto some end and purpose; and that which was the end of the *Assumption of our Nature*, was in like manner the End of all that he did therein. Now it was for *us*, and not *for himself*, that he assumed our nature; nor was any thing added unto him thereby: Wherefore in the issue of his Work, he proposeth this only unto himself, *That he may be glorified with that Glory which he had with the Father, before the World was*, by the removal of that veil which was put upon it in his *Exinanition*. But that it was for us, That he assumed our nature, is the foundation of Christian Religion; as it is asserted by the Apostle, *Heb. 2. 14. Phil. 2. 5, 6, 7, 8.*

Some of the *Antient Schoolmen* disputed, That the Son of God should have been incarnate, although Man had not sinned and fallen. The same opinion was fiercely pursued by *Osiander* as I have elsewhere declared; but none of them once imagined, that he should have *been so made Man*, as to be made under the Law, and be obliged thereby unto that Obedience which now he hath performed: But they judged that immediately he was to have been a *Glorious Head* unto the whole Creation. For it is a common notion and presumption of all Christians, but only such as will sacrifice such notions unto their own private conceptions, That the Obedience which Christ yielded unto the Law on the Earth, in  
the

the state and condition wherein he yielded it, was not for himself, but for the Church, which was obliged unto perfect Obedience, but was not able to accomplish it. That this was his sole End and Design in it, is a *Fundamental Article*, if I mistake not, of the *Creed* of most Christians in the World; and to deny it, doth consequentially overthrow all the Grace and Love both of the Father, and Son in his Mediation.

It is said, *That this Obedience was necessary as a Qualification of his Person, that he might be meet to be a Mediator for us; and therefore was for himself.* It belongs unto the necessary constitution of his Person, with respect unto his Mediatory Work: But this I *positively deny*. The Lord Christ was every way *meet* for the whole Work of Mediation, by the *ineffable union* of the *Humane Nature* with the *Divine*, which exalted it in Dignity, Honor, and Worth, above any thing, or all things that insued thereon. For hereby he became in his whole Person the object of all *Divine Worship and Honor*; for when *he brings the first begotten into the World, he saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him.* Again, That which is an *effect of the Person of the Mediator* as constituted such, is not a qualification necessary unto its constitution; that is, what *he did as Mediator*, did not concur to the making of him *meet so to be*. But of this Nature was all the Obedience which he yielded unto the Law, for as such, *It became him to fulfil all Righteousness.*

Whereas therefore he was neither made Man, nor of the Posterity of *Abraham* for himself, but for the Church, namely, to become thereby *the Surety of the Covenant*, and *Representative* of the whole, his obedience as a Man unto the Law in general, and as a *Son of Abraham* unto the Law of *Moses*, was for us, and not for himself; so designed, so performed, and without a respect unto the Church, was of no use unto himself. *He was born to us, and given to us, lived for*

us, and died for us, obeyed for us, and suffered for us; that by the obedience of one, many might be made Righteous. This was the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ; and this is the Faith of the Catholick Church. And what he did for us, is *imputed unto us*. This is included in the very notion of his *doing it for us*, which cannot be spoken in any sense, unless that which he so did, be *imputed unto us*. And I think Men ought to be wary, that they do not by *distinctions* and *studied evasions*, for the defence of their own private opinions, shake the Foundations of Christian Religion. And I am sure it will be easier for them, as it is in the Proverb, *To wrest the Club out of the hand of Hercules*, then to dispossess the minds of true Believers of this perswasion: *That what the Lord Christ did in Obedience unto God according unto the Law, he designed in his Love and Grace to do it for them*. He needed no Obedience for himself, he came not into a capacity of yielding Obedience for himself, but for us; and therefore for us it was, that he fulfilled the Law in Obedience unto God according unto the terms of it. The obligation that was on him unto Obedience, was originally no less for us, no less needful unto us, no more for himself, no more necessary unto him, then the obligation that was on him as the *surety of the Covenant*, to suffer the penalty of the Law, was either the one, or the other.

3. Setting aside the consideration of the Grace and Love of Christ, and the compact between the Father and the Son, as unto his undertaking for us, which undeniably proves all that he did in the pursuit of them to be *done for us*, and *not for himself*: I say setting aside the consideration of these things, and the *Humane Nature of Christ*, by virtue of its *union* with the Person of the Son of God, had a right unto, and might have immediately been admitted into the highest Glory whereof it was capable, without any antecedent Obedience unto the Law. And this is apparent from hence,

In that from the *first instant of that Union*, the whole Person of Christ with our Nature existing therein, was the object of all Divine worship from Angels and Men, wherein consists the highest Exaltation of that Nature.

It is true, there was a *peculiar Glory* that he was actually to be made Partaker of, with respect unto his antecedent Obedience and Suffering. *Phil. 2. 8, 9.* The Actual Possession of this Glory was in the Ordination of God, to be consequential unto his obeying and suffering, not for himself, but for us. But as unto the right and capacity of the Humane Nature in it self, all the Glory whereof it was capable, was due unto it from the instant of its *union*. For it was therein exalted above the condition that any Creature is capable of by meer Creation. And it is but a *Socinian* fiction, that the first Foundation of the Divine Glory of Christ was laid in his Obedience, which was only the way of his Actual Possession of that part of his Glory, which consists in his Mediator Power and Authority over all. The Real Foundation of the whole, was laid in the *Union of his Person*; whence he prays that the Father would glorifie him, (as unto manifestation) with that Glory which he had with him before the World was.

I will grant, that the Lord Christ was *Viator* whilest he was in this World, and not absolutely *Possessor*; yet I say withal he was so, not that any such condition was necessary unto him *for himself*; but he took it upon him by especial Dispensation *for us*. And therefore the Obedience he performed in that condition, was for us, and not for himself.

4. It is granted therefore, that the Humane Nature of Christ was made *καὶ ἄνθρωπος*, as the Apostle affirms, *That which was made of a Woman, was made under the Law*. Hereby Obedience became necessary unto him, as he was, and whilest he was *Viator*. But this being by especial Dispensation, intimated

mated in the expression of it, *He was made under the Law*, namely, *as he was made of a Woman*, by especial Dispensation and Condescension expressed, *Phil. 2. 6, 7, 8.* The Obedience he yielded thereon, was for us, and not for himself. And this is evident from hence, For he was so made under the Law, as that not only he owed Obedience unto the Precepts of it, but he was made obnoxious unto its *Curse*. But I suppose it will not be said, that he was so for himself, and therefore not for us. We owed Obedience unto the Law, and were obnoxious unto the *Curse* of it, or *ὑποδύοι τῆς ὀψῆς*. Obedience was required of us, and was as necessary unto us, if we would enter into life, as the answering of the *Curse* for us was, if we would escape Death eternal. Christ as our Surety, is *made under the Law for us*, whereby he becomes liable and obliged unto the Obedience which the Law required, and unto the penalty that it threatned. Who shall now dare to say, that he underwent the *Penalty of the Law* for us indeed, but he yielded Obedience unto it for himself only? The whole Harmony of the Work of his Mediation, would be disordered by such a supposition.

*Judah*, the Son of *Jacob*, undertook to be a Bondman instead of *Benjamin* his Brother, that he might go free, *Gen. 44. 33.* There is no doubt but *Joseph* might have accepted of the stipulation. Had he done so, the service and bondage he undertook, had been necessary unto *Judah*, and righteous for him to bear; howbeit he had undergone it, and performed his duty in it, not for himself, but for his Brother *Benjamin*; and unto *Benjamin*, it would have been imputed in his liberty. So when the Apostle *Paul* wrote those words unto *Philemon* concerning *Onesimus*, *Ἐγὼ δὲ τί ἠδίκησέ σε ἢ ὀφείλει, τὸτο ἐμοὶ ἐλλόγει, ἐγὼ ἀποτίσω, Vers. 18.* If he hath wronged thee, dealt unrighteously or injuriously with thee, or oweth thee ought, wherein thou hast suffered loss by him, put it on my account, or impute it all unto me; I will repay it, or answer

swer for it all. He supposeth that *Philemon* might have a double action against *Onesimus*; the one *injuriarum*, and the other *damni* or *debiti*, of wrong and injury, and of loss or debt; which are distinct actions in the Law: If he hath *wronged thee, or oweth thee ought*. Hereon he proposeth himself, and obligeth himself by his express Obligation ἐγὼ Παῦλος ἔγραψα τῇ ἐμῇ χεὶρι. *I Paul have written it with my own hand*, that he would answer for both, and *pay back* a valuable consideration if required. Hereby was he obliged in his own person to make satisfaction unto *Philemon*; but yet he was to do it for *Onesimus*, and not for himself. Whatever Obedience therefore was due from the Lord Christ, as to his Humane Nature whilest in the *form of a servant*, either as a Man, or as an *Israelite*, seeing he was so not necessarily by the necessity of nature for himself, but by voluntary condescension and stipulation for us, for us it was, and not for himself.

5. The Lord Christ in his Obedience was not a *private*, but a *publick person*. He obeyed as he was the Surety of the Covenant, as the Mediator between God and Man. This I suppose will not be denied. He can by no imagination be considered out of that capacity. But what a *publick person* doth as a *publick person*, that is, as a Representative of others, and an undertaker for them, whatever may be his own concernment therein, he doth it not for himself, but for others. And if others were not concerned therein, if it were not for them, what he doth would be of no use or signification. Yea, it implies a contradiction that any one should do any thing as a *publick person*, and do it for himself only. He who is a *publick person*, may do that wherein he alone is concerned, but he cannot do so as *he is a publick person*. Wherefore as *Socinus*, and those that follow him would have Christ to *have offered for himself*, which is to make him a Mediator for himself, his offering being a Mediatory act, which is both foolish and impious; so to affirm his *Mediatory Obedience*, his Obedience

Obedience as a *publick person*, to have been for himself, and not for others, hath but little less of impiety in it.

6. It is granted, That the Lord Christ having an *Humane Nature*, which was a *Creature*, it was impossible but that it should be subject unto the *Law of Creation*. For there is a Relation that doth necessarily arise from, and depend upon the Beings of a *Creator* and a *Creature*. Every rational *Creature* is eternally obliged from the Nature of God, and its Relation thereunto, to *love him, obey him*, depend upon him, submit unto him, and to make him its End, Blessedness, and Reward. But the *Law of Creation* thus considered, doth not respect the World, and this life only, but the *future state of Heaven*, and Eternity also. And this *Law*, the *Humane Nature of Christ* is subject unto, in Heaven and Glory, and cannot but be so, whilest it is a *Creature*, and not God, that is, whilest it hath its own Being. Nor do any Men fancy such a *transfusion of divine properties* into the *Humane Nature of Christ*, as that it should be *self-subsisting*, and in it self absolutely *immense*; for this would openly destroy it. Yet none will say, that he is *now* *καὶ νῦν* under the *Law*, in the sense intended by the Apostle. But the *Law* in the sense described, the *Humane Nature of Christ* was subject unto on its own account, whilest he was in this World. And this is sufficient to answer the Objection of *Socinus*, mentioned at the entrance of this Discourse; namely, *That if the Lord Christ were not obliged unto Obedience for himself, then might he, if he would, neglect the whole Law, or infringe it*. For besides that it is a *foolish imagination* concerning that holy thing which was *hypostatically* united unto the Son of God, and thereby rendered incapable of any deviation from the Divine Will; the eternal indispensable *Law of Love, Adherence, and Dependance on God*, under which the *Humane Nature of Christ* was, and is as a *Creature*, gives sufficient security against such Suppositions.

But there is another consideration of the *Law of God*, namely, as it is imposed on *Creatures* by especial dispensation, for some time, and for some certain end; with some Considerations, Rules, and Orders, that belong not essentially unto the Law, as before described. This is the nature of the *Written Law of God*, which the Lord Christ was *made under*, not necessarily as a Creature, but by especial dispensation. For the Law, under this consideration, is presented unto us as such, not *absolutely* and *eternally*, but whilest we are in this World, and that with this especial end, that by *Obedience* thereunto, we may obtain the reward of *Eternal Life*. And it is evident, that the *Obligation* of the Law, under this consideration, *ceaseth* when we come to the enjoyment of that Reward. It obligeth us no more *formally* by its command, *Do this and live*, when the life promised, is enjoyed. In this sense the Lord Christ was *not made subject unto the Law for himself*, nor did yield obedience unto it for himself. For he was not obliged unto it by virtue of his created condition. Upon the first instant of the *Union of his natures*, being holy, harmless, undefiled, and separate from sinners, he might, notwithstanding the Law that he was made subject unto, have been staid in Glory. For he that was the object of all *Divine Worship*, needed not any *new Obedience*, to procure for him a state of *Blessedness*. And had he naturally, meerly by virtue of his being a Creature been subject unto the Law in this sense, he must have been so *eternally*, which he is not. For those things which depend solely on the *Natures of God and the Creature*, are eternal and immutable. Wherefore, as the Law in this sense was given unto us, *not absolutely*, but with respect unto a *future state and reward*; so the Lord Christ did *voluntarily subject himself* unto it for us, and his Obedience thereunto was *for us*, and *not for himself*. These things added unto what I have formerly written on this subject, whereunto nothing hath been opposed, but a

## 378 *The Imputation of the obedience of Christ*

few *impertinent cavils*, are sufficient to discharge the first part of that charge laid down before, concerning the *impossibility of the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ unto us*; which indeed is equal unto the *Impossibility of the Imputation of the Disobedience of Adam unto us*; whereby the Apostle tells us, *That we were all made sinners.*

The second part of the *Objection or Charge against the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ unto us*, is, *That it is useless unto the persons that are to be justified.* For whereas they have in their *Justification the pardon of all their sins*, they are thereby *righteous*, and have a *right or title unto Life and Blessedness*: For he who is so pardoned, as not to be esteemed guilty of any *sin of omission or commission*, wants nothing that is requisite thereunto. For he is supposed to have done all that he ought, and to have omitted nothing required of him in a way of duty. Hereby he becomes not *unrighteous*, and to be not *unrighteous*, is the same as to be *righteous*. As he that is not dead, is alive. Neither is there, nor can there be any *middle state between Death and life*. Wherefore those who have all their sins forgiven, have the *Blessedness of Justification*; and there is neither need, nor use of any farther *Imputation of Righteousness unto them*. And sundry other things of the same nature, are urged unto the same purpose, which will be all of them either obviated in the ensuing discourse, or answered elsewhere.

*Answer.* This cause is of more importance, and more evidently stated in the *Scriptures*, than to be turned into such niceties, which have more of *Philosophical subtilty*, than *Theological solidity*, in them. This exception therefore might be dismissed without farther answer, than what is given us in the known rule, *That a truth well established and confirmed, is not to be questioned, much less relinquished on every intangling sophism, though it should appear insoluble.* But as we shall see, there is no such difficulty in these arguings, but what may easily be discussed. And because the matter of the Plea contained

contained in them, is made use of by sundry learned Persons who yet agree with us in the substance of the Doctrine of Justification, namely, that it is *by Faith alone, without Works, through the Imputation of the Merit and Satisfaction of Christ*. I shall as briefly as I can discover the mistakes that it proceeds upon.

I. It includes a supposition, *That he who is pardoned his sins of omission and commission, is esteemed to have done all that is required of him, and to have committed nothing that is forbidden*. For without this supposition, the bare pardon of sin, will neither make, constitute, nor denominate any Man righteous. But this is far otherwise, nor is any such thing included in the nature of Pardon. For in the Pardon of sin, neither God nor Man do judge, *That he who hath sinned, hath not sinned*; which must be done, if he who is pardoned be esteemed to have done all that he ought, and to have done nothing that he ought not to do. If a Man be brought on his trial for any evil fact, and being legally convicted thereof, is discharged by *Sovereign Pardon*; it is true, that in the eye of the Law, he is looked upon as an *innocent man*, as unto the punishment that was due unto him; but no Man thinks that he is made *righteous* thereby, or is esteemed not to have done that which really he hath done, and whereof he was convicted. *Joab* and *Abiathar* the Priest were at the same time guilty of the same crime. *Solomon* gives order that *Joab* be put to death for his crime; but unto *Abiathar* he gives a Pardon. Did he thereby make, declare or constitute him righteous? Himself expresseth the contrary, affirming him to be *unrighteous and guilty*, only he remitted the punishment of his fault. *1 King. 2. 26*. Wherefore the Pardon of sin dischargeth the guilty person from being liable or obnoxious unto *Anger, Wrath, or Punishment*, due unto his sin; but it doth not suppose, nor infer in the least, that he is thereby or ought thereon to be *esteemed or adjudged to have*

380 *The Imputation of the obedience of Christ*  
done no evil, and to have fulfilled all righteousness. Some say, Pardon gives a righteousness of Innocency, but not of Obedience. But it cannot give a Righteousness of Innocency, absolutely, such as *Adam* had. For he had *actually* done no evil. It only removeth guilt, which is the respect of sin unto punishment, insuing on the Sanction of the Law. And this *supposition* which is an evident mistake, animates this whole Objection.

The like may be said of what is in like manner supposed, namely, *That not to be unrighteous, which a man is on the pardon of sin, is the same with being righteous.* For if *not to be unrighteous* be taken *privatively*, it is the same with being just or righteous: For it supposeth, that he who is so, *hath done all the duty* that is required of him, that he may be righteous. But *not to be unrighteous negatively*, as the expression is here used, it doth not do so. For at best it supposeth no more, but that a Man as yet hath done nothing *actually against the Rule of Righteousness.* Now this may be when yet he hath performed none of the duties that are required of him to constitute him righteous, because the times and occasions of them, are not yet. And so it was with *Adam* in the state of Innocency; which is the height of what can be attained by the compleat pardon of sin.

2. It proceeds on this *Supposition*, *That the Law, in case of sin, doth not oblige unto punishment and obedience both;* so as that it is not satisfied, fulfilled, or complied withal, unless it be answered with respect unto both. For if it doth so, then the *pardon of sin*, which only frees us from the penalty of the Law, doth yet leave it necessary, that Obedience be performed unto it, even all that it doth require. But this, in my judgment, is *an evident mistake*, and that such as doth not *establish the Law, but make it void.* And this I shall demonstrate.

1. The Law hath two parts or powers. (1.) Its *preceptive part*, commanding and requiring obedience, with a promise of life annexed: *Do this and live*. (2.) The sanction on supposition of disobedience, binding the sinner unto punishment, or a *meet recompence of reward*. *In the day thou sinnest, thou shalt die*. And every Law properly so called, proceeds on these suppositions of *obedience* or *disobedience*, whence its commanding and punishing Power are inseparate from its Nature.

2. This Law, whereof we speak, was first given unto Man *in innocency*; and therefore the *first power* of it, was only in *act*: It obliged only unto Obedience. For an innocent person could not be *obnoxious unto its sanction*, which contained only an obligation unto punishment, on supposition of disobedience. It could not therefore oblige our first Parents unto Obedience and Punishment both, seeing its Obligation unto Punishment could not be in *actual force*, but on supposition of actual disobedience. A *Moral Cause* of, and *Motive* unto Obedience it was, and had an influence into the preservation of Man from sin. Unto that end it was said unto him, *In the day thou eatest, thou shalt surely die*. The neglect hereof, and of that ruling influence which it ought to have had on the minds of our first Parents, opened the door unto the entrance of sin. But it implies a contradiction, that an *innocent person* should be under an actual obligation unto punishment from the *sanction of the Law*. It bound only unto Obedience, as all Laws, with Penalties, do before their transgression. But

3. On the committing of sin, (and it is so with every one that is guilty of sin) Man came under an *actual obligation* unto punishment. This is no more questionable than whether at first he was under an Obligation unto Obedience. But then the Question is, whether the first Intention and Obligation of the Law unto *Obedience*, doth cease to affect the sinner,

or continue so, as at the same time to oblige him unto Obedience and Punishment, both its Powers being *in act* towards him. And hereunto I say

1. Had the Punishment threatened, been *immediately inflicted* unto the utmost of what was contained in it, this could have been no Question. For Man had *died immediately* both temporally and eternally, and been cast out of that state wherein alone he could stand in any relation unto the *preceptive power of the Law*. He that is finally executed, hath fulfilled the Law so, as that he owes no more obedience unto it.

But 2. God in his Wisdom and Patience, hath otherwise disposed of things. Man is *continued a Viator* still in the way unto his end, and not fully stated in his eternal and unchangeable condition, wherein neither Promise nor Threatning; Reward nor Punishment could be proposed unto him. In this condition he falls under a twofold consideration. (1.) Of a *guilty person*, and so is obliged unto the full punishment, that the Law threatens. This is not denied. (2.) Of a *Man, a Rational Creature of God*, not yet brought unto his Eternal End.

3. In this state, the Law is the *only instrument* and means of the continuance of the Relation between God and him. Wherefore under this consideration it cannot but *still oblige* him unto Obedience, unless we shall say, that by *his sin* he hath exempted himself from the Government of God. Wherefore it is by the Law, that the Rule and Government of God over Men, is continued whilest they are *in statu Viatorum*: For every Disobedience, every Transgression of its Rule and Order as to its commanding Power casteth us afresh, and further, under its Power of obliging unto Punishment.

Neither can these things be otherwise; neither can any Man living, not the worst of Men, chuse *but judge himself* whilest

whilest he is in this World, obliged to give Obedience unto the Law of God, according to the *notices* that he hath of it by the light of nature or otherwise. A wicked servant that is punished for his fault, if it be with such a punishment as yet *continues his Being, and his state of servitude* is not by his Punishment freed from an Obligation unto Duty, according unto the Rule of it. Yea, his Obligation unto Duty, with respect unto that crime for which he was punished, is not dissolved, until his punishment be *capital*, and so put an end unto his state. Wherefore seeing that by the pardon of sin, we are freed only from the *Obligation unto Punishment*, there is moreover required unto our Justification, an Obedience unto what the Law requireth.

And this greatly strengthneth the *Argument*, in whose Vindication we are engaged; for we being sinners, we were obnoxious both unto the *Command* and *Curse* of the Law. Both must be answered, or we cannot be justified. And as the Lord Christ could not by his most *perfect Obedience*, satisfy the Curse of the Law, *dying thou shalt die*; so by the utmost of his *suffering*, he could not fulfil the *command of the Law*, *Do this and live*. Passion as Passion is not Obedience, though there may be Obedience in suffering, as there was in that of Christ unto the height. Wherefore as we plead that the *Death of Christ* is imputed unto us for our Justification, so we deny that it is imputed unto us for our *Righteousness*. For by the Imputation of the *Sufferings of Christ*, our sins are remitted or pardoned, and we are delivered from the Curse of the Law, which he underwent. But we are not thence esteemed just or righteous, which we cannot be without respect unto the fulfilling of the Commands of the Law, or the Obedience by it required. The whole matter is excellently expressed by *Grotius* in the words before alledged. *Cum duo nobis peperisse Christum dixerimus impunitatem & præmium, illud satisfactioni hoc merito Christi distincte tribuit vetus Ec-*  
*clesiæ.*

*clesia. Satisfactio consistit in meritorum translatione, meritum in perfectissima obedientia pro nobis præstita imputatione.*

3. The Objection mentioned proceeds also on this Supposition, That pardon of sin gives title unto Eternal Blessedness in the enjoyment of God: For Justification doth so, and according to the Authors of this opinion, no other Righteousness is required thereunto but pardon of sin. That Justification doth give Right and Title unto Adoption, Acceptation with God, and the Heavenly Inheritance, I suppose will not be denied, and it hath been proved already. Pardon of sin depends solely on the death or suffering of Christ: *In whom we have Redemption through his Blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his Grace. Ephes. 1. 7.* But suffering for Punishment gives Right and Title unto nothing, only satisfies for something; nor doth it deserve any Reward: It is no where said, *Suffer this and live*, but *Do this and live*.

These things, I confess, are inseparably connected in the Ordinance, Appointment, and Covenant of God. Whosoever hath *his sins pardoned*, is accepted with God, hath Right unto Eternal Blessedness. These things are *inseparable*, but they are *not one and the same*. And by reason of their inseparable Relation, are they so put together by the Apostle. *Rom. 4. 6, 7, 8. Even as David also describeth the Blessedness of the Man, unto whom God imputeth Righteousness without Works: Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered: Blessed is the Man unto whom the Lord will not impute sin.* It is the Imputation of Righteousness, that gives Right unto Blessedness; but pardon of sin is inseparable from it, and an effect of it, both being opposed unto Justification by Works, or an Internal Righteousness of our own. But it is one thing to be freed from being liable unto Eternal Death; and another to have Right and Title unto a Blessed and Eternal Life. It is one thing to be *redeemed*  
from

from under the Law, that is the Curse of it; another to receive the *Adoption of Sons*. One thing to be freed from the *Curse*, another to have the *Blessing of Abraham* come upon us; as the Apostle distinguisheth these things. *Gal.* 3. 13, 14. & 4. 4, 5. And so doth our Lord Jesus Christ. *Acts* 26. 18. *That they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance (a Lot and Right to the Inheritance) amongst them that are sanctified by Faith; that is in me.* ἀρετας ἀμαρτιῶν which we have by Faith in Christ is only a *dismission of sin* from being pleadable unto our condemnation; on which account there is no *condemnation unto them that are in Christ Jesus*. But a *Right and Title unto Glory*, or the *Heavenly Inheritance*, it giveth not. Can it be supposed, that all the great and glorious effects of present Grace and future Blessedness, should follow necessarily on, and be the effect of *meer pardon* of sin? Can we not be pardoned, but we must thereby of necessity be made *Sons, Heirs of God, and Coheirs with Christ?*

Pardon of sin is in God, with respect unto the sinner, a free gratuitous Act; *Forgiveness of sin through the riches of his Grace*. But with respect unto the satisfaction of Christ, it is an *Act in Judgment*. For on the consideration thereof as imputed unto him, doth God absolve and acquit the sinner upon his tryal. But *pardon on a juridical tryal*, on what consideration soever it be granted, gives *no right nor title* unto any favor, benefit, or priviledge, but only *meer deliverance*. It is one thing to be acquitted before the Throne of a King of Crimes, laid unto the charge of any Man, which may be done by clemency, or on other considerations; another to be made *his Son by Adoption*, and *Heir unto his Kingdom*.

And these things are represented unto us in the Scripture, as distinct and depending on distinct causes. So are they in the Vision concerning *Joshua the High Priest*. *Zech.* 3. 4 5 *And he answered and spake unto those that stood before him, saying, Take away the filthy garments from him: And unto him he said,*

## 386 *The Imputation of the obedience of Christ*

*Behold I have caused thine iniquity to pass from thee; and I will cloath thee with change of rayment. And I said, Let them set a fair Miter upon his Head; so they set a fair Miter on his Head, and cloathed him with garments.* It hath been generally granted, That we have here a Representation of the Justification of a sinner before God. And the taking away of filthy garments, is expounded by the *passing away of iniquity*. When a Mans filthy garments are taken away, he is no more defiled with them; but he is not thereby *cloathed*. This is an additional grace and favor thereunto, namely to be cloathed with *change of garments*. And what this rayment is, is declared *Isa. 61. 10. He hath cloathed me with the garments of Salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of Righteousness*, which the Apostle alludes unto *Phil. 3. 9.* Wherefore these things are distinct; namely, *the taking away of the filthy garments*, and *the cloathing of us with change of rayment*; or the pardon of sin, and the robe of Righteousness; by the one are we freed from Condemnation, by the other have we right unto Salvation. And the same is in like manner represented *Ezek. 16. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12.*

This place I had formerly urged to this purpose about *Communion with God*, p. 187. which Mr. *Hotch.* in his usual manner attempts to answer. And to omit his reviling expressions, with the crude unproved assertion of his own conceits, his answer is, *That by the change of rayment mentioned in the Prophet, our own personal righteousness is intended.* For he acknowledgeth that our Justification before God is here represented. And so also he expounds the place produced in the confirmation of the Exposition given, *Isai. 61. 10.* where this change of rayment is called *The garments of Salvation, and the robe of Righteousness*; and thereon affirms, That our Righteousness it self, before God, is our Personal Righteousness, p. 203. That is, in our Justification before him, which is the only thing in question. To all which  
Pre-

Presumptions, I shall oppose only the testimony of the same Prophet, which he may consider at his leisure, and which, at one time or other he will subscribe unto. *Chap. 64. 6. We are all as an unclean thing, and all our Righteousnesses are as filthy rags.* He who can make garments of Salvation, and robes of Righteousness of these filthy rags, hath a skill in composing Spiritual Vestments that I am not acquainted withal. What remains in the Chapter wherein this Answer is given unto that testimony of the Scripture, I shall take no notice of, it being after his accustomed manner, only a perverse wresting of my words unto such a sense, as may seem to countenance him in casting a reproach upon my self and others.

There is therefore no force in the comparing of these things unto *life and death natural*, which are immediately opposed; *so that he who is not dead is alive, and he who is alive, is not dead*, there being no distinct state between that of life and death. For these things being of different natures, the comparison between them is no way argumentative. Though it may be so in things natural, it is otherwise in things Moral and Political, where a proper Representation of Justification may be taken, as it is forensick. If it were so, that there is no difference between being acquitted of a crime at the Bar of a Judge, and a Right unto a Kingdom, nor different state between these things, it would prove, that there is no intermediate estate between being pardoned, and having a Right unto the Heavenly Inheritance. But this is a fond imagination.

It is true, *That Right unto Eternal Life*, doth succeed unto freedom from the guilt of Eternal Death. *That they may receive forgiveness of sins, and an inheritance among them that are sanctified.* But it doth not so do, out of a necessity in the nature of the things themselves, but only in the free constitution of God. Believers have the pardon of sin, and an immediate Right and Title unto the favor of God, the Adop-

tion of Sons, and Eternal Life. But there is another state in the nature of the things themselves, and this might have been so *actually*, had it so seemed good unto God: For who sees not, that there is a *Status* or *Conditio Personæ*, wherein he is neither *under the guilt of Condemnation*, nor hath an *immediate Right and Title unto Glory*, in the way of Inheritance. God might have pardoned Men all their sins past, and placed them in a state and condition of seeking Righteousness for the future, by the Works of the Law, that so they might have lived: For this would answer the original state of *Adam*. But God hath not done so; true; but whereas he might have done so, it is evident that the disposal of Men into this state and condition of Right unto Life and Salvation, doth not depend on, nor proceed from the pardon of sin, but hath another cause, which is *the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, as he fulfilled the Law for us*.

And in truth, this is the opinion of the most of our Adversaries in this cause: For they do contend, that over and above the remission of sin, which some of them say is *absolute*, without any respect unto the merit or satisfaction of Christ, others refer it unto them; they all contend that there is moreover, a *Righteousness of Works* required unto our Justification; only they say, this is our own incomplete, imperfect Righteousness, imputed unto us, *as if it were perfect*, that is, for what it is not; and not the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us for what it is.

From what hath been discoursed, it is evident that unto our Justification before God, is required, Not only that we be freed from the *damnatory sentence of the Law*, which we are by the pardon of sin, but moreover, that the *Righteousness of the Law be fulfilled in us*, or, that we have a Righteousness answering the Obedience that the Law requires, whereon our acceptance with God, through the riches of his  
Grace,

Grace, and our Title unto the heavenly Inheritance do depend. This we have not in and of our selves, nor can attain unto, as hath been proved. Wherefore the perfect Obedience and Righteousness of Christ is imputed unto us, or in the sight of God we can never be Justified.

Nor are the cavilling Objections of the *Socinians*, and those that follow them, of any force against the Truth herein. They tell us that the Righteousness of Christ can be imputed but unto *one*, if unto any. *For who can suppose that the same Righteousness of One should become the Righteousness of many, even of all that believe.* Besides he performed not all the Duties that are required of us in all our Relations, he being never placed in them. These things I say, are both foolish and impious, destructive unto the whole Gospel. For all things here depend on the Ordination of God. It is his Ordinance that as through the offence of One many are dead; so his Grace, and the Gift of Grace, through one man Christ Jesus hath abounded unto many; and as by the Offence of one Judgment came upon all men unto Condemnation, so by the Righteousness of One, the free Gift came upon all unto the Righteousness of life, and by the Obedience of One many are made Righteous; as the Apostle argues *Rom. 5.* For God sent his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for sin, that the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us. *Rom. 8. 3, 4.* For he was the End of the Law (the whole End of it) for Righteousness unto them that do believe, *Chap. 10. 4.* This is the Appointment of the Wisdom, Righteousness and Grace of God, that the whole Righteousness and Obedience of Christ should be accepted as our compleat Righteousness before him, imputed unto us by his Grace, and applied unto us or made ours through believing, and consequently unto all that believe. And if the actual Sin of Adam be imputed unto us all, who derive our Nature from him unto Condemnation, though he sinned not in our Circumstances and Relations, is it strange that the actual Obedience of Christ

Christ should be imputed unto them who derive a *spiritual Nature* from him, unto the Justification of life? Besides both the Satisfaction and Obedience of Christ, as relating unto his person, were in some sense *infinite*, that is, of an infinite Value, and so cannot be considered *in Parts*, as though one Part of it were imputed unto one, and another unto another, but the whole is imputed unto every one that doth believe; And if the *Israelites* could say, that *David* was worth *ten thousand of them*, 2 Sam. 21. 3. we may well allow the Lord Christ, and so what he did and suffered, to be *more than us all*, and all that we can do and suffer.

There are also sundry other mistakes that concur unto that part of the Charge against the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, which we have now considered. I say of his *Righteousness*; for the Apostle in this case useth those two words *δικαιοσυαν*, and *επακοην* *Righteousness and Obedience*, as *ισοδυναμικα*, of the same signification, Rom. 5. 18, 19. such are those, that *Remission of Sin* and *Justification* are the same, or that *Justification* consisteth only in the *Remission* of Sin; that *Faith* it self as our *Act and Duty*, being it is the Condition of the Covenant, is *imputed unto us* for Righteousness; or that we have a *personal inherent Righteousness* of our own, that one way or other is our Righteousness before God unto Justification; either a *Condition* it is, or a *Disposition* unto it; or hath a *congruity* in deserving the Grace of Justification, or a down-right *merit of Condignity* thereof. For all these are but various expressions of the same thing, according unto the Variety of the Conceptions of the Minds of men about it. But they have been all considered and removed in our precedent Discourses.

To close this Argument, and our Vindication of it, and therewithal to obviate an Objection, I do acknowledg that our Blessedness and life eternal is in the Scripture oftimes ascribed unto the death of Christ: But it is so (I.) *κατ' ελεον* as  
the

the principal Cause of the whole, and as that without which no imputation of Obedience could have justified us; for the Penalty of the Law was indispensibly to be undergone. (2.) It is so *ἡ μὴ ὑποταξία*; not exclusively unto all Obedience whereof mention is made in other Places, but as that whereunto it is inseparably conjoyned, *Christus in vita passivam habuit actionem; in morte passionem activam sustinuit; dum salutem operaretur in medio terræ.* Bernard. And so it is also ascribed unto his Resurrection *κατ' ἐνδειξιν* with respect unto Evidence and Manifestation. But the Death of Christ exclusively as unto his Obedience is no where asserted as the Cause of eternal life, comprizing that exceeding Weight of Glory wherewith it is accompanied.

Hitherto we have treated of and Vindicated the Imputation of the Active Obedience of Christ unto us, as the Truth of it was deduced from the preceding Argument about the Obligation of the Law of Creation. I shall now briefly confirm it with other Reasons and Testimonies.

1. That which Christ the Mediator and Surety of the Covenant, did do in Obedience unto God, in the discharge and Performance of his Office, that he did for us, and that is imputed unto us. This hath been proved already, and it hath too great an Evidence of Truth to be denied. He was born to us, given to us. Isa. 9. 6. For what the Law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh; God sending his own son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh, that the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us, Rom. 8. 3, 4. Whatever is spoken of the Grace, Love and Purpose of God in sending or giving his Son, or of the Love, Grace and Condescension of the Son in coming and undertaking of the Work of Redemption designed unto him, or of the Office it self of a Mediator or Surety, gives Testimony unto this Assertion. Yea, it is the Fundamental Principle of the Gospel, and of the Faith of all that truly believe.

As for those by whom the *Divine Person* and *Satisfaction* of Christ are denied, whereby they evert the whole Work of his Mediation, we do not at present consider them. Wherefore what he so did, is to be enquired into. And

I. The Lord Christ our Mediator and Surety was in his Humane Nature made *καὶ νόμον* *under the Law*, Gal. 4. 1. That he was not so for himself by the necessity of his Condition, we have proved before. It was therefore for us. But as made *under the Law*, he yielded Obedience unto it; this therefore was for us, and is imputed unto us. The exception of the *Socinians* that it is the *Judicial Law* only that is intended, is too frivolous to be insisted on. For he was made under *that Law* whose *Curse* we are delivered from. And if we are delivered only from the *Curse of the Law of Moses*, wherein they contend that there was neither Promises nor Threatning of eternal things, of any thing beyond this present life, we are still in our Sins, under the *Curse of the Moral Law*, notwithstanding all that he hath done for us. It is excepted with no colour of sobriety, *that he was made under the Law only as to the Curse of it*. But it is plain in the Text, that Christ was made under the Law as we are under it. He was *made under the Law* to redeem them that were under the Law. And if he was not made so as we are, there is no consequence from his being made under it, unto our Redemption from it. But we were *so under the Law*, as not only to be obnoxious unto the *Curse*, but so as to be obliged unto all the Obedience that it required, as hath been proved. And if the Lord Christ hath redeemed us only from the *Curse* of it by undergoing it, leaving us in our selves to answer its *Obligation unto Obedience*, we are not freed nor delivered. And the Expression of *under the Law* doth in the first place and properly signify being under the obligation of it unto Obedience, and consequentially only with a respect unto the *Curse*. Gal. 4. 21. *Tell me ye that desire to be καὶ νόμον*  
under

under the Law; They did not desire to be under the Curse of the Law, but only its Obligation unto Obedience; which in all usage of Speech, is the first proper sense of that Expression. Wherefore the Lord Christ being *made under the Law* for us, he yielded perfect Obedience unto it for us, which is therefore imputed unto us. For that what he did, was done for us, depends solely on *Imputation*.

2. As he was thus made under the Law, so he did *actually fulfil it* by his Obedience unto it. So he testifieth concerning himself; *Think not that I am come to destroy the Law and the Prophets, I am not come to destroy but to fulfil*, Mat. 5. 17. These Words of our Lord Jesus Christ as recorded by the *Evangelist*, the Jews continually object against the Christians, as contradictory to what they pretend to be done by him, namely that *he hath destroyed and taken away the Law*. And *Maimonides* in his Treatise *De fundamentis Legis*, hath many blasphemous Reflections on the Lord Christ as a false Prophet in this matter. But the Reconciliation is plain and easie. There was a *twofold Law* given unto the Church. The *Moral* and the *Ceremonial Law*. The first as we have proved is of an eternal Obligation. The other was given only *for a Time*. That the latter of these was to be taken away and abolished the Apostle proves with *invincible Testimonies* out of the Old Testament against the *obstinate Jews*, in his Epistle unto the *Hebrews*. Yet was it not to be taken away without its Accomplishment when it ceased of it self. Wherefore our Lord Christ did no otherwise *dissolve* or destroy that Law, but by the *Accomplishment of it*; and so he did put an end unto it, as is fully declared, *Ephes.* 2. 14, 15, 16. But the Law *κατ' ἔξοχην*, that which obligeth all men unto Obedience unto God always, he came not *καταλύσαι* to destroy; that is *ἀθετησαι*, to abolish it, as an *ἀθέτησις* is ascribed unto the *Mosaical Law*, *Heb.* 9. (In the same sense is the Word used, *Matth.* 24. 2. *Chap.* 26. 6. *Chap.* 27. 40. *Mark* 13. 2. *Chap.* 14. 58. *Chap.* 15.

29. *Luk.* 21. 6. *Acts* 5. 38, 39. *Chap.* 6. 14. *Rom.* 14. 20. *2 Cor.* 5. 1. *Gal.* 2. 18. mostly with an Accusative Case, of the things spoken of.) or *καταργῆσαι*, which the Apostle denys to be done by Christ, and Faith in him, *Rom.* 3. 31. *Νόμον ἐν καταργῆσει διὰ τῆς πίστεως; μὴ γένοιτο, ἀλλὰ νόμον ἰσθῶμεν.* Do we then make void the Law through Faith? God forbid; yea we establish the Law. *νόμον ἰσθάναι* is to confirm its Obligation unto Obedience, which is done by Faith only with respect unto the Moral Law, the other being evacuated as unto any Power of obliging unto Obedience. This therefore is the Law which our Lord Christ affirms that he came, *not to destroy*; so he expressly declares in his ensuing discourse, shewing both its Power of obliging us always unto Obedience, and giving an Exposition of it. This Law the Lord Christ came *πληρῶσαι*. *Πληρῶσαι τὸν νόμον*, in the Scripture is the same with *ἐμπλήσσει τὸν νόμον* in other Writers; that is, to yield full perfect Obedience unto the Commands of the Law, whereby they are absolutely fulfilled; *πληρῶσαι νόμον*, is not to make the Law perfect; for it was always *νόμος τέλειος*, a perfect Law, *Jam.* 1. 25. but to yield perfect Obedience unto it; the same that our Saviour calls *πληρῶσαι πᾶσιν δικαιοσύτην*, *Mat.* 3. 15. to fulfil all Righteousness; that is, by Obedience unto all Gods Commands and Institutions, as is evident in the Place. So the Apostle useth the same Expression, *Rom.* 13. 8. he that loveth another, hath fulfilled the Law.

It is a vain exception that Christ fulfilled the Law by his Doctrine, in the Exposition of it. The Opposition between the Words *πληρῶσαι* and *καταλύσαι* to fulfil and to destroy, will admit of no such sense. And our Saviour himself expounds this fulfilling of the Law, by doing the Commands of it, *v.* 19. Wherefore the Lord Christ as our Mediator and Surety fulfilling the Law by yielding perfect Obedience thereunto, he did it for us, and to us it is imputed.

This is plainly affirmed by the Apostle, *Rom.* 5. 18, 19.

There-

Therefore as by the Offence of one Judgment came upon all men to Condemnation, even so by the Righteousness of one, the free Gift came upon all men unto Justification of life. For as by the disobedience of One many were made Sinners, so by the Obedience of One shall many be made Righteous. The full plea from and Vindication of this Testimony, I refer unto its proper place in the Testimonies given unto the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto our Justification in general. Here I shall only observe that the Apostle expressly and in terms affirms that by the Obedience of Christ, we are made Righteous or Justified, which we cannot be but by the Imputation of it unto us. I have met with nothing that had the appearance of any sobriety for the eluding of this express Testimony, but only, that by the Obedience of Christ, his death and sufferings are intended, wherein he was obedient unto God; as the Apostle saith, he was Obedient unto death; the death of the Cross, Phil. 2. 8. But yet there is herein no colour of probability. For, 1. It is acknowledged that there was such a near conjunction and alliance between the Obedience of Christ, and his Sufferings, that though they may be distinguished, yet can they not be separated. He suffered in the whole course of his obedience, from the Womb to the Cross; and he obeyed in all his sufferings unto the last moment wherein he expired. But yet are they really things distinct, as we have proved; and they were so in him, who learned obedience by the things that he suffered. Heb. 5. 8. (2.) In this place ὑπακοή, Ver. 19. And δικαιοσύνη, Ver. 18. are the same: Obedience and Righteousness. By the Righteousness of One, and by the Obedience of One, are the same. But suffering, as suffering is not δικαιοσύνη, is not Righteousness. For if it were, then every one that suffers what is due to him, should be righteous, and so be justified, even the Devil himself. (3.) The Righteousness and Obedience here intended, are opposed τῷ παραπτώματι, to the offence. By the offence of

One; But the offence intended was an *actual Transgression* of the Law; so is *παράπλοια*, a *fall from* or a *fall in* the Course of Obedience. Wherefore the *δικαιοσύνη* or Righteousness must be an *actual Obedience* unto the Commands of the Law, or the force of the Apostles Reasoning and *Antithesis* cannot be understood. (4.) Particularly it is *such an Obedience* as is opposed unto the *disobedience of Adam*. One man's Disobedience, one man's Obedience. But the disobedience of *Adam* was an *actual Transgression* of the Law; and therefore the Obedience of Christ here intended, was his *active Obedience* unto the Law; which is that we plead for. And I shall not at present farther pursue the Argument, because the force of it in the confirmation of the Truth contended for, will be included in those that follow.

## CHAP. XIII.

### *The nature of Justification proved from the difference of the Covenants.*

**T**HAT which we plead in the third place unto our Purpose, is the *Difference between the two Covenants*. And herein it may be observed;

I. That by the *two Covenants* I understand those which were absolutely given unto the whole Church, and were all to bring it *εἰς τελειότητα* unto a *complete* and perfect State; that is the *Covenant of Works*, or the Law of our Creation as it was given unto us, with Promises and Threatnings, or Rewards and Punishments annexed unto it: and the *Covenant of Grace* revealed and proposed in the first Promise. As unto the *Covenant of Sinai*, and the New Testament as *actually* confirmed

confirmed in the *Death of Christ*, with all the Spiritual Priviledges thence emerging, and the differences between them, they belong not unto our present Argument.

2. The whole intire Nature of the *Covenant of Works* consisted in this; *That upon our personal obedience, according unto the Law and Rule of it, we should be accepted with God, and rewarded with him.* Herein the essence of it did consist. And whatever Covenant proceedeth on these *terms*, or hath the nature of them in it, however it may be varied, with Additions or Alterations, is the same Covenant still, and not another. As in the Renovation of the Promise wherein the *Essence of the Covenant of Grace* was contained, God did oft-times make other Additions unto it, as unto *Abraham* and *David*; yet was it still the *same Covenant* for the substance of it, and not another; so whatever Variations may be made in, or Additions unto the Dispensation of the first Covenant, so long as this Rule is retained, *Do this and live*; it is still the same Covenant, for the Substance and Essence of it.

3. Hence two things belonged unto this Covenant. (1.) That all things were *transacted immediately between God and Man.* There was no Mediator in it, no one to undertake any thing, either on the part of God or Man, between them. For the whole depending on every ones Personal obedience, there was no place for a Mediator. (2.) That nothing but *perfect sinless obedience* would be accepted with God, or preserve the Covenant in its Primitive state and condition. There was nothing in it as to pardon of sin, no provision for any defect in Personal obedience.

4. Wherefore this Covenant being once established between God and Man, there could be no new Covenant made, unless the *Essential Form* of it were of another nature; namely, that our own *Personal obedience* be not the rule and cause of our Acceptation and Justification before God. For  
whilest

whilst this is so, as was before observed, the Covenant is still the same; however the Dispensation of it may be *reformed* or *reduced*, to suit unto our present state and condition. What Grace soever might be introduced into it, that could not be so, which excluded *all Works* from being the cause of our Justification. But if a new Covenant be made, such Grace must be provided as is absolutely inconsistent with any *Works of ours*, as unto the first ends of the Covenant, as the Apostle declares. *Rom. II. 6.*

5. Wherefore the Covenant of Grace, supposing it a new, real, absolute Covenant, and not a Reformation of the Dispensation of the old, or a Reduction of it unto the use of our present condition (as some imagine it to be) must differ in the *Essence, Substance,* and *Nature* of it from that first Covenant of Works. And this it cannot do, if we are to be justified before God on our Personal obedience, wherein the essence of the first Covenant consisted. If then the Righteousness wherewith we are justified before God, be our own, our own Personal Righteousness; we are yet under the first Covenant, and no other.

6. But things in the new Covenant are indeed quite otherwise. For (1.) it is of *Grace*, which wholly excludes Works; that is, so of Grace, as that our own works are not the means of Justification before God; as in the places before alledged. (2.) It hath a *Mediator* and *Surety*, which is built alone on this Supposition, That what we cannot do in our selves which was originally required of us, and what the Law of the first Covenant cannot enable us to perform, that should be performed for us, by our *Mediator* and *Surety*. And if this be not included in the very first notion of a Mediator and Surety, yet it is in that of a Mediator or Surety that doth voluntarily interpose himself upon an open acknowledgment, that those for whom he undertakes, were utterly insufficient to perform what was required of them;

on which Supposition all the Truth of the Scripture doth depend. It is one of the very first notions of Christian Religion, that the Lord Christ was *given to us, born to us*, that *he came as a Mediator*, to do for us what we could not do for our selves, and not meerly to suffer what we had deserved. And here instead of our own Righteousness, we have the Righteousness of God; instead of being righteous in our selves before God, he is the Lord our Righteousness. And nothing but a Righteousness of another kind and nature, unto Justification before God could constitute another Covenant. Wherefore the Righteousness whereby we are justified, is the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us, or we are still under the Law, under the Covenant of Works.

It will be said that our *Personal obedience* is by none asserted to be the Righteousness wherewith we are justified before God, in the same manner as it was under the Covenant of Works. But the Argument speaks not as unto the manner or way whereby it is so; but to the thing it self. If it be so in any way or manner under what qualifications soever, we are under that Covenant still. If it be of *Works any way*, it is not of Grace at all. But it is added, that the differences are such as are sufficient to constitute Covenants effectually distinct. As (1.) *The perfect sinless obedience was required in the first Covenant; but in the new, that which is imperfect and accompanied with many sins and failings, is accepted.* *Answ.* This is *gratis dictum*, and begs the Question. No Righteousness unto Justification before God, is or can be accepted, but what is perfect. (2.) *Grace is the original fountain and cause of all our acceptation before God in the new Covenant.* *Answ.* It was so also in the old. The Creation of Man in Original Righteousness was an effect of Divine Grace, Benignity, and Goodness. And *the reward of Eternal Life* in the enjoyment of God, was of meer Sovereign Grace: Yet what was then

then of Works, was not of Grace, no more is it at present. (3.) *There would then have been Merit of Works, which is now excluded.* *Answ.* Such a Merit as ariseth from an equality and proportion between Works and Reward, by the rule of commutative Justice, would not have been in the Works of the first Covenant; and in no other sense is it now rejected by them that oppose the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. (4.) *All is now resolved into the Merit of Christ, upon the account whereof alone, our own Personal Righteousness is accepted before God unto our Justification.* *Answ.* The Question is not *on what account*, nor for what reason it is so accepted, but whether it be or no; seeing its so being is effectually constitutive of a Covenant of Works.

---

## CHAP. XIV.

*The Exclusion of all sorts of Works from an interest in Justification. What intended by the Law, and the Works of it, in the Epistles of Paul.*

WE shall take our Fourth Argument from the express *Exclusion of all Works of what sort soever from our Justification before God.* For this alone is that which we plead; namely, that no Acts or Works of our own, are the Causes or Conditions of our Justification; but that the whole of it is resolved into the Free Grace of God, through Jesus Christ, as the Mediator and Surety of the Covenant,

To

To this purpose the Scripture speaks expressly. *Rom. 3. 28. Therefore we conclude, that a Man is justified by Faith, without the Works of the Law. Rom. 4. 5. But unto him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his Faith is counted for Righteousness. Rom. 11. 6. If it be of Grace, then is it not of Works. Gal. 2. 16. Knowing that a Man is not justified by the Works of the Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law, for by the Works of the Law, shall no flesh be justified. Eph. 2. 8, 9. For by Grace are ye saved through Faith, not of Works, lest any Man should boast. Tit. 3. 5. Not by Works of Righteousness, which we have done, but according unto his Mercy he hath saved us.*

These and the like Testimonies are express, and in positive Terms assert all that we contend for. And I am perswaded, that no unprejudiced person, whose mind is not prepossessed with *notions and distinctions* whereof not the least Title is offered unto them from the Texts mentioned nor elsewhere, can but judg that the *Law* in every sense of it, and *all sorts of Works* whatever, that at any time, or by any means Sinners or Believers, do or can perform, are not in this or that sense; but every way and in all senses, excluded from our Justification before God. And if it be so, it is the Righteousness of Christ alone that we must betake our selves unto, or this matter must cease for ever. And this Inference the Apostle himself makes from one of the Testimonies before-mentioned, namely that of *Gal. 2. 16.* for he adds upon it; *I through the Law am dead to the Law, that I might live unto God. I am crucified with Christ; nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me, and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the Faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. I do not frustrate the Grace of God; for if Righteousness come by the Law, then is Christ dead in vain.*

Our Adversaries are extremely divided amongst themselves, and can come unto no consistency, as to the sense and meaning of the Apostle in these Assertions; for what is proper and obvious unto the understanding of all Men, especially from the opposition that is made between the Law and Works on the one hand, and Faith, Grace, and Christ on the other, (which are opposed as inconsistent in this matter of our Justification) they will not allow, nor can do so without the *ruine of the opinions* they plead for. Wherefore their various conjectures shall be examined, as well to shew their inconsistency among themselves, by whom the Truth is opposed, as to confirm our present Argument.

I. Some say it is the *Ceremonial Law alone, and the Works of it* that are intended; or the Law as given unto Moses on Mount Sinai, containing that intire Covenant that was afterwards to be abolished. This was of old the common opinion of the Schoolmen, though it be now generally exploded. And the opinion lately contended for, that the Apostle Paul excludes Justification from *the Works of the Law*, not because no Man can yield that perfect obedience which the Law requires, or excludes Works absolutely perfect, and sinless obedience; but because the Law it self, which he intends, could not justify any by the observation of it, is nothing but the renovation of this obsolete notion, that it is the *Ceremonial Law* only, or which upon the matter is all one, the Law given on Mount Sinai, abstracted from the Grace of the Promise, which could not justify any, in the observation of its Rites and Commands. But of all other conjectures, this is the most impertinent and contradictory unto the design of the Apostle, and is therefore rejected by Bellarmine himself. For the Apostle treats of that Law whose doers shall be justified. Chap: 2. 13. And the Authors of this opinion would have it to be a Law that can justify none of them that do it. That Law he intends whereby is the knowledge of sin; for he gives this reason

son, why we cannot be justified by the Works of it, namely, *Because by it, is the knowledge of sin*, Chap. 3. 20. And by what Law is the knowledge of sin, he expressly declares, where he affirms, *That he had not known Lust, except the Law had said, Thou shalt not covet*, Chap. 7. 7. which is the *Moral Law* alone. That Law he designs, *which stops the mouth of all sinners, and makes all the World obnoxious unto the judgment of God*. Chap. 3. 19. Which none can do but the *Law written in the heart of men* at their Creation, Chap. 2. 14, 15. That Law which if a man *do the works of it, he shall live in them*; Gal. 3. 12. Rom. 10. 5. and which brings all men under the *Curse* for sin, Gal. 3. 10. The Law that is *established by Faith* and not made void; Rom. 3. 31; which the *Ceremonial Law* is not, nor the *Covenant of Sinai*. The Law whose Righteousness is *to be fulfilled in us*; Rom. 8. 4. And the instance which the Apostle gives of Justification without the Works of that Law which he intends, namely that of *Abraham*, was some hundreds of years before the giving of the *Ceremonial Law*. Neither yet do I say that the *Ceremonial Law* and the Works of it are excluded from the Intention of the Apostle; For when that Law was given, the Observation of it was an especial Instance of that Obedience we owed unto the first Table of the Decalogue; and the exclusion of the Works thereof from our Justification; in as much as the performance of them was part of that *Moral Obedience* which we owed unto God, is exclusive of all other works also. But that it is *alone* here intended, or that Law which could never justify any by its observation, although it was observed in due manner, is a fond Imagination, and contradictory to the express Assertion of the Apostle. And whatever is pretended to the contrary, this opinion is expressly rejected by *Augustine*; *lib. de Spirit. & liter. cap. 8. Ne quisquam putaret hic Apostolum dixisse ea lege neminem justificari, que in Sacramentis veteribus multa continet figurata præcepta, unde etiam est ista circumcisio*

*carnis, continuo subjungit, quam dixerit legem & addit; per legem Cognitio peccati.* And to the same purpose he speaks again, *Epist. 200. Non solum illa opera legis quæ sunt in veteribus Sacramentis, & nunc revelato Testamento novo non observantur a Christianis, sicut est Circumcisio præputii, & Sabati carnalis vacatio; & a quibusdam escis abstinencia, & pecorum in Sacrificiis immolatio, & neomenia & azymum, & cætera hujusmodi, verum etiam illud quod in lege dictum est, non concupisces, quod ubiq; & Christianus nullus ambigit esse dicendum, non justificat hominem, nisi per fidem Jesu Christi, & gratiam Dei per Jesum Christum dominum nostrum.*

2. Some say the Apostle only excludes the perfect Works required by the Law of Innocency, which is a sense diametrically opposite unto that foregoing: But this best pleaseth the Socinians. *Paulus agit de Operibus & perfectis in hoc dicto ideo enim adjecit, sine operibus legis ut indicaretur loqui eum de operibus a lege requisitis, & sic de perpetua & perfectissima divinorum præceptorum obedientia sicut lex requirit. Cum autem talem obedientiam qualem lex requirit nemo præstare possit, ideo subjecit Apostolus nos justificari fide, id est, fiducia & obedientia ea quantum quisq; præstare potest, & quotidie quam maximum præstare studet, & connititur. Sine operibus legis, id est, etsi interim perfecte totam legem sicut debebat complere nequit; saith Socinus himself. But (1.) We have herein the whole granted of what we plead for; namely, that it is the moral indispensable Law of God that is intended by the Apostle; and that by the works of it no man can be justified, yea, that all the works of it are excluded from our Justification; for it is, saith the Apostle, without Works. The works of this Law being performed according unto it, will justify them that perform them, as he affirms, *Chap. 2. 13.* and the Scripture elsewhere witnesseth, *that he that doth them, shall live in them.* But because this can never be done by any Sinner, therefore all consideration of them is excluded from our Justification.*

(2.) It is a *wild Imagination* that the dispute of the Apostle is to this purpose; that the *perfect* works of the Law will not justify us, but *imperfect* works, which answer not the Law, will do so. (3.) Granting the Law intended to be the *Moral Law* of God, the Law of our Creation, there is no such distinction intimated in the least by the Apostle, that we are not justified by the *perfect Works* of it which we cannot perform, but by *some imperfect Works* that we can perform; and labour so to do. Nothing is more foreign unto the design and express words of his whole discourse (4.) The *Evasion* which they betake themselves unto, that the Apostle opposeth *Justification by faith* unto that of works which he excludes, is altogether vain in this sense. For they would have *this faith* to be our *Obedience* unto the Divine Commands in that imperfect manner which we can attain unto. For when the Apostle hath excluded all such Justification by *the Law* and *the works thereof*, he doth not advance in opposition unto them and in their room, our *own Faith* and *Obedience*; but adds, being justified freely by his Grace through the Redemption that is in *Jesus Christ*, whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his blood.

3. Some of late among our selves, and they want not them who have gone before them, affirm that the Works which the Apostle excludes from Justification, are only the *Outward Works* of the Law, performed without an inward Principle of Faith, fear or the Love of God. Servile Works attended unto from a respect unto the Threatning of the Law; are those which will not justify us. But this Opinion is not only false but impious. For (1.) The Apostle excludes the *Works of Abraham* which were not such outward servile Works as are imagined. (2.) The Works excluded are those which the Law requires; and the Law is *holy, just and good*. But a Law that requires only outward Works without internal Love to God, is neither *holy, just nor Good*. (3.) The Law  
 Condemns

Condemns all such Works as are separated from the *internal Principle of Faith, Fear and Love*, for it requires that in all our Obedience we should love the Lord our God with all our hearts. And the Apostle saith, that we are not justified by the Works which the Law condemns, but not by them which the Law commands. (4.) It is highly reflexive on the *honour of God*, that he unto whose Divine Prerogative it belongs to know the Hearts of men alone, and therefore regards them alone in all the duties of their Obedience, should give a Law requiring outward *servile Works* only; for if the Law intended require more, then are not those the only Works excluded.

4. Some say in general it is the *Jewish Law* that is intended, and think thereby to cast off the whole Difficulty. But if by the *Jewish Law* they intend only the *Ceremonial Law*, or the Law absolutely as given by *Moses*, we have already shewed the Vanity of that pretence. But if they mean thereby the *whole Law* or Rule of Obedience given unto the Church of *Israel* under the Old Testament, they express much of the Truth, it may be more than they designed.

5. Some say that it is *Works with a Conceit of Merit*, that makes the Reward to be of Debt, and not of Grace, that are excluded by the Apostle. But no such distinction appeareth in the Text or Context. For, (1.) The Apostle excludeth *all Works* of the Law, that is, that the Law requireth of us in a way of Obedience, be they of what sort they will. (2.) The Law requireth *no Works* with a *Conceit of Merit*. (3.) Works of the Law Originally, included *no Merit*, as that which ariseth from the Proportion of one thing unto another in the Balance of Justice, and in that sense only is it rejected by those who plead for an *Interest of Works* in Justification. (4.) The *Merit* which the Apostle excludes, is that which is inseparable from Works, so that it cannot be *excluded*, unless the Works themselves be so. And unto their Merit two things

concur :

concur: (1.) A *Comparative boasting*, that is, not absolutely in the sight of God, which follows the *Meritum ex condigno*, which some poor sinful Mortals have fancied in their Works; but that which gives one man a preference above another in the obtaining of Justification, which Grace will not allow. *Chap. 4. 2.* (2.) That the Reward be not *absolutely of Grace*, but that respect be had therein unto Works, which makes it so far to *be of debt*; not out of an internal Condignity which would not have been under the Law of Creation, but out of some *Congruity* with respect unto the promise of God, *v. 4.* In these two regards *Merit* is inseparable from Works; and the Holy Ghost utterly to exclude it, excludeth *all Works* from which it is inseparable, as it is from all. Wherefore (5.) The Apostle speaks not *one word* about the exclusion of the *Merit of Works* only; but he excludeth *all Works* whatever, and that by this Argument, that the Admission of them, would necessarily introduce *merit* in the sense described, which is inconsistent with Grace. And although some think that they are *injuriously* dealt withal, when they are charged with maintaining of *merit* in their asserting the Influence of our Works into our Justification; yet those of them who best understand themselves, and the Controversie itself, are not so averse from some kind of *merit*, as knowing that it is inseparable from Works.

6. Some contend that the Apostle excludes only *Works wrought before believing, in the strength of our own Wills and Natural Abilities, without the aid of Grace*. Works they suppose required by the Law are such as we perform by the Direction and Command of the Law, alone. But the Law of Faith requireth Works in the strength of the supplies of Grace, which are not excluded. This is that which the most learned and judicious of the Church of Rome do now generally betake themselves unto. Those who amongst us plead for Works in our Justification, as they use many distinctions to explain

explain their Minds, and free their Opinion from a co-incidence with that of the *Papists*; so as yet, they deny the name of *Merit*, and the thing it self in the sense of the Church of *Rome*, as it is renounced likewise by all the *Soci-nians*. Wherefore they make use of the preceding Evasion, that *Merit* is excluded by the Apostle, and Works only as they are *meritorious*, although the Apostles plain Argument be that they are excluded because such a *Merit* as is inconsistent with Grace, is inseparable from their Admission.

But the *Roman Church* cannot so part with *Merit*. Wherefore they are to find out a sort of Works to be excluded only, which they are content to part withal as not *meritorious*. Such are those before described, wrought as they say before believing, and without the aids of Grace; and such they say, are all the Works of the Law. And this they do with some more Modesty and Sobriety, than those amongst us, who would have only external Works and Observances to be intended. For they grant that sundry internal Works, as those of *Attrition*, *sorrow for Sin*, and the like, are of this Nature. But the Works of the Law it is they say that are excluded. But this whole Plea, and all the *Sophisms* wherewith it is countenanced, hath been so discussed and defeated by Protestant Writers of all sorts against *Bellarmino* and others, as that it is needless to repeat the same things, or to add any thing unto them. And it will be sufficiently evinced of falsehood, in what we shall immediately prove concerning the Law and Works intended by the Apostle. However the Heads of the Demonstration of the Truth to the contrary may be touched on. And (1.) The Apostle excludeth all Works without distinction or exception. And we are not to distinguish where the Law doth not distinguish before us. (2.) All the Works of the Law are excluded, therefore all Works wrought after believing by the aids of Grace, are excluded.

cluded. For they are *all required by the Law*. See *Psal.* 119.35. *Rom.* 7. 22. Works not required by the Law, are no less an Abomination to God, than Sins against the Law. (3.) The *Works of Believers* after Conversion, performed by the Aids of Grace, are expressly excluded by the Apostle. So are those of *Abraham* after he had been a Believer many years, and abounded in them unto the Praise of God. So he excludeth his own Works after his Conversion, *Gal.* 2. 16. *1 Cor.* 4. 4. *Phil.* 3. 9. And so he excludeth the Works of all other Believers; *Ephes.* 2. 9, 10. (4.) All Works are excluded that might give countenance unto *boasting*, *Rom.* 4. 2. Chap. 3. 17. *Eph.* 2. 9. *1 Cor.* 1. 29, 30, 31. But this is done more by the *Good Works of regenerate Persons*, than by any Works of Unbelievers. (5.) The Law required *Faith and Love* in all our Works, and therefore if all the Works of the Law be excluded, the best works of Believers are so. (6.) *All Works* are excluded which are opposed unto Grace working freely in our Justification. But this all Works whatever are, *Rom.* 11. 6. (7.) In the *Epistle unto the Galatians* the Apostle doth exclude from our Justification all those Works which the false Teachers pressed as necessary thereunto. But they urged the *necessity of the Works of Believers*, and those which were by Grace already converted unto God. For those upon whom they pressed them unto this End were already actually so. (8.) They are *Good Works* that the Apostle excludeth from our Justification. For there can be no Presence of Justification by those Works that *are not Good*, or which have not all things essentially requisite to make them so. But such are all the Works of Unbelievers, performed without the Aids of Grace; they are *not Good*, nor as such accepted with God; but want what is essentially requisite unto the Constitution of Good Works. And it is ridiculous to think that the Apostle Disputes about the exclusion of such Works from our Justification, as no man in his Wits would

think to have any place therein. (9.) The Reason why no man can be justified by the Law, is because no man can yield perfect Obedience thereunto. For by perfect Obedience the Law will justifie, *Rom. 2. 13. Chap. 10. 5.* Wherefore all Works are excluded that are not absolutely perfect. But this the best Works of Believers are not; as we have proved before. (10.) If there be a Reserve for the *Works of Believers* performed by the Aid of Grace in our Justification, it is, that either they may be *concauses* thereof, or be indispensibly *subservient* unto those things that are so. That they are *concauses* of our Justification, is not absolutely affirmed; Neither can it be said that they are *necessarily subservient* unto them that are so. They are not so unto the efficient Cause thereof, which is the *Grace and favour of God alone*, *Rom. 3. 24, 25. Chap. 4. 16. Eph. 2. 8, 9. Rev. 1. 6.* Nor are they so unto the *Meritorious Cause of it*, which is *Christ alone*, *Acts 13 38. Chap. 26. 18. 1 Cor. 1. 30 2 Cor. 5. 18, 19, 20, 21.* Nor unto the *Material Cause of it*; which is the *Righteousness of Christ alone*; *Rom. 10. 3, 4.* Nor are they so unto *Faith* in what place soever it be stated. For not only is Faith only mentioned, wherever we are taught the way how the Righteousness of Christ is derived and communicated unto us; without any intimation of the conjunction of Works with it; but also, as unto our Justification they are placed in Opposition and Contradiction one to the other, *Rom. 3. 28.* And sundry other things are pleadable unto the same purpose.

7. Some affirm that the Apostle excludes all Works from our *first Justification*, but not from the *second*, or as some speak, the continuation of our Justification. But we have before examined these Distinctions, and found them groundless.

Evident it is therefore, that men put themselves into an uncertain, slippery station, where they know not what to

fix upon, nor wherein to find any such appearance of Truth as to give them Countenance in denying the plain and frequently repeated Assertion of the Apostle.

Wherefore in the Confirmation of the present Argument, I shall more particularly enquire into what it is, that the Apostle intends by *the Law and Works* whereof he treats. For as unto our Justification whatever they are, they are *absolutely and universally opposed* unto Grace, Faith, the Righteousness of God, and the Blood of Christ, as those which are altogether inconsistent with them. Neither can this be denied or questioned by any, seeing it is the plain design of the Apostle to evince that inconsistency.

1. Wherefore in general, it is evident that the Apostle by *the Law and the Works thereof intended, what the Jews with whom he had to do, did understand by the Law and their own whole Obedience thereunto.* I suppose this cannot be denied. For without a Concession of it, there is nothing proved against them, nor are they in any thing instructed by him. Suppose those Terms *equivocal* and to be taken in one sense by him, and by them in another, and nothing can be rightly concluded from what is spoken of them. Wherefore the meaning of these Terms *the Law and Works*, the Apostle takes for granted as very well known, and agreed on between himself and those with whom he had to do.

2. The *Jews* by the *Law* intended what the Scriptures of the Old Testament meant by that Expression. For they are no where blamed for any *false Notion* concerning the *Law*, or that they esteemed any thing to be so, but what was so indeed, and what was so called in the Scripture. Their present *Oral Law* was not yet hatched, though the *Pharisees* were brooding of it.

3. The *Law* under the Old Testament, doth immediately refer unto the *Law* given at *Mount Sinai*, nor is there any distinct mention of it before. This is commonly called *the*

## 412 *What intended by the Law, and the*

*Law* absolutely ; but most frequently the *Law of God*, the *Law of the Lord* ; and sometimes the *Law of Moses*, because of his especial Ministry in the giving of it. Remember the *Law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him*, Mal. 4. 4. And this the Jews intended by the *Law*.

4. Of the *Law* so given at *Horeb*, there was a Distribution into three Parts. (1.) There was עשרת הבריות *Deut.* 4. 13. The *ten Words* ; So also *Chap.* 10. 4. that is the *ten Commandments* written in *two Tables of Stone*. This Part of the *Law* was first given ; was the Foundation of the whole, and contained that *perfect Obedience* which was required of Mankind by the *Law of Creation*, and was now received into the Church, with the highest Attestations of its indispensable Obligation unto Obedience or Punishment. (2.) חקים which the LXX render by δυνάμεις, that is *jura* ; *Rites* or *Statutes* ; but the Latine from thence *Justificationes*, *Justifications*, which hath given great Occasion of *Mistake* in many both Ancient and Modern Divines. We call it the *Ceremonial Law*. The Apostle terms this Part of the *Law* distinctly νόμος ἐπιταγῶν ἢ δόγμασι, *Ephes.* 2. 15. The *Law of Commandments contained in Ordinances* ; that is, consisting in a Multitude of Arbitrary Commands. (3.) משפתי which we commonly call the *Judicial Law*. This Distribution of the *Law* shuts up the Old Testament, as it is used in places innumerable before, only the עשרת הבריות the *Ten Words*, is expressed by the general Word הורה the *Law*, Mal. 4. 4.

5. These being the Parts of the *Law* given unto the Church in *Sinai*, the the whole of it is constantly called הורה the *Law*, that is, the Instruction (as the Word signifies) that God gave unto the Church, in the Rule of Obedience which he prescribed unto it. This is the Constant signification of that Word in Scripture, where it is taken absolutely ; and thereon doth not signifie precisely the *Law as given at Horeb*, but compre-

comprehends with it all the Revelations that God made under the Old Testament, in the Explanation and Confirmation of that Law, in *Rules, Motives, Directions* and Enforcements of Obedience.

6. Wherefore תורה the *Law* is the *whole Rule of Obedience* which God gave to the Church under the Old Testament, with all the Efficacy wherewith it was accompanied by the Ordinances of God, including in it all the *Promises and Threatnings*; that might be Motives unto the Obedience that God did require. This is that which God and the Church called *the Law* under the Old Testament, and which the *Jews* so called with whom our Apostle had to do. That which we call the *Moral Law* was the Foundation of the whole; and those Parts of it which we call the *Judicial and Ceremonial Law*, were peculiar Instances of the *Obedience* which the Church under the Old Testament was obliged unto, in the especial *Politie* and divine Worship, which at that season were necessary unto it. And two things doth the Scripture testify unto concerning this Law.

1. That it was a *perfect compleat Rule of all that internal, spiritual and moral Obedience* which God required of the Church. *The Law of the Lord is perfect converting the Soul, the Testimony of the Lord is sure making Wise the Simple.* Psal. 19. 7. And it was so of all the external Duties of Obedience, for matter and manner, time and season; that in both, the Church might walk *acceptably before God*, Isa. 8. 20. And although the Original Duties of the *Moral Part of the Law* are often preferred before the particular Instances of Obedience in Duties of outward Worship; yet the *whole Law* was always the *whole Rule* of all the Obedience *internal and external* that God required of the Church, and which he accepted in them that did believe.

2. That *this Law*, this *Rule of Obedience* as it was ordained of God to be the Instrument of his Rule of the Church, and by

by Vertue of the Covenant made with *Abraham*, unto whose Administration it was Adapted, and which its Introduction on *Sinai* did not disanul, was accompanied with a *Power and Efficacy enabling unto Obedience*. The Law it self as meerly *preceptive and commanding*, administred no Power or Ability unto those that were under its Authority to yield Obedience unto it; no more do the *meer Commands of the Gospel*. Moreover under the Old Testament it *enforced Obedience* on the Minds and Consciences of men, by the manner of its first delivery, and the severity of its *Sanction*, so as to fill them with fear and bondage; and was besides accompanied with such *burthensom Rules* of outward Worship, as made it an heavy yoke unto the people. But as it was Gods *Doctrine, Teaching, Instruction* in all acceptable Obedience unto himself, and was adapted unto the Covenant of *Abraham*, it was accompanied with an Administration of *effectual Grace*, procuring and promoting Obedience in the Church. And the *Law* is not to be looked on as separated from those *Aids* unto Obedience, which God administred under the Old Testament, whose effects are therefore ascribed unto the *Law* it self. See *Psal. 1. Psal. 19. Psal. 119.*

2. This being the *Law* in the sense of the Apostle, and those with whom he had to do, our next enquiry is what was their sense of *Works*, or *Works of the Law*? And I say it is plain that they intended hereby, the *universal Sincere Obedience* of the Church unto God, according unto this Law. And other Works, the Law of God acknowledgeth not; yea, it expressly condemns *all Works* that have any such defect in them, as to render them unacceptable unto God. Hence notwithstanding all the Commands that God had positively given for the strict Observance of *Sacrifices, Offerings*, and the like, yet when the people performed them without *Faith and Love*, he expressly affirms that he *Commanded them not*, that is, to be observed in such a manner, In these Works therefore

fore consisted their personal Righteousness, as they walked in all the Commandments and Ordinances of the Law blameless, Luk. 1. 6. wherein they did instantly serve God day and night, Acts 26. 7. And this they esteemed to be their own Righteousness, their Righteousness according unto the Law, as really it was, Phil. 3. 6, 9. For although the Pharisees had greatly corrupted the Doctrine of the Law, and put false glosses on sundry Precepts of it; yet that the Church in those days did by the Works of the Law, understand either Ceremonial Duties only, or external Works, or Works with a conceit of merit, or Works wrought without an internal Principle of Faith, and Love to God, or any thing but their own personal sincere Obedience unto the whole Doctrine and Rule of the Law, there is nothing that should give the least colour of Imagination. For,

1. All this is perfectly stated in the Suffrage which the Scribe gave unto the Declaration of the sense and design of the Law, with the Nature of the Obedience which it doth require, that was made at his request by our blessed Saviour, Mark 12. 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33. And one of the Scribes came and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, which is the first Commandment of all; or as it is, Matth. 22. 36, Which is the great Commandment in the Law? And Jesus answered him, the first of all the Commandments is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is One Lord; and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength; this is the first Commandment: and the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thy self. And the Scribe said unto him, Well Master, thou hast said the Truth, for there is one God, and there is none but he. And to love him with all the Heart: and with all the Understanding, and with all the Soul, and with all the Strength, and to love his Neighbour as himself, is more then all whole burnt Offerings and Sacrifices.

*sacrifices.* And this so expressly given by *Moses* as the Sum of the Law, namely Faith and Love, as the Principle of all our Obedience, *Deut.* 6. 4, 5. that it is marvellous what should induce any learned sober Person to fix upon any other sense of it; as that it respected *ceremonial or external Works only*, or *such as may be wrought without Faith or Love.* This is the Law concerning which the Apostle disputes, and this the Obedience wherein *the Works of it do consist.* And more than this, in the way of Obedience God never did nor will require of any in this World. Wherefore the *Law and the Works thereof*, which the Apostle excludeth from Justification, is that whereby we are obliged to *believe in God as One God, the only God, and love him with all our Hearts and Souls, and our Neighbours as our selves.* And what Works there are, or can be in any Persons regenerate or not regenerate, to be performed in the strength of Grace, or without it, that are acceptable unto God, that may not be reduced unto these Heads, I know not.

2. The Apostle himself declareth, that it is the Law and the Works of it in the sense we have expressed, that he excludeth from our Justification.

For the Law he speaks of, is the *Law of Righteousness*, *Rom.* 9. 31. The *Law whose Righteousness is to be fulfilled in us*, that we may be accepted with God, and freed from Condemnation, *Chap.* 8. 3. That in Obedience whereunto, our *own personal Righteousness* doth consist, whether what we judge so, before Conversion, *Rom.* 10. 3. or what is so after it, *Phil.* 3. 9. The Law which if a man observe, *he shall live*, and be justified before God, *Rom.* 2. 13. *Gal.* 3. 12. *Rom.* 10. 5. That Law which is *Holy, Just and Good*, which discovereth and condemneth all sin whatever, *Rom.* 7. 7, 9.

From what hath been discoursed, these two things are evident in the Confirmation of our present Argument. (1.) That *The Law intended by the Apostle*, when he denies that by the *Works*

*Works of the Law any can be justified*, is the *entire Rule and Guide of our Obedience unto God*, even as unto the whole frame and *Spiritual Constitution of our Souls*, with all the *Acts of Obedience or Duties that he requireth of us*. And (2.) That the *Works of this Law* which he so frequently and plainly excludeth from our *Justification*, and therein opposeth to the *Grace of God*, and the *Blood of Christ*, are all the *Duties of Obedience, Internal, Supernatural, External, Ritual*, however we are or may be enabled to perform them, that *God requireth of us*. And these things excluded, it is the *Righteousness of Christ alone* imputed unto us, on the account whereof we are justified before *God*.

The Truth is, so far as I can discern, the real Difference that is at this Day amongst us about the *Doctrine of our Justification before God*, is the same that was between the *Apostle* and the *Jews*, and no other. But *Controversies in Religion* make a great Appearance of being *new*, when they are only varied and made different, by the new *Terms and Expressions* that are introduced into the handling of them. So hath it fallen out in the *Controversie about Nature and Grace*; For as unto the true nature of it, it is the same in these days, as it was between the *Apostle Paul* and the *Pharisees*, between *Austin* and *Pelagius* afterwards. But it hath now passed through so many forms and dresses of *Words*, as that it can scarce be known to be what it was. Many at this day will condemn both *Pelagius* and the *Doctrine* that he taught, in the *Words wherein he taught it*, and yet embrace and approve of the things themselves which he intended. The Introduction of every Change in *Philosophical Learning*, gives an Appearance of a Change in the *Controversies* which are managed thereby. But take off the covering of *Philosophical Expressions, Distinctions, Metaphysical Notions*, and futi- lous *Terms of Art*, which some of the *Ancient Schoolmen* and later *Disputants* have cast upon it, and the Difference

about *Grace and Nature* is amongst us all, the same that it was of old, and as it is allowed by the *Socinians*.

Thus the Apostle treating of our *Justification before God*, doth it in these Terms which are both expressive of the thing it self, and were well understood by them with whom he had to do; such as the Holy Spirit in their *Revelation* had consecrated unto their proper use. Thus on the one hand he expressly excludes the *Law*, our *own Works*, our *own Righteousness* from any interest therein; and in opposition unto, and as inconsistent with them in the matter of *Justification*, he ascribes it wholly unto the *Righteousness of God*, *Righteousness imputed unto us*, the *Obedience of Christ*, *Christ made Righteousness unto us*, the blood of Christ as a Propitiation, *Faith*, receiving Christ and the Atonement. There is no awakened Conscience guided by the least beam of spiritual Illumination, but in it self, plainly understands these things, and what is intended in them. But through the *Admission of Exotick Learning*, with *Philosophical Terms* and notions into the way of teaching spiritual things in Religion, a new face and Appearance is put on the whole matter; and a *Composition* made between those things which the Apostle directly opposeth as contrary and inconsistent. Hence are all our Discourses about *Preparations*, *Dispositions*, *Conditions*, *Merits de congruo & condigno*, with such a train of *Distinctions*, as that if some bounds be not fixed unto the inventing and coining of them, (which being a facile Work grows on us every day) we shall not e're long be able to look through them, so as to discover the things intended or rightly to understand one another. For as one *said of lies*, so it may be said of *arbitrary distinctions*, they must be continually new *thatched over*, or it will rain through. But the best way is to cast of all these *coverings*, and we shall then quickly see, that the real difference about the *Justification of a Sinner before God* is the *same* and no other, as it was in the days of the

the

the Apostle *Paul* between him and the *Jews*. And all those things which men are pleased now to plead for, with respect unto a *Causality in our Justification before God*, under the Names of *Preparations, Conditions, Dispositions, Merit* with respect unto a *first or second Justification*, are as effectually excluded by the Apostle, as if he had expressly named them every one. For in them all, there is a management according unto our *Conceptions*, and the *Terms of the Learning past in the present Age*, of the Plea for our own personal Righteousness which the *Jews* maintained against the Apostle. And the true Understanding of what he intends by the *Law*, the *Works* and Righteousness thereof, would be sufficient to determine this Controversie, but that men are grown very Skilful in the Art of endless Wrangling.

## CHAP. XV.

### *Faith alone.*

**T**He Truth which we plead hath two Parts. (1.) That the *Righteousness of God* imputed to us, unto the *Justification of Life*, is the *Righteousness of Christ*, by whose Obedience we are made Righteous. (2.) That it is *Faith alone*, which on *our Part* is required to interest us in that Righteousness, or whereby we comply with Gods Grant and Communication of it, or receive it unto our Use and Benefit. For although this Faith is in it self the radical Principle of all Obedience, and whatever is not so, which cannot, which doth not on all occasions, evidence, prove, shew or manifest it self by Works, is not of the same kind with it, yet as

we are justified by it, its *act and Duty* is such, or of that nature, as that no other Grace, Duty or Work can be *associated* with it, or be of any Consideration. And both these are evidently confirmed in that Description which is given us in the Scripture of the Nature of Faith and believing unto the Justification of life.

I know that many Expressions used in the Declaration of the Nature and Work of Faith herein, are *Metaphorical*, at least are generally esteemed so to be. But they are such as the Holy Ghost in his Infinite Wisdom thought meet to make use of, for the Instruction and Edification of the Church. And I cannot but say, that those who understand not how effectually the light of knowledg is communicated unto the minds of them that believe by them, and a sense of the things intended unto their *Spiritual Experience*, seem not to have taken a due consideration of them. Neither whatever Skill we pretend unto, do we know always what expressions of Spiritual things are *Metaphorical*. Those oftentimes may seem so to be, which are most proper. However it is most safe for us to adhere unto the Expressions of the Holy Spirit, and not to embrace such senses of things as are inconsistent with them, and opposite unto them. Wherefore,

1. That *Faith* whereby we are justified, is most frequently in the New Testament expressed by *receiving*. This notion of Faith hath been before spoken unto, in our general Enquiry into the use of it in our Justification. It shall not therefore be here much again insisted on. Two things we may observe concerning it. (1.) That it is so expressed with respect unto the *whole Object of Faith*, or unto all that doth any way concur unto our Justification. For (1.) We are said to *receive Christ himself*. *Unto as many as have received him, he gave power to become the Sons of God*, Joh. 1. 12. *As you have received Christ Jesus the Lord*, Col. 2. 6. In Opposition hereunto Unbelief is exprest by *not receiving of him*, Joh. 1.

*Job. 11. 1. Chap. 3. 11. Chap. 12. 48. Chap. 14. 17.* And it is a receiving of Christ, as he is the Lord our Righteousness, as of God he is made Righteousness unto us. And as no Grace, no Duty can have any co-operation with Faith herein, this Reception of Christ not belonging unto their Nature, nor comprized in their Exercise; so it excludes any other Righteousness from our Justification but that of Christ alone. For we are justified by Faith; Faith alone receiveth Christ, and what it receives is the Cause of our Justification, whereon we become the Sons of God. So we receive the Atonement, made by the blood of Christ, *Rom. 5. 11.* For God hath set him forth to be a Propitiation through Faith in his Blood. And this receiving of the Atonement, includeth the Souls Approbation of the way of Salvation by the blood of Christ, and and the Appropriation of the Atonement made thereby unto our own Souls. For thereby also we receive the forgiveness of Sins; That they may receive the forgiveness of Sin, through the Faith that is in me, *Acts 26. 18.* In receiving Christ we receive the Atonement, and in the Atonement we receive the forgiveness of Sins. But moreover, the Grace of God, and Righteousness it self, as the Efficient and Material Cause of our Justification are received also; even the Abundance of Grace, and the Gift of Righteousness, *Rom. 5. 17.* So that Faith with the respect unto all the Causes of Justification is expressed by receiving. For it also receiveth the Promise, the Instrumental Cause on the Part of God thereof, *Acts 2. 41. Heb. 9. 15.* (2.) That the Nature of Faith and its acting with respect unto all the Causes of Justification consisting in receiving, that which is the Object of it must be offered, tendered, and given unto us, as that which is not our own, but is made our own by that giving and receiving; This is evident in the general Nature of receiving. And herein as was observed, as no other Grace or Duty can concur with it, so the Righteousness whereby we are justified can be none of our

our own, antecedent unto this Reception, nor at any time inherent in us: Hence we argue, *That if the Work of Faith in our Justification be receiving of what is freely granted, given, communicated and imputed unto us, that is, of Christ, of the Attonement, of the Gift of Righteousness, of the forgiveness of Sins, than have our other Graces, our Obedience, Duties, Works, no influence into our Justification, nor are any Causes or Conditions thereof.* For they are neither that which doth receive, nor that which is received, which alone concur thereunto.

2. Faith is expressed by *looking*. *Look unto me and be saved, Isa. 45. 22. A man shall look to his Maker, and his Eyes shall have respect unto the Holy One of Israel, Chap. 17. 1. They shall look on me whom they have pierced, Zech. 12. 10. See Psal. 123. 2.* The nature hereof is expressed, *Joh. 3. 14, 15. As Moses lifted up the Serpent in the Wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up, that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have eternal life.* For so was he to be lifted up on the Cross in his Death, *Joh. 8. 28. Chap. 12. 32.* The Story is recorded *Numb. 21. 8, 9.* I suppose none doubt but that the *Stinging of the people by fiery Serpents*, and the *Death that ensued thereon*, were *Types of the guilt of Sin*, and the *Sentence of the fiery Law thereon*. For these things happened unto them *in Types*, *1 Cor. 10. 11.* When any was so *stung or bitten*, if he betook himself unto any other Remedies, he *died and perished*. Only they that *looked unto the Brazen Serpent that was lifted up*, were healed and lived. For this was the Ordinance of God, this way of healing alone, had he appointed. And their healing was a *Type of the Pardon of Sin with everlasting life*. So by their *looking*, is the Nature of Faith expressed, as our Saviour plainly expounds it in this Place. So must *the Son of man be lifted up, that he that believeth on him*, that is as the *Israelites looked unto the Serpent in the Wilderness*. And although this Expression

pression of the great Mystery of the Gospel by Christ himself, hath been by some *derided*, or as they call it *exposed*, yet is it really as *instructive* of the Nature of Faith, Justification and Salvation by Christ, as any passage in the Scripture. Now if Faith whereby we are justified, and in that exercise of it wherein we are so, be a *looking unto Christ*, under a sense of the guilt of Sin and our lost Condition thereby, for all, for our only Help and Relief, for Deliverance, Righteousness, and life, then is it therein *exclusive of all other Graces and Duties* whatever; for by them we neither *look*, nor are they the things which we *look after*. But so is the Nature and Exercise of Faith expressed by the Holy Ghost. And they who do believe, understand his mind. For whatever may be pretended of *Metaphor* in the Expression, *Faith is that Act of the Soul whereby they who are hopeless, helpless, and lost in themselves, do in a way of expectancy and Trust seek for all help and relief in Christ alone, or there is not Truth in it.* And this also sufficiently evinceth the Nature of our Justification by Christ.

3. It is in like manner frequently expressed by *coming unto Christ*. *Come unto me all ye that labour*, Mat. 11. 28. See *Joh. 6. 35. 37. 45. 65. Chap. 7. 37.* To *come unto Christ* for life and Salvation, is to *believe on him* unto the Justification of life. But no other *Grace or Duty* is a coming unto Christ, and therefore have they no place in Justification. He who hath been convinced of Sin, who hath been wearied with the Burthen of it, who hath really designed to fly from the Wrath to come, and hath heard the Voice of Christ in the Gospel, inviting him to *come unto him* for Help and Relief, will tell you that this *coming unto Christ* consisteth in a mans going out of himself, in a compleat Renuuciation of all his own Duties and Righteousness, and betaking himself with all his Trust and Confidence unto Christ alone, and his Righteousness, for pardon of Sin, acceptation with God,

and

and a right unto the Heavenly Inheritance. It may be some will say this is not *believing*, but *canting*; Be it so, we refer the Judgment of it to the Church of God.

4. It is expressed by *flying for Refuge*, Heb. 6. 18. Who have *fled for Refuge*, to lay hold on the hope set before us, Prov. 18. 10. Hence some have defined Faith to be *perflugium animæ*, the *flight of the Soul unto Christ for Deliverance from Sin and Misery*. And much light is given unto the Understanding of the thing intended thereby. For herein it is supposed, that he who believeth is antecedently thereunto *convinced* of his lost condition, and that if he abide therein he must perish eternally; that he hath nothing of himself whereby he may be delivered from it; that he must betake himself unto somewhat else for Relief; that unto this end he considereth Christ as *set before him* and proposed unto him in the Promise of the Gospel; that he judgeth this to be an *holy, a safe way* for his Deliverance and Acceptance with God, as that which hath the Characters of all Divine Excellencies upon it; hereon he *flyeth unto it for Refuge*, that is, with diligence and speed that he perish not in his present Condition, he betakes himself unto it by placing his whole Trust and Affiance thereon. And the whole Nature of our Justification by Christ is better declared hereby unto the supernatural Sense and Experience of Believers, than by an *hundred Philosophical Disputations* about it.

5. The Terms and Notions by which it is expressed under the Old Testament, are *leaning on God*, Micah 3. 11. or *Christ*, Cant. 8. 5. *rolling*, or *casting our selves* and our burthen on the Lord, *Psal.* 22. 8. *Psal.* 37. 5. The Wisdom of the Holy Ghost in which Expressions hath by some been *prophanely derided*. Resting on God, or in him, *2 Chron.* 14. 11. *Psal.* 37. 7. *Cleaving* unto the Lord, *Deut.* 4. 4. *Acts* 11. 15. as also by *Trusting*, *Hoping*, and *Waiting* in Places innumerable. And it may be observed that those who acted Faith

as it is thus expressed, do every where declare themselves to be *lost, hopeless, helpless, desolate, poor, Orphans*, whereon they place all their hope and expectation on God alone.

All that I would infer from these things, is, that the Faith whereby we believe unto the *Justification of life*, or which is required of us in a way of Duty that we may be justified, is such an Act of the whole Soul whereby convinced Sinners do wholly go out of themselves to rest upon God in Christ, for *Mercy, Pardon, Life, Righteousness and Salvation*, with an acquiescency of Heart therein, which is the whole of the Truth pleaded for.

---

## CHAP. XVI.

*The Truth pleaded, farther confirmed by Testimonies of Scripture, Jer. 23. 6.*

**T**Hat which we now proceed unto, is the consideration of those *Express Testimonies* of Scripture which are given unto the Truth pleaded for, and especially of those places where the Doctrine of the Justification of Sinners is expressly and designedly handled. From them it is, that we must learn the Truth, and into them must our Faith be resolved, unto whose Authority all the arguings and Objections of men must give place. By them is more light conveyed into the understandings of Believers, than by the most subtle Disputations. And it is a thing not without scandal, to see among *Protestants* whole Books written about *Justification*, wherein scarce one Testimony of Scripture is produced, unless it be to find out Evasions from the force of them. And

in particular, whereas the Apostle *Paul* hath most fully and expressly (as he had the greatest occasion so to do) declared and vindicated the Doctrine of *Evangelical Justification*, not a few in what they write about it, are so far from declaring their Thoughts and Faith concerning it, out of his Writings, as that they begin to reflect upon them as *obscure*, and such as give occasion unto dangerous mistakes; and unless, as was said, to answer and except against them upon their own corrupt Principles, seldom or never make mention of them. As though we were grown wiser than he, or that Spirit whereby he was inspired, guided, acted in all that he wrote; But there can be nothing more Alien from the *genius* of Christian Religion, than for us not to endeavour humbly to learn the Mystery of the Grace of God, herein, in the Declaration of it made by him. But the *foundation of God standeth sure*, what course soever men shall be pleased to take into their Profession of Religion.

For the Testimonies which I shall produce and insist upon, I desire the *Reader* to observe, (1.) That they are but *some of the many* that might be pleaded unto the same purpose. (2.) That those which have been, or yet shall be alledged on *particular occasions*, I shall wholly omit; and such are most of them that are given unto this Truth in the *Old Testament*. (3.) That in the Exposition of them, I shall with what diligence I can attend; (1.) Unto the *Analogy of Faith*, that is the manifest scope and design of the Revelation of the Mind and will of God in the Scripture. And that this is to exalt the Freedom and riches of his own Grace, the Glory and Excellency of Christ, and his Mediation, to discover the woful, lost, forlorn condition of man by Sin, to debase and depress every thing that is in and of our selves, as to the attaining Life, Righteousness and Salvation, cannot be denied by any who have their senses exercised in  
the

the Scriptures. (2.) Unto the *Experience* of them that do believe, with the condition of them who seek after Justification by Jesus Christ. In other things I hope the best helps and Rules of the interpretation of the Scripture shall not be neglected.

There is weight in this case deservedly laid on the *name of the Lord Jesus Christ* the Son of God, as promised and given unto us; namely, *the Lord our Righteousness*, Jer. 23. 6. As the name *Jehovah*, being given and ascribed unto him, is a full indication of his Divine person; so the addition of his being *our Righteousness*, sufficiently declares, that in, and by him alone, we have Righteousness<sup>1</sup>, or are made righteous. So was he typed by *Melchisedec*, as first, *the King of Righteousness*, then *the King of Peace*, Heb. 7. 2. For by his Righteousness alone have we Peace with God. Some of the *Socinians* would evade this Testimony, by observing, that Righteousness in the Old Testament is used sometimes for *Benignity*, *Kindness* and *Mercy*, and so they suppose it may be here. But the most of them, avoiding the palpable absurdity of this imagination, refer it to the *Righteousness of God in deliverance*, and *vindication of his people*. So *Brennius* briefly, *Ita vocatur quia Dominus per manum ejus judicium & justitiam faciet Israeli*. But these are evasions of bold men, who care not, so they may say somewhat, whether what they say, be agreeable to the *Analogy of Faith*, or the plain words of the Scripture. *Bellarmino* who was more wary to give some appearance of Truth unto his answers, first, gives other reasons why he is called the *Lord our Righteousness*; and then, whether *unawares*, or *over-powered* by the evidence of Truth, grants that sense of the words which contains the whole of the cause we plead for. Christ, he says, *may be called the Lord our Righteousness, because he is the efficient cause of our righteousness*. As God is said to be *our Strength and Salvation*. Again, *Christ is said to be our righteousness; as he is our Wis-*

dom, our Redemption and our Peace; because he hath redeemed us, and makes us wise and righteous, and receive us unto God: And other reasons of the same nature are added by others. But not trusting to these Expositions of the words, he adds, *Deinde dicitur Christus justitia nostra, quoniam satisfecit patri pro nobis, & eam satisfactionem ita nobis donat & communicat, cum nos justificat, ut nostra satisfactio & justitia dici possit.* And afterwards, *Hoc modo non esset absurdum, si quis diceret nobis imputari Christi justitiam & merita, cum nobis donantur & applicantur, ac si nos ipsi Deo satisfecissemus.* De justificat. lib. 2. cap. 10. Christ is said to be our Righteousness because he hath made Satisfaction for us to the Father; and doth so give and communicate that Satisfaction unto us, when he justifieth us, that it may be said to be our Satisfaction, and Righteousness. And in this sense it would not be absurd if any one should say, that the righteousness of Christ and his merits are imputed unto us, as if we our selves had satisfied God. In this sense we say, that Christ is the Lord our Righteousness; nor is there any thing of importance in the whole Doctrine of Justification that we own, which is not here granted by the Cardinal; and that in terms which some among our selves scruple and oppose. I shall therefore look a little further into this Testimony which hath wrested so eminent a confession of the Truth, from so great an Adversary. Behold, the dazes come, saith the Lord, that I will raise up unto David a righteous branch, and this is his name whereby he shall be called, the Lord our Righteousness, ver. 5, 6. It is confessed among Christians that this is an illustrious Renovation of the first promise, concerning the Incarnation of the Son of God, and our Salvation by him. This promise was first given when we had lost our Original Righteousness, and were considered only as those who had sinned and come short of the Glory of God. In this estate a Righteousness was absolutely necessary that we might be again accepted with

with God; for without a Righteousness, yea, that which is perfect and compleat, we never were so, nor ever can be so. In this estate it is promised that *he shall be our Righteousness*, or, as the Apostle expresseth it, *the end of the Law for righteousness to them that do believe*. That he is so, there can be no question, the whole enquiry is, *how he is so?* This, say the most Sober and Modest of our Adversaries, because *he is the efficient cause of our Righteousness*, that is, of our personal inherent Righteousness. But this Righteousness may be considered either *in it self*, as it is an effect of Gods Grace, and so it is *good and holy*, although it be not perfect and compleat; or it may be considered as it is *ours, inherent* in us, accompanied with the remaining defilements of our Nature; In that respect, *as this Righteousness is ours*, the Prophet affirms, that (in the sight of God) *we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags*, Isa. 64. 6. כל צדקתנו comprizeth our whole personal, inherent righteousness. And the Lord Christ cannot from hence be denominated יהוה צדקנו; *The Lord our righteousness*, seeing it is all *as filthy rags*. It must therefore be a Righteousness of another sort whence this denomination is taken, and on the account whereof this name is given him: Wherefore he is our Righteousness, as all our *righteousnesses are in him*. So the Church which confesseth all her own Righteousnesses to be *filthy rags*, says, *in the Lord have I righteousness*, Isa. 45. 24. which is expounded of Christ by the Apostle, Rom. 14. 11. יהוה לי צדקתי *only in the Lord are my righteousnesses*; which two places the Apostle expresseth, Phil. 3. 9. *That I may win Christ and be found in him, not having mine own righteousness which is of the Law (in this case as filthy rags) but that which is through the Faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by Faith*. Hence it is added, in the *Lord shall the seed of Israel be justified*, ver. 25. namely, because he is, in what he is, in what he was, and did, as given

given unto and for us, *our righteousness*, and our Righteousness is all in him; which totally excludes our own personal inherent righteousness from any interest in our justification, and ascribes it wholly unto the Righteousness of Christ. And thus is that Emphatical Expression of the Psalmist, *I will go in the strength of the Lord God*; (for as unto holiness and obedience, all our spiritual strength is from him alone) and I will make mention צדקה לברך *Psal. 71. 16. Of thy righteousness, of thine only*; The redoubling of the *affix* excludes all confidence and trusting in any thing but the *righteousness of God alone*. For this the Apostle affirms to be the design of God, in making Christ to be righteousness unto us, namely that *no flesh should glory in his presence, but that he that glorieth, should glory in the Lord*, 1 Cor. 1. 29, 30, 31. For it is by Faith alone making mention, as unto our Justification, of the Righteousness of God, of *his righteousness only*, that excludes all *boasting*, Rom. 3. 27. And, besides what shall be further pleaded from particular Testimonies, the Scripture doth eminently declare *how he is the Lord our righteousness*, namely, in that he makes *an end of sin and reconciliation for iniquity, and brings in everlasting righteousness*, Dan. 9. 24. For by these things is our Justification compleated; namely in Satisfaction made for Sin, the Pardon of it in our Reconciliation unto God, and the providing for us *an everlasting righteousness*. Therefore is he the Lord our Righteousness, and so rightly called. Wherefore seeing *we had lost Original righteousness, and had none of our own remaining, and stood in need of a perfect, compleat righteousness to procure our acceptance with God, and such a one as might exclude all occasion of boasting of any thing in our selves, the Lord Christ being given and made unto us, the Lord our righteousness, in whom we have all our righteousness, our own, as it is ours, being as filthy rags in the sight of God, and this by making an end of sin, and reconciliation for iniquity, and bringing in everlasting*

*righteousness*

*Testimonies out of the Evangelists, &c.* 431  
righteousness. It is by his Righteousness, by his only, that we are justified in the sight of God, and do glory. This is the substance of what, in this case, we plead for; and thus it is delivered in the Scripture, in a way bringing more Light and Spiritual Sense into the Minds of Believers, than those *Philosophical* expressions, and distinctions, which vaunt themselves with a pretence of propriety, and accuracy.

---

## CHAP. XVII.

### *Testimonies out of the Evangelists, considered.*

**T**HE Reasons why the Doctrine of Justification, by the *Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ*, is more fully and clearly delivered in the following Writings of the *New Testament*, than it is in those of the *Evangelists* who wrote the History of the Life and Death of *Christ*, have been before declared. But yet in them also it is sufficiently attested, as unto the *state of the Church before the Death and Resurrection of Christ*, which is represented in them. Some few of the *many Testimonies* which may be pleaded out of their Writings unto that purpose, I shall consider.

1. The principal design of our Blessed *Saviours Sermon*, especially that part of it which is Recorded *Matth. 5.* is to declare the true nature of *Righteousness before God*. The Scribes and Pharisees, from a Bondage unto whose Doctrines he designed to vindicate the Consciences of those that heard him, placed *all our Righteousness* before God in the Works of the Law, or Mens own obedience thereunto. This they taught the People, and hereon they *justified themselves*, as

he chargeth them. *Luke 16. 15. Ye are they which justify your selves before men; but God knoweth your hearts, for that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God:* As in this Sermon he makes it evident. And all those who were under their conduct, did seek to *establish their own Righteousness, as it were by the works of the Law, Rom. 9. 33. Chap. 10. 3.* But yet were they convinced in their own Consciences, that they could *not attain unto the Law of Righteousness;* or unto that perfection of obedience which the Law did require. Yet would they not forego their *proud, fond imagination* of Justification by their own Righteousness, but, as the manner of all Men is in the same case, *sought out other inventions* to relieve them against their convictions. For unto this end, they *corrupted* the whole Law by their *false glosses* and interpretations to bring down, and debase the sense of it, unto what they boasted in themselves to perform. So doth he in whom our Saviour gives an instance of the principle and practice of the whole Society, by way of a Parable. *Luk. 18. 10, 11, 12.* And so the *young Man* affirmed, That he had *kept the whole Law* from his youth, namely in their sense. *Matth. 19. 20.*

To root out this pernicious Error out of the Church, our Lord Jesus Christ in many instances, gives the *true, spiritual sense* and intention of the Law, manifesting what the Righteousness is, which the Law requires, and on what terms a Man may be *justified* thereby. And among sundry others to the same purpose, two things he evidently declares. (1.) That the Law in its Precepts and Prohibitions had regard unto the *regulation of the heart*, with all its first motions and actings. For he asserts, that the *inmost thoughts* of the heart, and the first motions of concupiscence therein, though not consented unto, much less actually accomplished in the outward deeds of sin, and all the occasions leading unto them, are *directly forbidden* in the Law. This he doth in his holy  
Exposition

Exposition of the *seventh Commandment*, Ver. 27, 28, 29, 30. (2.) He declares the *penalty* of the Law, on the least sin, to be *Hell fire*, in his Assertion of *causeless anger* to be forbidden in the *sixth Commandment*. If Men would but try themselves by these Rules and others, there given by our Saviour, it would, it may be, take them off from *boasting in their own Righteousness* and Justification thereby. But as it was then, so is it now also; the most of them who would maintain a Justification by Works, do attempt to corrupt the sense of the Law, and accommodate it unto their own practice. The Reader may see an eminent demonstration hereof, in a late excellent Treatise, whose title is, *The Practical Divinity of the Papists discovered to be destructive of Christianity and Mens souls*. The Spirituality of the Law, with the severity of its Sanction, extending it self unto the least, and most imperceptible motions of sin in the heart, are not believed, or not aright considered by them who plead for *Justification by Works* in any sense. Wherefore the principal design of the *Sermon* of our Saviour is, as to declare what is the nature of that obedience which God requireth by the Law, so to prepare the minds of his Disciples to seek after another *Righteousness*, which in the cause and means of it, was not yet plainly to be declared, although many of them being prepared by the Ministry of *John*, did hunger and thirst after it.

But he sufficiently intimates wherein it did consist, in that he affirms of himself, *That he came to fulfil the Law*, Ver. 17. What he came for, that he *was sent for*; for as he was *sent*, and not for himself, *He was born to us, given unto us*. This was to fulfil the Law, that so the Righteousness of it might be fulfilled in us. And if we our selves cannot fulfil the Law in the proper sense of its commands, which yet is not to be abolished but established, as our Saviour declares; if we cannot avoid the Curse and Penalty of it upon its transgression:

sion : And if he came to *fulfil it for us*, all which are declared by himself, then is his Righteousness, even which he wrought for us in fulfilling the Law, the Righteousness where-with we are justified before God. And whereas here is a twofold Righteousness proposed unto us, one in *the fulfilling of the Law by Christ* ; the other in our own perfect obedience unto the Law, as the sense of it is by him declared, and other *middle Righteousness* between them there is none ; it is left unto the Consciences of convinced sinners, whether of these they will adhere and trust unto. And their direction herein is the principal design we ought to have in the declaration of this Doctrine.

I shall pass by all those places wherein the *foundations* of this Doctrine are surely laid, because it is not expressly mentioned in them. But such they are as in their proper Interpretation do necessarily infer it. (Of this kind are they all, wherein the Lord Christ *is said to die for us, or in our stead, to lay down his life a ransom for us, or in our stead*, and the like ; but I shall pass them by, because I will not digress at all from the present Argument.

But the Representation made by our Saviour himself, of the *way and means* whereon and whereby Men come to be justified before God, in the Parable of the Pharisee and the Publican, is a guide unto all Men who have the same design with them. *Luk. 18. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14. And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves, that they were righteous and despised others : Two Men went up unto the Temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself ; God I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this Publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the Publican standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto Heaven, but smote upon his Breast, saying, God be merciful unto me a sinner. I tell you,*  
that

that this Man went down unto his house justified, rather than the other : For every one that exalteth himself, shall be abased ; and every one that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

That the design of our Saviour herein, was to represent the way of our Justification before God, is evident. (1.) From the description given of the persons whom he reflected on. *V. 9. They were such as trusted in themselves, that they were righteous ; or, That they had a Personal Righteousness of their own before God.* (2.) From the general rule wherewith he confirms the judgment he had given concerning the persons described. *Every one that exalteth himself shall be abased. Ver. 14. And he that abaseth himself, shall be exalted.* As this is applied unto the Pharisee, and the Prayer that is ascribed unto him, it declares plainly, That every plea of our own works, as unto our Justification before God, under any consideration, is a self exaltation which God despiseth ; and as applied unto the Publican, that a *sense of sin* is the only preparation on our part for acceptance with him on believing.

Wherefore both the persons are represented, *As seeking to be justified*, for so our Saviour expresseth the issue of their address unto God for that purpose ; *the one was justified*, the other was not.

The Plea of the Pharisee unto this end consists of two parts. (1.) That he had fulfilled the condition whereon he might be justified. He makes no mention of any merit, either of congruity, or condignity. Only whereas there were two parts of Gods Covenant then with the Church, the one with respect unto the Moral, the other with respect unto the Ceremonial Law, he pleads the observation of the condition of it in both parts, which he sheweth in instances of both kinds, only he adds, the way that he took to further him in this obedience, somewhat beyond what was enjoined, namely, *That he fasted twice in the week.* For when Men begin to seek

for Righteousness, and Justification by Works, they quickly think their best reserve lies in *doing something extraordinary* more then other Men, and more indeed then is required of them. This brought forth all the *Pharisaical Austerities* in the Papacy. Nor can it be said, That all this signified nothing, because he was an *Hypocrite* and a Boaster; for it will be replied, That it should seem all are so who *seek for Justification by Works*: For our Saviour only represents *one* that doth so; neither are these things laid in *Bar* against his Justification, but only *that he exalted himself in trusting unto his own Righteousness*. (2.) In an ascription of all that he did unto God. *God, I thank thee*: Although he did all this, yet he owned *the aid and assistance of God* by his Grace in it all. He esteemed himself much to *differ* from other Men, but ascribed it not unto himself, that so he did. All the Righteousness and Holiness which he laid claim unto, he ascribed unto the benignity and goodness of God. Wherefore he neither pleaded any *merit* in his Works, nor any *Works* performed in his *own strength*, without the aid of Grace. All that he pretends is, That by the *Grace of God he had fulfilled the Condition of the Covenant*, and thereon expected to be justified. And what ever words Men shall be pleased to make use of in their *Vocal Prayers*, God interprets their minds, according to what they trust in, as unto their Justification before him. And if some Men will be true unto their own Principles, this is the Prayer which, *Mutatis mutandis*, they ought to make.

If it be said, that it is charged on this *Pharisee*, that he *trusted in himself*, and *despised others*, for which he was rejected. I answer, (1.) This charge respects not the mind of the person, but the *genius* and tendency of the opinion. The Perswasion of Justification by Works, includes in it a *contempt of other means*. For if *Abraham had been justified by Works*, he should have had *whereof to glory*. (2.) Those whom  
he

he despised, were such as placed their whole trust in *Grace and Mercy*; as this *Publican*. It were to be wished, that all others of the same mind did not so also.

The issue is with this person, *That he was not justified*; neither shall any one ever be so on the account of his own Personal Righteousness. For our Saviour hath told us, *That when we have done all*, that is, when we have the testimony of our Consciences unto the integrity of our obedience, instead of pleading it unto our Justification, we should say, that is, really judge and profess, that we are δούλοι ἀχρεῖοι, *unprofitable servants*, Luk. 17. 10. As the Apostle speaks, *I know nothing by myself, yet am I not thereby justified*, I Cor. 4. 4. And he that is δούλος ἀχρεῖος, and hath nothing to trust unto but *his service*, will be cast out of the presence of God, Matth. 25. 30. Wherefore on the best of our obedience to confess our selves δούλοι ἀχρεῖοι, is to confess, that after all in our selves, we deserve to be cast out of the presence of God.

In opposition hereunto, the state and prayer of the *Publican*, under the same design of seeking Justification before God, are expressed. And the outward acts of *his Person* are mentioned, as representing, and expressive of the inward frame of his mind. *He stood afar off*; he did not so much as lift up his eyes; he smote upon his breast. All of them represent a person *desponding*, yea, *despairing* in himself. This is the nature, this is the effect of that *conviction of sin*, which we before asserted to be antecedently necessary unto Justification. Displeasancy, sorrow, sense of danger, fear of wrath, all are present with him. In brief he declares himself *guilty before God*, and his mouth stopped, as unto any apology or excuse. And his prayer is a sincere application of his Soul, unto sovereign Grace and Mercy, for a deliverance out of the condition, wherein he was by reason of the guilt of sin. And in the use of the word ἰλάσσομαι, there is respect

respect had unto a *propitiation*. In the whole of his address there is contained. (1.) Self-condemnation and abhorrency. (2.) Dispicency and sorrow for sin. (3.) An universal Renunciation of all Works of his own, as any conditions of his Justification. (4.) An acknowledgment of his sin, guilt, and misery. And this is all that on our part is required unto *Justification before God*, excepting that *Faith* whereby we apply our selves unto him for deliverance.

Some make a weak attempt from hence, to prove that Justification consists wholly in the *remission of sin*, because on the prayer of the *Publican*, for Mercy and Pardon, he is said to be justified; but there is no force in this Argument. For (1.) *The whole nature of Justification* is not here declared, but only what is required on our part thereunto. The respect of it unto the *Mediation of Christ*, was not yet expressly to be brought to light, as was shewed before. (2.) Although the *Publican* makes his address unto God, under a deep sense of the *guilt of sin*, yet he prays not for the *bare pardon of sin*, but for all that sovereign Mercy or Grace, God provided for sinners. (3.) The *term of Justification* must have the same sense, when applied unto the *Pharisee*, as when applied unto the *Publican*: And if the meaning of it, with respect unto the *Publican*, be, That he was pardoned, then hath it the same sense, with respect unto the *Pharisee*, he was not pardoned; but he came on no such errand: He came to be *justified*, not pardoned; nor doth he make the least mention of his sin, or any sense of it. Wherefore although the *pardon of sin* be included in Justification, yet to *justify*, in this place hath respect unto a *Righteousness*, whereon a Man is declared just and righteous, wrapt up on the part of the *Publican* in the sovereign producing cause, *The Mercy of God*.

Some few Testimonies may be added out of the other *Evangelists*, in whom they abound. *As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the Sons of God, even*

to them that believe on his name. Job. I. 12. Faith is expressed by the receiving of Christ. For to receive him, and to believe on his name, are the same. It receives him as *set forth of God to be a propitiation for sin*, as the great Ordinance of God, for the Recovery and Salvation of lost sinners. Wherefore this notion of Faith includes in it, (1.) A supposition of the *proposal and tender of Christ* unto us, for some end and purpose. (2.) That this proposal is made unto us in the *promise* of the Gospel. Hence as we are said to receive Christ, we are said to *receive the promise* also. (3.) The end for which the Lord Christ is so proposed unto us, in the promise of the Gospel; and this is the same with that for which he was so proposed in the first promise, namely, *The recovery and salvation of lost sinners*. (4.) That in the tender of his person, there is a tender made of all the *Fruits of his Mediation*, as containing the way and means of our deliverance from sin, and acceptance with God. (5.) There is nothing required on our part unto an interest in the end proposed, but *receiving of him*, or believing on his name. (6.) Hereby are we intitled unto the *Heavenly inheritance*, we have power to become the Sons of God, wherein our Adoption is asserted, and Justification included. What this receiving of Christ is, and wherein it doth consist, hath been declared before, in the consideration of that Faith whereby we are justified. That which hence we argue is, That there is no more required unto the obtaining of a right and title unto the Heavenly Inheritance but *Faith alone, in the name of Christ, the receiving of Christ, as the Ordinance of God*; for Justification and Salvation. This gives us, I say, our original right thereunto, and therein our acceptance with God, which is our Justification, though more be required unto the actual acquisition and possession of it. It is said indeed, that other Graces and Works are *not excluded*, though Faith alone be expressed. But every thing which is not a

*receiving*

receiving of *Christ*, is excluded. It is, I say, virtually excluded, because it is not of the nature of that which is required. When we speak of that whereby we see, we exclude no other member from being a part of the body; but we exclude all but the eye from the act of seeing. And if Faith be required, as it is a receiving of *Christ*, every Grace and Duty which is not so, is excluded as unto the end of Justification.

Chap. 3. 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. *And as Moses lifted up the Brazen Serpent in the WilderNESS, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up; that whosoever believeth on him, should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the World, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on him, should not perish, but have everlasting life. God sent not his Son into the World to condemn the World, but that the World, through him, might be saved. He that believeth on him, is not condemned; but he that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.*

I shall observe only a few things from these words, which in themselves convey a better light of understanding in this Mystery unto the minds of Believers, than many long discourses of some Learned Men. (1.) It is of the justification of Men, and their right to eternal Life thereon, that our Saviour discourseth. This is plain in *Ver. 18. He that believeth is not condemned, but he that believeth not, is condemned already.* (2.) The means of attaining this condition or state on our part, is believing only, as it is three times positively asserted, without any addition. (3.) The nature of this Faith is declared, (1) By its object, that is, *Christ* himself the Son of God; whosoever believeth on him, which is frequently repeated. (2) The especial consideration, wherein he is the object of Faith unto the Justification of life; and that is as he is the Ordinance of God, given, sent, and proposed from the Love and Grace of

of the Father. *God so loved the World, that he gave; God sent his Son.* (3) The especial act yet included in the type, whereby the design of God, in him, is illustrated. For this was the *looking unto the Brazen Serpent lifted up in the Wilderness*, by them who were stung with Fiery Serpents. Hereunto our *Faith* in Christ unto Justification, doth answer, and includes a trust in him alone for deliverance and relief. This is the way, these are the only causes and means of the Justification of condemned sinners, and are the Substance of all that we plead for.

It will be said that all this proves not *the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us*, which is the thing principally inquired after: But if nothing be required on our part unto Justification, but Faith acted on Christ, as the Ordinance of God for our recovery, and salvation, it is the whole of what we plead for. A Justification by the remission of sins alone without a Righteousness giving acceptance with God, and a right unto the Heavenly Inheritance, is *alien* unto the Scripture, and the common notion of Justification amongst Men. And what this Righteousness must be, upon a supposition, that Faith only, on our part, is required unto a participation of it, is sufficiently declared in the words wherein Christ himself is so often asserted, as the object of our Faith unto that purpose.

Not to add more particular Testimonies, which are multiplied unto the same purpose, in this *Evangelist*, the sum of the Doctrine declared by him, is, *That the Lord Jesus Christ was the Lamb of God which takes away the sins of the World, that is, by the sacrifice of himself, wherein he answered and fulfilled all the typical sacrifices of the Law: That unto this end he sanctified himself, that those, who believe, might be sanctified, or perfected for ever by his own offering of himself: That in the Gospel he is proposed, as lifted up and crucified for us, as bearing all our sins on his Body on the Tree: That by Faith in*

Lll

him,

442 *The nature of Justification, as declared*  
him, we have adoption, justification, freedom from judgment and condemnation, with a right and title unto Eternal Life: That those who believe not, are condemned already, because they believe not on the Son of God; and as he elsewhere expresseth it, make God a liar, in that they believe not his Testimony, namely, That he hath given unto us Eternal Life; and that this life is in his Son. Nor doth he any where make mention of any other means, cause, or condition of Justification on our part, but Faith only, though he aboundeth in Precepts unto Believers for Love, and keeping the commands of Christ. And this Faith is the receiving of Christ, in the sense newly declared. And this is the substance of the Christian Faith in this matter; which oft-times we rather obscure than illustrate, by debating the consideration of any thing in our Justification, but the Grace and Love of God, the Person and Mediation of Christ, with Faith in them.

---

## CHAP. XVIII.

*The nature of Justification as declared in the Epistles of S. Paul, in that unto the Romans especially. Chap. 3.*

THAT the way and manner of our Justification before God, with all the Causes and Means of it are designedly declared by the *Apostle in the Epistle unto the Romans, Chap. 3. 4. 5.* as also vindicated from Objections, so as to render his discourse thereon the proper Seat of this Doctrine, and whence it is principally to be learned, cannot modestly  
be

be denied. The late exceptions of some, That this Doctrine of *Justification by Faith, without Works, is found only in the Writings of S. Paul, and that his Writings are obscure and intricate,* are both false and scandalous to Christian Religion, so as that in this place we shall not afford them the least consideration. He wrote *ὡς ἐκ ἁγίου πνεύματος*, as he was moved by the Holy Ghost. And as all the matter delivered by him was sacred Truth, which immediately requires our Faith and Obedience, so the way and manner wherein he declared it, was such as the Holy Ghost judged most expedient for the edification of the Church. And as he said himself with confidence, That if the Gospel which he Preached, and as it was Preached by him, though accounted by them foolishness, was hid, so as that they could not understand, nor comprehend the Mystery of it, it was hid unto them that are lost; so we may say, That if what he delivereth in particular concerning our *Justification before God,* seems obscure, difficult, or perplexed unto us, it is from our prejudices, corrupt affections, or weakness of understanding at best, not able to comprehend the glory of this Mystery of the Grace of God in Christ, and not from any defect in his way, and manner of the Revelation of it. Rejecting therefore all such *perverse insinuations,* in a due sense of our own weakness, and acknowledgment that at best we know but in part, we shall humbly inquire into the Blessed Revelation of this great Mystery of the Justification of a sinner before God, as by him declared in those Chapters of his glorious Epistle to the *Romans*; and I shall do it with all briefness possible, so as not on this occasion to repeat what hath been already spoken, or to anticipate what may be spoken in place more convenient.

The first thing he doth, is to prove all men to be under sin, and to be guilty before God. This he giveth as the conclusion of his preceding discourse from *Chap. I. 18.* or what he

444 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

had evidently evinced thereby, *Chap. 3. ver. 19, 23.* Here on an inquiry doth arise, how any of them come to be *justified before God.* And whereas Justification is a sentence upon the consideration of a Righteousness, his grand inquiry is what that Righteousness is, on the consideration whereof a Man may be so justified. And concerning this, he affirms expressly that it is not *the Righteousness of the Law, nor of the Works of it*; whereby what he doth intend, hath been in part before declared, and will be further manifested in the proofs of our discourse. Wherefore in general he declares, that the Righteousness whereby we are justified, is the *Righteousness of God*, in opposition unto any Righteousness of our own, *Chap. 1. 17. Chap. 3. 21, 22.* And he describes this *Righteousness of God* by three properties, (1.) That it is *æternis vobis, without the Law, Ver. 21.* separated in all its concerns from the Law; not attainable by it, nor any works of it; which they have no influence into. It is neither our obedience unto the Law, nor attainable thereby. Nor can any expression more separate and exclude the Works of Obedience unto the Law, from any concernment in it, then this doth: Wherefore, what ever is, or can be performed by our selves in obedience unto the Law, is rejected from any interest in this Righteousness of God, or the procurement of it to be made ours. (2.) That yet it *is witnessed unto by the Law. Ver. 21. The Law and the Prophets.*

The Apostle by this distinction of the *Books of the Old Testament*, into the *Law* and the *Prophets*, manifests that by the Law he understands the Books of *Moses*; and in them, *Testimony* is given unto this Righteousness of God, four ways.

(1.) By a *declaration of the causes* of the necessity of it unto our Justification. This is done in the account given of our *Apostasy from God*, of the loss of his Image, and the state of sin that ensued thereon. For hereby an end was put unto  
all

all possibility and hope of acceptance with God, by our own Personal Righteousness. By the *entrance* of sin, our own Righteousness *went out* of the World; so that there must be another Righteousness prepared and approved of God, and called *The Righteousness of God*, in opposition unto our *own*, or all Relation of Love and Favor between God and Man, must cease for ever.

(2.) In the way of recovery from this state, generally declared in the *first Promise* of the Blessed Seed, by whom this Righteousness of God was to be wrought and introduced; for he alone was to make an *end of sin*, and to bring in *Everlasting Righteousness*, אֵלֶיךָ עַל־מִי Dan. 9. 24. That Righteousness of God, that should be the means of the Justification of the Church in all ages, and under all dispensations.

(3.) By stopping up the way unto any other Righteousness through the *Threatnings* of the *Law*, and that *Curse* which every transgression of it, was attended withal. Hereby it was plainly and fully declared, that there must be such a Righteousness provided for our Justification before Men, as would answer and remove that curse.

(4.) In the Prefiguration and Representation of that only way and means, whereby this Righteousness of God was to be wrought. This it did in all its Sacrifices, especially in the great *Anniversary Sacrifice* on the Day of Expiation, wherein all the sins of the Church, were laid on the *Head* of the Sacrifice, and so carried away. (3.) He describes it by the *only way* of our participation of it, the only means on our part of the communication of it unto us. And this is by *Faith* alone. *The Righteousness of God, which is by the Faith of Christ Jesus, unto all, and upon all them that believe; for there is no difference. Ver. 22.* Faith in Christ Jesus is so the *only way and means*, whereby this Righteousness of God comes upon us, or is communicated unto us, that it is so unto

## 446 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

all that have this Faith, and *only* unto them, and that *without difference* on the consideration of any thing else besides. And although Faith taken absolutely, may be used in various senses, yet as thus specified and limited, the *Faith of Christ Jesus*, or as he calls it, *the Faith that is in me.* Acts 26. 18. It can intend nothing but the *reception of him*, and trust in him, as the Ordinance of God for Righteousness and Salvation.

This description of *The Righteousness of God revealed in the Gospel*, which the Apostle asserts as the only means and cause of our Justification before God, with the only way of its participation and communication unto us by the Faith of Christ Jesus, fully confirms the truth we plead for. For if the Righteousness wherewith we must be justified before God be *not our own*, but the Righteousness of God, as these things are directly opposed, Phil. 3. 9. And the only way whereby it *comes upon us*, or we are made partakers of it, is *by the Faith of Jesus Christ*, then our own personal inherent Righteousness or Obedience, hath no interest in our Justification before God; which Argument is *insoluble*, nor is the force of it to be waved by any distinctions whatever, if we keep our hearts unto a due reverence of the Authority of God in his Word.

Having fully proved, That no Men living have any Righteousness of *their own*, whereby they may be justified, but are all *shut up* under the guilt of sin; and having declared, That there is a Righteousness of God now fully revealed in the Gospel, whereby alone we may be so; leaving all Men in themselves unto their own lot, *In as much as all have sinned and come short of the glory of God*, he proceeds to declare the nature of our Justification before God in all the causes of it. Ver. 24, 25, 26. *Being justified freely by his Grace through the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ, whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his Blood, to declare his*  
*Righ-*

*Righteousness for the Remission of sins, that are past, through the forbearance of God. To declare, I say, at this time, his Righteousness, that he might be just, and the Justifier of them that believe in Jesus.*

Here it is, that we may, and ought if any where, to expect the interest of *our personal obedience* under some qualification or other, in our Justification to be declared. For if it should be supposed (which yet it cannot with any pretence of Reason) that in the foregoing discourse, the Apostle had excluded only the *Works of the Law*, as *absolutely perfect*, or as *wrought in our own strength* without the aid of Grace, or as *meritorious*; yet having generally excluded *all Works* from our Justification, *Ver. 20.* Without distinction or limitation, it might well be expected, and ought to have been so; that upon the full Declaration which he gives us of the nature and way of our Justification in all the causes of it, he should have assigned the *place*, and consideration which our *own personal Righteousness* had in our Justification before God; the first or second, or continuation of it, somewhat or other, or at least, made some mention of it, under the qualification of *gracious, sincere, or Evangelical*, that it might not seem to be absolutely excluded. It is plain the Apostle thought of no such thing, nor was at all solicitous about any reflection that might be made on his Doctrine, as though it overthrew the necessity of our *own obedience*. Take in the consideration of the Apostles design, with the circumstances of the context, and the Argument from his *utter silence*, about our *own personal Righteousness* in our Justification before God, is unanswerable. But this is not all; we shall find in our progress, that it is expressly and directly excluded by him.

All unprejudiced persons must needs think that no words could be used, more express and *emphatical*, to secure the whole of our Justification unto the *Free-grace* of God, through

## 448 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

through *the Blood*, or *Mediation of Christ*, wherein it is *Faith* alone that gives us an interest, than these used here by the *Apostle*. And for my part, I shall only say, that I know not how to express my self in this matter, in words and terms more express or significant of the conception of my mind. And if we could all but subscribe the answer here given by the *Apostle*; how, by what means, on what grounds, or by what causes, are we justified before God; namely, that we are *justified freely by his Grace, through the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus, whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his Blood, &c.* There might be an end of this Controversie.

But the principal passages of this Testimony must be distinctly considered, (1.) The *principal efficient cause* is first expressed with a peculiar emphasis; or the *causa* *ἡ ἐργαζομένη* *δικαίνομενοι δωρεάν τῆ ἀυτῆ χάριτι*, being justified freely by his Grace. God is the principal efficient cause of our Justification, and his *Grace* is the only moving cause thereof. I shall not stay upon the exception of those of the *Roman Church*, namely, that by *τῆ χάριτι ἀυτῆ* which their Translation renders *per gratiam Dei*, the internal inherent Grace of God, which they make the formal cause of Justification, is intended. For they have nothing to prove it, but that which overthrows it; namely, that it is added unto *δωρεάν* freely, which were needless, if it signifie the *Free-grace* or *Favor of God*. For both these expressions *gratis per gratiam*, *freely by Grace*, are put together to give the greater *emphasis* unto this assertion, wherein the whole of our Justification is vindicated unto the *Free-grace of God*. So far as they are distinguishable, the one denotes the principle from whence our Justification proceeds, namely *Grace*; and the other, the manner of its operation, it works *freely*. Besides, the *Grace of God* in this subject, doth every where constantly signifie his *goodness, love, and favor*, as hath been undeniably proved by many. See *Rom.* 5. 15. *Eph.* 2. 4, 8, 9. *2 Tim.* 1. 9. *Tit.* 3. 4, 5. Being

Being justified δωρεάν, so the LXX. render the Hebrew particle  $\text{בְּחִנּוּן}$ ; *without price*, without merit, without cause; and sometimes it is used for *without end*, that is, what is done in vain; as δωρεάν is used by the Apostle, Gal. 2. 21. without price or reward, Gen. 29. 15. Exod. 21. 22. 2 Kings 24. 25. without *cause* or *merit* or any means of procurement, 1 Sam. 19. 5. 2 Sam. 24. 24. Psal. 69. 4. Psal. 102. In this sense it is rendered by δωρεάν, Job. 15. 25. The design of the word is to exclude all consideration of any thing in us that should be the *cause* or *condition* of our justification. χάρις; *favour*, absolutely considered may have respect unto somewhat in him towards whom it is shewed; so it is said that Joseph found grace or favour χάρις in the eyes of Potiphar, Gen. 29. 4. but he found it not δωρεάν, *without any consideration* or *cause*; for he saw that the Lord was with him and made all that he did to prosper in his hand, v. 3. But no words can be found out to free our *justification* before God from all respect unto any thing in our selves, but only what is added expressly as the means of its participation on our part, *through faith in his blood*, more emphatical than these here used by the Apostle; δωρεάν τῆ ἀποθεῖ χάρις; *freely by his grace*. And with whom this is not admitted as exclusive of all Works or Obedience of our own, of all conditions, preparations and merit, I shall despair of ever expressing my conceptions about it intelligibly unto them.

Having asserted this *Righteousness of God* as the cause and means of our justification before him, in opposition unto all *Righteousness of our own*; and declared the cause of the communication of it unto us on the part of God, to be *meer free Sovereign grace*, the means on our part, whereby according unto the ordination of God, we do receive, or are really made partakers of that *Righteousness of God* whereon we are justified, is by *faith*; διὰ τῆς πίστεως ἐν ἀποθεῖ ἀδικημάτων; *that is by faith alone*. Nothing else is proposed, nothing else required

unto this end. It is replied, that there is no intimation that is by *faith alone*, or that Faith is asserted to be the means of our Justification exclusively unto other Graces or Works. But there is such an exclusion directly included in the description given of that *faith* whereby we are justified with respect unto its especial object *by faith in his blood*. For Faith respecting the blood of Christ, as that whereby *propitiation* was made for Sin, in which respect alone, the Apostle affirms that we are *justified through faith*, admits of no association with any other Graces or Duties. Neither is it any part of their nature *to fix on the blood of Christ*, for Justification before God: wherefore they are all here *directly excluded*. And those who think otherwise, may try how they can introduce them into this context without an evident corrupting of it, and perverting of its sense. Neither will the other evasion yield our Adversaries the least relief: namely, that by *faith* not the *single grace* of Faith is intended, but the *whole obedience* required in the new Covenant, Faith and Works together. For as *all works* whatever, as *our works*, are excluded in the declaration of the causes of our Justification on the part of God *διωκεν τῆν ἀνομίαν καὶ ἡμᾶς δωρεάν* freely by his grace, by virtue of that great Rule, *Rom. II. 6. If it be of grace*, then no more of works, otherwise Grace is no more Grace; so the determination of the *object of faith* in its act or duty whereon we are justified, namely the *blood of Christ* is absolutely exclusive of all Works from an interest in that duty. For whatever looks unto the *blood of Christ*, for Justification, is *faith* and nothing else. And as for the calling of it a *single act* or duty, I refer the Reader unto our preceding discourse about the nature of justifying Faith.

Three things the Apostle inferreth from the declaration he had made of the Nature and Causes of our Justification before God, all of them further illustrating the meaning and sense of his words.

1. That *Boasting is excluded*; πᾶ ἔν ἡ καύχῃσι; ἐξεκλείδῃ, ver. 27. Apparent it is from hence, and from what he affirms concerning *Abraham*, Chap. 4. v. 2. that a great part, at least, of the controversy he had about *Justification*, was whether it did admit of any καύχῃσι or καύχημα in those that were justified. And it is known that the *Jews* placed all their *Hopes* in those things whereof they thought they could *boast*, namely their *Priviledges* and their *Righteousness*. But from the declaration made of the *Nature* and *Causes* of *Justification*, the *Apostle* infers that *all Boasting* whatever is utterly shut out of doors; ἐξεκλείδῃ. *Boasting*, in our language is the name of a *vice*; and is never used in a good sense. But καύχῃσι and καύχημα, the words used by the *Apostle*, are ἐν τῶν μίσων of an indifferent signification, and as they are applied may denote a *Vertue* as well as a *Vice*. So they do, *Heb.* 3. 6.

But alwayes, and in all places, they respect something that is *peculiar* in or unto them, unto whom they are ascribed. Wherever any thing is ascribed unto one and not unto another, with respect unto any good end, there is *fundamentum καυχήσεως*, a *foundation for boasting*. All this saith the *Apostle* in the matter of our *Justification* is *utterly excluded*. But wherever respect is had unto any *condition* or *qualification* in one more than another, especially if it be of *works*, it giveth a ground of *boasting*, as he affirms, *Chap.* 4. 2. And it appears from comparing that verse with this, that wherever there is any influence of our own works into our *Justification*, there is a *ground of boasting*; but in *Evangelical Justification*, no such *boasting* in any kind can be admitted: Wherefore there is no place for *Works* in our *Justification* before *God*; for if there were, it is impossible but that a καύχημα in one kind or other before *God*, or man must be admitted.

2. He infers a general conclusion, that a man is justified by *Faith without the Works of the Law*, v. 28. What is meant by the *Law*, and what by the *Works of the Law* in this discourse

of the Apostle about our Justification, hath been before declared. And if we are justified freely through Faith in the Blood of Christ, that Faith, which hath the Propitiation of Christ for its especial Object, or as it hath so, can take no other Grace nor Duty into Partnership with it self therein: and being so justified as that all such *boasting* is excluded as necessarily exults from any differencing Graces or Works in our selves, wherein all the Works of the Law are excluded, it is certain that it is by Faith alone in Christ that we are justified. All Works are not only excluded, but the way unto their return is so shut up by the Method of the Apostles Discourse, that all the reinforcements which the wit of man can give unto them, will never introduce them into our Justification before God.

3. He asserts from hence, that we *do not make void the Law through grace*, but establish it, *v. 31.* which how it is done, and how alone it can be done, hath been before declared.

This is the Substance of the Resolution the Apostle gives unto that great Enquiry, how a guilty convinced Sinner may come to be justified in the sight of God. The sovereign Grace of God, the Mediation of Christ, and Faith in the Blood of Christ, are all that he requireth thereunto. And whatever notions men may have about Justification in other respects, it will not be safe to venture on any *other Resolution* of this case and enquiry; nor are we wiser than the Holy Ghost.

*Rom. Chap. 4.*

In the beginning of the *fourth Chapter* he confirms what he had before doctrinally declared, by a signal instance; and this was of the *Justification of Abraham*, who being the Father of the Faithful, his Justification is proposed as the pattern of ours, as he expressly declares *vers. 22, 23, 24.*  
And

And some few things I shall observe on this instance in our passage unto the fifth Verse; where I shall fix our Discourse.

1. He denies that *Abraham* was justified by Works, *vers.* 2. And (1.) These Works were not those of the *Jewish Law*, which alone some pretend to be excluded from our Justification in this place. For they were the Works he performed *some hundreds of years* before the giving of the Law at *Sinai*: wherefore they are the Works of his *Moral Obedience* unto God that are intended. — (2.) Those Works must be understood which *Abraham* had then, when he is said to be justified in the Testimony produced unto that purpose; But the Works that *Abraham* then had, were Works of Righteousness, performed in Faith and Love to God, Works of *New Obedience* under the Conduct and aids of the Spirit of God; Works required in the Covenant of Grace. These are the Works excluded from the Justification of *Abraham*. And these things are plain, express and evident, not to be eluded by any Distinctions or Evasions. All *Abraham's Evangelical Works* are expressly excluded from his Justification before God.

2. He proves by the Testimony of Scripture, declaring the Nature and Grounds of the Justification of *Abraham*, that he was justified no other way, but that which he had before declared, namely by *Grace* through Faith in Christ Jesus, *vers.* 3. *Abraham believed God* (in the Promise of Christ and his Mediation) *and it was counted unto him for righteousness*, *vers.* 3. He was justified by Faith in the way before described (for other Justification by Faith there is none) in opposition unto all his *own Works*, and Personal Righteousness thereby.

3. From the same Testimony he declares how he came to be *Partaker* of that Righteousness whereon he was justified before God, which was by *imputation*; it was *counted* or imputed

454 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

puted unto him for Righteousness. The Nature of Imputation hath been before declared.

4. The especial Nature of this Imputation, namely that it is of *Grace* without respect unto Works, he asserts and proves, *vers. 4.* from what is contrary thereunto, *Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckon'd of Grace, but of Debt.* Where Works are of any consideration, there is no room for that *kind of Imputation* whereby *Abraham* was justified, for it was a *gracious Imputation*, and that is not of what is our own antecedently thereunto, but what is made our own by that Imputation. For what is our own cannot be imputed unto us in a way of *Grace*, but only *reckon'd* ours in a way of *Debt*. That which is our own with all the effects of it, is due unto us. And therefore they who plead that *Faith it self* is imputed unto us, to give some countenance unto an Imputation of *Grace*, do say it is imputed not *for what it is*, for then it would be reckoned of *Debt*, but for *what it is not*. So *Socinus*, *Cum fides imputatur nobis pro justitia, ideo imputatur quia nec ipsa fides justitia est, nec vere in se eam continet, De Servat.* Part. 4. cap. 2. which kind of Imputation being indeed only a *false Imagination*, we have before disproved. But all works are inconsistent with that Imputation whereby *Abraham* was justified. It is otherwise with him that worketh, so as thereon to be justified, then it was with him. Yea, say some, *all Works* that are *meritorious*, that are performed with an *opinion of Merit*, that make the Reward to be of debt, are excluded, but other Works are not. This distinction is not learned from the Apostle. For according unto him, if this be merit and meritorious, that the Reward be *reckon'd of Debt*, then all Works in Justification are so. For without distinction or limitation he affirms, that *unto him that worketh, the reward is not reckon'd of Grace, but of Debt.* He doth not exclude *some sort* of Works, or Works in some sense, because they would make the reward of *Debt*, but affirms that *all* would

would do so unto the exclusion of gracious Imputation. For if the foundation of Imputation *be in our selves*, Imputation by Grace is excluded. In the *fifth* Verse the Sum of the Apostles Doctrine, which he had contended for, and what he had proved, is expressed. *But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his Faith is counted for Righteousness.* It is granted on all hands, that the close of the Verse *his Faith is counted for Righteousness*, doth express the Justification of the person intended. He is *justified*, and the way of it is, *his Faith is counted or imputed.* Wherefore the foregoing words declare the Subject of Justification, and its qualification, or the description of the Person to be justified with all that is required on his part thereunto.

And first, it is said of him, that he is, *ὁ μὴ ἐργαζόμενος* ; *who worketh not.* It is not required unto his Justification that he should not work, that he should not perform any Duties of Obedience unto God in any kind, which is *working.* For every person in the world is always obliged unto all Duties of Obedience, according to the light and knowledg of the Will of God, the means whereof is afforded unto him. But the expression is to be limited by the *subject matter* treated of. He *who worketh not*, with respect unto *Justification*; though not the design of the Person, but the Nature of the thing is intended. To say, *he who worketh not is justified* through believing, is to say that his Works whatever they be, have no influence into his Justification, nor hath God in justifying of him any respect unto them. Wherefore he alone who *worketh not*, is the subject of Justification, the person to be justified; that is, God considereth *no mans Works*, no mans Duties of Obedience in his Justification; seeing we are justified  *δωρεὰν τῆ ἀποθε χάριτι*, *freely by his Grace.* And when God affirmeth expressly, that he justifieth him *who worketh not*, and that *freely by his Grace*, I cannot understand what

what place our Works or Duties of Obedience, can have in our Justification. For why should we trouble our selves to invent of what consideration they may be in our Justification before God, when he himself affirms, that they are of *none at all*. Neither are the words capable of any evading interpretation. *He that worketh not, is he that worketh not*, let men say what they please, and distinguish as long as they will. And it is a boldness not to be justified, for any to rise up in opposition unto such express Divine Testimonies, however they may be harnessed with *Philosophical Notions* and arguings, which are but as Thorns and Briars, which the Word of God will pass through and consume.

But the Apostle further adds in the description of the *subject of Justification* that God justifieth the *ungodly*. This is that expression which hath stirred up so much *wrath* amongst many, and on the account whereof, some seem to be much displeas'd with the *Apostle* himself. If any other person dare but say that *God justifieth the ungodly*, he is presently reflected on, as one that by his Doctrine would overthrow the necessity of Godliness, Holiness, Obedience, or Good Works. For what need can there be of any of them, if God justifieth the *ungodly*? Howbeit this is a *Periphrasis* of God that he is *ὁ δικαιῶν τὸν ἀσεβῆ* *he that justifieth the ungodly*; this is his Prerogative and Property, as such will he be believed in and worshipp'd, which adds weight and *Emphasis* unto the Expression. And we must not foregoe this Testimony of the Holy Ghost, let men be as angry as they please.

But the difference is about the *meaning* of the words. If so, it may be allowed without mutual offence, though we should mistake their proper sense. Only it must be granted, that *God justifieth the ungodly*. That is, say some, those who formerly were *ungodly*, not those who *continue ungodly* when they are justified. And this is most true. All that are justified were

were before *ungodly*; and all that are justified are at the *same instant* made *Godly*. But the question is, whether they are *Godly* or *Ungodly* antecedently in any moment of time unto their Justification; if they are considered as *Godly*, and are so indeed, then the Apostles words are not true, *that God justifieth the ungodly*; for the contradictory Proposition is true, *God justifieth none but the Godly*. For these Propositions, *God justifieth the ungodly*, and *God justifieth none but the Godly*, are contradictory. For here are expressly *κατὰ ἔργους* & *ἀπὸ ἔργου ἀντιλαμβάνεται*, which is *ἀπὸ ἔργου*.

Wherefore, although in and with the Justification of a Sinner, he is made *Godly*, for he is endowed with that Faith which *purifieth the heart*, and is a vital Principle of all Obedience, and the Conscience is purged from Dead Works by the Blood of Christ; yet *antecedently* unto his Justification he *is ungodly* and considered as ungodly, as one that *worketh not*, as one whose Duties and Obedience contribute nothing unto his Justification. As he *worketh not*, all works are excluded from being the *causa per quam*; and as he is *ungodly*, from being the *causa sine qua non* of his Justification.

The *Qualification of the Subject*, or the means on the part of the person to be justified, and whereby he becomes actually so to be, is *Faith* or believing. *But believeth on him who justifieth the ungodly*. That is, it is *Faith alone*. For it is the Faith of him *who worketh not*; and not only so, but its especial object, *God as justifying the ungodly*, is exclusive of the concomitancy of any works whatever.

This is *Faith alone*, or it is impossible to express *Faith alone*, without the literal use of that word *alone*. But Faith being asserted, in opposition unto all *works of ours*, unto him *that worketh not*, and its especial nature declared in its especial object, *God as justifying the ungodly*, that is, *freely by his Grace*, through the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus, no place is left for any Works to make the least approach to-

wards our Justification before God, under the covert of any *distinction* whatever. And the nature of Justifying Faith is here also determined. It is not a *meer assent* unto Divine Revelations; it is not such a *firm assent* unto them, as should cause us to yield Obedience unto all the Precepts of the Scripture, though these things are included in it; but it is a *believing on*, and *trusting unto him that justifieth the ungodly*, through the Mediation of Christ.

Concerning this Person, the Apostle affirmeth that his *Faith is counted for Righteousness*. That is, he is justified in the way and manner before declared. But there is a difference about the Sence of these words. Some say, the meaning of them is, that *Faith* as an Act, a Grace, a Duty or Work of ours, is so imputed. Others say, that it is *Faith* as it *apprehends Christ* and his Righteousness, which is properly imputed unto us, that is intended. So Faith they say justifieth, or is counted for Righteousness *relatively*, not *properly*, with respect unto its object; and so acknowledg a *Trope* in the words. And this is fiercely opposed, as though they denied the express words of the Scripture, when yet they do but *interpret* this expression once only used, by many others, wherein the same thing is declared. But those who are for the first sense, do all affirm that *Faith* here is to be taken as *including Obedience or Works*, either as the *form* and essence of it, or as such *necessary* concomitants as have the same influence with it into our Justification, or are in the same manner the condition of it. But as herein they admit also of a *Trope* in the words which they so fiercely blame in others, so they give this sense of the whole, *unto him that worketh not, but believeth in him that justifieth the ungodly, his Faith and Works are counted to him for Righteousness*; which is not only to deny what the Apostle affirms, but to assign unto him a *plain contradiction*.

And, I do a little marvel that any unprejudiced person, should expound this Solitary Expression in such a sense, as is contradictory unto the *design* of the Apostle, the *words* of the same Period, and the whole ensuing Context. For that which the Apostle proposeth unto confirmation, which contains his whole design, is, *that we are justified by the Righteousness which is of God by Faith in the blood of Christ.* That this cannot be Faith it self, shall immediately be made evident; And in the words of the Text, *all Works* are excluded, if any words be sufficient to exclude them. But Faith absolutely as a *single Grace*, Act and Duty of ours, much more as it includeth Obedience in it, is a Work, and in the later sense it is *all Works*. And in the ensuing Context, he proves that *Abraham* was not justified by *Works*. But not to be justified by Works, and to be justified by some Works, as Faith it self is a Work; and if as such it be imputed unto us for Righteousness, we are justified by it as such; are contradictory. Wherefore I shall oppose some few Arguments unto this *feigned sense* of the Apostles words.

1. To believe absolutely, as Faith is an Act and Duty of ours, and Works, are not opposed; for Faith is a Work—an especial kind of Working. But *Faith* as we are justified by it, and *Works*, or *to Work*, are opposed. To him *that worketh not, but believeth.* So *Gal. 2. 16. Eph. 2. 8.*

2. It is the *Righteousness* of God that is imputed unto us. For *we are made the Righteousness of God in Christ,* 2 *Cor. 5. 21. The Righteousness of God upon them that believe,* *Rom. 3. 21, 22.* But Faith absolutely considered, is not *the Righteousness of God*, God imputeth unto us Righteousness without Works, *Rom. 4. 16.* But there is no intimation of a double Imputation of two sorts of Righteousnesses, of the Righteousness of God, and that which is not so. Now Faith absolutely considered, is not the Righteousness of God. For,

1. That whereunto the *Righteousness of God is revealed*, whereby we believe and receive it, is not its self the Righteousness of God. For nothing can be the cause or means of of it self : But the Righteousness of God is *revealed unto Faith*, Rom. 1. 16. And by it is *it received*, Rom. 3. 22. Chap. 5. 11.

2. Faith is not the Righteousness of God which is by Faith : But the Righteousness of God which is imputed unto us is, *the Righteousness of God which is by Faith*, Rom. 3. 22. Phil. 3. 9.

3. That whereby the Righteousness of God is to be *sought, obtained*, and submitted unto, is not that Righteousness it self. But such is Faith, Rom. 9. 30, 31. Chap. 10. 30.

4. The Righteousness which is imputed unto us, is not our *own antecedently* unto that Imputation. That I may be found in him, *not having my own Righteousness*, Phil. 3. 9. But Faith is a mans own. *Shew me thy Faith, I will shew thee my Faith*, Jam. 2. 18.

5. God *imputeth Righteousness unto us*, Rom. 4. 6. And that Righteousness which God imputeth unto us, is the Righteousness whereby we are justified, for it is imputed unto us that we may be justified. But we are justified by the Obedience and Blood of Christ. *By the Obedience of one we are made Righteous*, Rom. 5. 19. *Much more now being justified by his Blood*, v. 9. He hath put away Sin by the Sacrifice of himself, Heb. 9. 26. *Isai. 53. 11. By his knowledg shall my righteous Servant justifie many, for he shall bear their Iniquities.* But Faith is neither the Obedience, nor the Blood of Christ.

6. Faith, as we said before, is *our own*. And that which is *our own* may be imputed unto us. But the discourse of the Apostle is about that which is *not our own* antecedently unto Imputation, but is made ours thereby, as we have proved ; for it is of *Grace*. And the Imputation of what is really our  
own

own unto us antecedently unto that Imputation, is not of Grace in the sense of the Apostle. For what is so imputed, is imputed for what it is, and nothing else. For that Imputation is but the Judgment of God concerning the thing imputed, with respect unto them whose it is. So the Fact of *Phineas* was imputed unto him for Righteousness. God judged it, and declared it to be a Righteous rewardable act. Wherefore if our *Faith* and *Obedience* be imputed unto us, that Imputation is only the Judgment of God that we are Believers and Obedient. *The Righteousness of the Righteous*, saith the Prophet, *shall be upon him and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him*, Ezek. 18. 20. As the wickedness of the wicked is upon him, or is imputed unto him, so the Righteousness of the Righteous is upon him, or is imputed unto him. And the wickedness of the wicked is on him, when God judgeth him wicked as his Works are. So is the Righteousness of a man upon him, or imputed unto him, when God judgeth of his Righteousness as it is. Wherefore if *Faith* absolutely considered, be imputed unto us as it contains in it self, or as it is accompanied with Works of Obedience: then it is imputed unto us, either for a perfect Righteousness which it is not, or for an imperfect Righteousness which it is; or the Imputation of it, is the accounting of that to be a perfect Righteousness, which is but imperfect; but none of these can be affirmed.

1. It is not imputed unto us for a perfect Righteousness, the Righteousness required by the Law, for so it is not. *Episcopus* confesseth in his disputation, *Disput. 45. §. 7, 8.* that *the Righteousness which is imputed unto us* must be *absolutissima & perfectissima*, most absolute and most perfect. And thence he thus defineth the Imputation of Righteousness unto us, namely that it is, *gratiosa Divinae mentis aestimatio, qua credentem in filium suum, eo loco reputat ac si perfecte justus esset ac legi & voluntati ejus per omnia semper paruisset.*

And

And no man will pretend, that Faith is such a most *absolute* and *most perfect righteousness*, as that by it the Righteousness of the Law should be fulfilled in us, as it is by that Righteousness which is imputed unto us.

2. It is not imputed unto us for *what it is, an imperfect Righteousness*. For, (1.) This would be of no advantage unto us. For we cannot be justified before God by an *imperfect Righteousness*, as is evident in the Prayer of the Psalmist, *Psal. 143. 2. Enter not into judgment with thy servant, for in thy sight no man living*, (no Servant of thine who hath the most perfect, or highest measure of imperfect Righteousness) *shall be justified*. (2.) The Imputation of any thing unto us, that was ours *antecedently* unto that Imputation, for what it is, and no more, is contrary unto the *Imputation* described by the Apostle, as hath been proved.

3. This Imputation pleaded for, cannot be a judging of that to be a *perfect Righteousness* which is imperfect. For the Judgment of God is according to Truth. But without judging it to be such, it cannot be accepted as such. To accept of any thing, but only for what *we* judg it to be, is to be deceived.

Lastly, if Faith, as a *Work* be imputed unto us, then it must be as a Work wrought in Faith. For no *other Work* is accepted with God. Then must that Faith also wherein it is *wrought* be imputed unto us; for that also is *Faith* and a good *Work*. That therefore must have *another Faith* from whence it must proceed. And so *in infinitum*.

Many other things there are in the ensuing Explication of the Justification of *Abraham*, the nature of his Faith and his Righteousness before God, with the application of them unto all that do believe, which may be justly pleaded unto the same purpose with those passages of the Context which we have insisted on. But if every Testimony should be pleaded which the Holy Ghost hath given unto this Truth, there  
would

would be no end of writing. One thing more I shall observe and put an end unto our discourse on this Chapter.

Verf. 6, 7, 8. The Apostle pursues his Argument to prove the *freedom of our Justification by Faith*, without respect unto Works, through the Imputation of Righteousness in the instance of pardon of Sin, which essentially belongeth thereunto. And this he doth by the Testimony of the *Psalmist*, who placeth the blessedness of a man in the Remission of Sins. His design is not thereby to declare the *full nature of Justification*, which he had done before, but only to prove the *freedom of it from any respect unto Works* in the instance of that essential part of it. Even as David also describeth the *blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth Righteousness without Works* (which was the only thing he designed to prove by this Testimony) saying, *Blessed are they whose Iniquities are forgiven*. He describes their *blessedness* by it, not that their *whole blessedness* doth consist therein; but this concurs unto it wherein no respect can possibly be had unto any Works whatever. And he may justly from hence describe the blessedness of a man, in that the *Imputation of Righteousness*, and the *Non-Imputation of Sin* (both which the Apostle mentioneth distinctly) wherein his *whole blessedness* as unto Justification doth consist, are inseparable. And because *Remission of Sin* is the first part of Justification, and the principal part of it, and hath the *Imputation of Righteousness* always accompanying it, the *blessedness* of a man may be well described thereby. Yea, whereas all Spiritual Blessings go together in Christ, *Eph. 1. 3*. A mans *blessedness* may be described by any of them. But yet the *Imputation of Righteousness*, and the *Remission of Sin* are not the same, no more than *Righteousness imputed*, and *Sin remitted* are the same. Nor doth the Apostle propose them as the same, but mentioneth them distinctly, both being equally necessa-

464 *The nature of Justification, as declared*  
cessary unto our compleat Justification, as hath been  
proved.

Chap. 5. Vers. 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.

*Wherefore as by one man Sin entred into the world and death by Sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned. For until the Law Sin was in the world: But Sin is not imputed when there is no Law. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come: But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by Grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: For the Judgment was by one to condemnation; but the free gift is of many offences unto Justification. For if by one mans offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of Grace, and of the gift of Righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ. Therefore as by the offence of one, Judgment came upon all men to condemnation: Even so by the Righteousness of one, the free gift came upon all men unto Justification of life. For as by one mans disobedience many were made Sinners: So by the obedience of one, shall many be made Righteous. Moreover the Law entred that the offence might abound: But where Sin abounded, Grace did much more abound: That as Sin hath reigned unto death, even so might Grace reign through Righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.*

The Apostle Chap. 3. 27. affirms, That in this matter of Justification, all *καύχησις* or *boasting*, is excluded. But here in the Verse foregoing, he grants a *boasting* or a *καύχησις*. οὐ μόνον

ὅ, ἀλλὰ κευχόμενοι ἐν τῷ Θεῷ. And not only so, but we also glory in God; he excludes *boasting* in our selves, because there is nothing in us to procure or promote our own Justification. He allows it us, *in God*, because of the eminency and excellency of the way and means of our Justification, which in his Grace he hath provided. And the κευχημα or *boasting* in God here allowed us, hath a peculiar respect unto what the Apostle had in prospect further to discourse of. ἔ μόνον ὅ, and not only so, includes what he had principally treated of before, concerning our Justification so far, as it consists in the *pardon of sin*. For although he doth suppose, yea, and mention the *imputation of Righteousness* also unto us; yet principally he declares our Justification by the *pardon of sin*, and our freedom from condemnation, whereby all *boasting* in our selves, is excluded. But here he designs a further progress, as unto that whereon our *glorying in God*, on a right and title freely given us unto eternal life, doth depend. And this is the *Imputation of the Righteousness and Obedience of Christ* unto the Justification of life, or the reign of Grace, through *Righteousness*, unto eternal Life.

Great complaints have been made by some concerning the obscurity of the discourse of the Apostle in this place, by reason of sundry *Ellipses, Antapodota, Hyperbata*, and other Figures of Speech, which either are, or are feigned to be therein. Howbeit I cannot but think, that if Men acquainted with the common principles of *Christian Religion*, and sensible in themselves of the nature and guilt of our original apostasie from God, would without prejudice read τὴν τῷ πειοχῶν τῆς γεφῆς, *this place of the Scripture*, they will grant that the design of the Apostle is to prove; that as the sin of *Adam* was imputed unto all Men unto condemnation, so the *Righteousness* and Obedience of Christ is imputed unto all that believe unto the Justification of life. The sum of it is given by *Theodoret, Dial. 3. Vide, quomodo quæ Christi sunt*

466 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

*cum iis quæ sunt Adami conferantur, cum morbo medicina, cum vulnere emplastrum, cum Peccato justitia, cum execratione benedictio, cum condemnatione remissio, cum transgressione obedientia, cum morte vita, cum inferis regnum, Christus cum Adam, homo cum homine.*

The differences that are among Interpreters about the Exposition of these words, relate unto the use of some Particles, Prepositions, and the dependance of one passage upon another; on none of which the confirmation of the truth pleaded for doth depend. But the plain design of the Apostle, and his express Propositions are such, as if Men could but acquiesce in them, might put an end unto this controversy.

*Socinus* acknowledgeth that this place of Scripture doth give, as he speaks *the greatest occasion* unto our opinion in this matter: For he cannot deny, but, at least, a great appearance of what we believe, is represented in the words of the Apostle. He doth therefore use his utmost endeavor to wrest and deprave them: And yet, although most of his Artifices are since traduced into the Annotations of others upon the place, he himself produceth nothing material, but what is taken out of *Origen*, and the Comment of *Pelagius* on this Epistle, which is extant in the Works of *Jerome*, and was urged before him by *Erasmus*. The substance of what he pleads for is, That the *actual transgression of Adam* is not imputed unto his posterity, nor a depraved nature from thence communicated unto them. Only whereas he had incurred the *penalty of death*, all that derive their nature from him in that condition, are rendred *subject unto death* also. And as for that corruption of nature which is in us, or a proneness unto sin, it is not derived from *Adam*, but is an habit contracted by many *continued acts* of our own. So also on the other hand, that the *Obedience or Righteousness of Christ*, is not imputed unto us. Only when we make our selves.

selfes to become his Children by our obedience unto him; he having *obtained eternal life* for himself by his obedience unto God, we are made partakers of the *benefits thereof*. This is the substance of his long Disputation on this subject, *De Servator. lib. 4. cap. 6.* But this is not to expound the words of the Apostle, but expressly to contradict them, as we shall see in the ensuing consideration of them.

I intend not an Exposition of the whole discourse of the Apostle, but only of those *passages* in it, which evidently declare the way and manner of our Justification before God.

A *comparison* is here proposed and pursued between the First *Adam*, by whom sin was brought into the World; and the Second *Adam*, by whom it is taken away. And a comparison it is *ἐκ τῶ ἐναντίας*, of *things contrary*, wherein there is a similitude in some things, and a dissimilitude in others, both sorts illustrating the truth declared in it. The general Proposition of it is contained in *Ver. 12.* *As by one Man sin entered into the World, and death by sin; and so death passed on all Men, for that all have sinned.* The entrance of sin and punishment into the World, was by *one Man*; and that by *one sin* as he afterward declares. Yet were they not confined unto the person of that one Man, but belonged equally unto all. This the Apostle expresseth inverting the order of the Effect and Cause. In the entrance of it, he first mentions the cause or sin, and then the effect or punishment. *By one Man sin entered into the World, and Death by sin:* But in the Application of it unto all Men, he expresseth first the effect, and then the cause; *Death passed on all Men, for that all had sinned.* Death on the first entrance of sin, passed on all; that is, all Men became liable and obnoxious unto it, as the punishment due to sin. All Men that ever were, are, or shall be, were not then existent in their own persons. But yet were they all of them, *then*, upon the first entrance of

sin, made subject to death, or liable unto punishment. They were so by vertue of *Divine Constitution* upon their *federal existence* in the one Man that sinned. And *actually* they became obnoxious in their own persons unto the sentence of it, upon their first *natural existence*, being born children of wrath.

It is hence manifest what *sin* it is that the Apostle intends, namely, *The actual sin of Adam*; the *one sin* of that *one* common person whilest he was so. For although the corruption and depravation of our nature, doth necessarily insue thereon, in every one that is brought forth actually in the World by Natural Generation; yet is it the guilt of *Adams* actual sin alone, that rendred them all obnoxious unto death upon the *First entrance of sin into the World*. So death entred by sin, the guilt of it, obnoxiousness unto it, and that with respect unto all Men universally.

*Death* here compriseth the whole punishment due unto sin, be it what it will, concerning which we need not here to dispute. *The wages of sin is death*, Rom. 6.23. and nothing else. Whatever sin deserves in the Justice of God, whatever punishment God at any time appointed or threatned unto it, it is comprised in death: *In the day thou eatest thereof, thou shalt die the death*. This therefore the Apostle lays down as the foundation of his discourse, and of the comparison which he intends; namely, that in and by the *actual sin of Adam*, all Men are made liable unto death, or unto the whole punishment due unto sin. That is, *the guilt of that sin is imputed* unto them. For nothing is intended by the *imputation of sin* unto any, but the rendring them *justly obnoxious* unto the punishment due unto that sin. As the *not imputing* of sin, is the freeing of Men from being subject or liable unto punishment. And this sufficiently evidenceth the vanity of the *Pelagian Gloss* that Death passed upon all, meerly by vertue of *natural propagation* from him who had deserved

it, without any imputation of the guilt of sin unto them; which is a contradiction unto the plain words of the Apostle. For it is the *guilt of sin*, and not natural propagation that he affirms to be the cause of Death.

Having mentioned sin and death, the one as the only cause of the other, the guilt of sin of the punishment of death, sin deserving nothing but death, and death being due unto nothing but sin, he declares how all Men universally became liable unto this punishment, or guilty of death. ἐφ' ᾧ πάντες ἡμᾶστων, *in quo omnes peccaverunt*; *in whom all have sinned*: For it relates unto the *one Man* that sinned, in whom all sinned; which is evident from the effect thereof, in as much as *in him all died*, 1 Cor. 15. 22. Or as it is<sup>d</sup> here, on his sin *Death passed on all Men*. And this is the evident sense of the words, ἐνὶ being put for ἐν, which is not unusual in the Scripture. See *Matth. 15. 5. Rom. 4. 18. Chap. 5. 2. Phil. 1. 3. Heb. 9. 17.* And it is so often used by the best Writers in the Greek Tongue: So *Hesiod* μέτερον δ' ἐνὶ πάντων ἀείσειν, *modus in omnibus rebus optimus*. So ἐφ' ὑμῶν ἔστιν, *in vobis situm est*. τὸτο ἐφ' ἐμοὶ κείται, *hoc in me situm est*. And this reading of the words is contended for by *Austine* against the *Pelagians* rejecting their *eo quod* or *propterea*. But I shall not contend about the reading of the words. It is the artifice of our adversaries to persuade Men, that the force of our Argument to prove from hence the *imputation of the sin of Adam* unto his posterity, doth depend solely upon this interpretation of these words, ἐφ' ᾧ, by, *in whom*. We shall therefore grant them their desire, that they are better rendred by *eo quod, propterea, or quatenus*; in as much, *because*. Only we must say, that here is a reason given, *Why Death passed on all Men, in as much as all have sinned*, that is, in that sin whereby death entered into the World.

It is true! Death by vertue of the original constitution of the Law, is due unto every sin, when ever it is committed.

But.

470 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

But the present inquiry is, how *Death passed at once on all Men*, how they came liable and obnoxious unto it upon its first entrance by the *actual sin of Adam*; which cannot be by their own actual sin. Yea the Apostle in the next Verses affirms, *That death passed on them also*, who never sinned *actually*, or as *Adam* did, whose sin was *actual*. And if the *actual sins* of Men in imitation of *Adams* sin were intended, then should Men be made liable to Death, before they had sinned. For Death upon its *first entrance* into the World, *passed on all Men*, before any one Man had *actually sinned*, but *Adam* only. But that Men should be liable unto Death, which is nothing but the punishment of sin, when they have not sinned, is an open contradiction. For although God by his sovereign Power might inflict *Death* on an innocent Creature, yet that an innocent Creature should be *guilty of death* is impossible. For to be guilty of death, is to have sinned. Wherefore this expression, *In as much as all have sinned*, expressing the desert and guilt of death, *then* when sin and death first entred into the World, no sin can be intended in it, but the sin of *Adam*, and our interest therein; *Eramus enim omnes ille unus homo*. And this can be no otherwise, but by the *imputation* of the guilt of that sin unto us. For the act of *Adam* not being ours inherently and subjectively, we cannot be concerned in its *Effect*, but by the imputation of its guilt. For the communication of that unto us which is not inherent in us, is, that which we intend by imputation.

This is the *πρότυπος* of the intended collation, which I have insisted the longer on, because the Apostle lays in it the foundation of all that he afterwards infers, and asserts in in the whole comparison. And here some say there is an *ἀνατροπὸς αὐτοῦ* in his discourse, that is, he layeth down the Proposition on the part of *Adam*, but doth not shew what answereth so it on the contrary in Christ. And *Origen* gives the reason

reason of the silence of the Apostle herein; namely, *Left what is to be said therein, should be abused by any unto sloth and negligence.* For whereas he says *ὡσπερ*, (as, which is a note of similitude) By one Man sin entred into the World, and Death by sin; so the *ἀνάσσει* or reddition should be, So by one, Righteousness entred into the World, and Life by Righteousness.

This he acknowledgeth to be the genuine filling up of the comparison, but was not expressed by the Apostle, *Left Men should abuse it unto negligence or security*, supposing that to be done already, which should be done afterwards. But as this plainly contradicts and everts most of what he further asserts in the Exposition of the place; so the Apostle concealed not any Truth upon such considerations. And as he plainly expresseth that which is here intimated, *Ver. 19.* So he shews how foolish and wicked any such imaginations are, as suppose that any countenance is given hereby unto any, to indulge themselves in their sins.

Some grant, therefore, that the Apostle doth conceal the Expression of what is ascribed unto Christ, in opposition unto what he had affirmed of *Adam* and his sin, unto *Ver. 19.* But the truth is, it is sufficiently included in the close of *Ver. 14.* where he affirms of *Adam*, that in those things whereof he treats, *He was the Figure of him that was to come.* For the way and manner whereby he introduced Righteousness and Life, and communicated them unto Men, answered the way and manner whereby *Adam* introduced sin and death which passed on all the World. *Adam* being the *Figure* of Christ, look how it was with him, with respect unto his *Natural Posterity* as unto sin and death; so it is with the Lord Christ, the Second *Adam*, and his *Spiritual Posterity*, with respect unto Righteousness and Life. Hence we argue,

## 472 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

*If the actual sin of Adam was so imputed unto all his posterity, as to be accounted their own sin unto condemnation, then is the actual obedience of Christ, the second Adam imputed unto all his spiritual seed, that is, unto all Believers unto Justification.* I shall not here further press this Argument, because the ground of it will occur unto us afterwards.

The two next Verses containing an Objection and an Answer returned unto them, wherein we have no immediate concernment, I shall pass by.

*Verf. 15, 16.* The Apostle proceeds to explain his Comparison in those things, wherein there is a *dissimilitude* between the *comparates*.

*But not as the offence, so is the free gift; for if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the Grace of God, and the gift by Grace, by one Man Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.*

The opposition is between *παράπτωμα* on the one hand, and *χάρισμα* on the other; between which, a dissimilitude is asserted, not as unto their opposite effects of Death and Life, but only as unto the degrees of their efficacy, with respect unto those effects. *Παράπτωμα*, the offence, the fall, the sin, the transgression; that is, τὸ ἐνδὸς παράνομήν, the disobedience of one, *Ver. 19.* Hence the first sin of Adam, is generally called the fall, τὸ παράπτωμα. That which is opposed hereunto, is τὸ χάρισμα; *Donum, Donum gratuitum; Beneficium, id quod Deus gratificatur*; that is, χάρις τῷ Θεῷ, ἢ δωρεὰ ἐν χάριτι τῆς ἐνδὸς ἀνθρώπου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, as it is immediately explained. *The grace of God, and the free gift by grace, through Jesus Christ.* Wherefore, although this word, in the next verse, doth precisely signify the Righteousness of Christ, yet here it comprehends all the causes of our Justification, in opposition unto the fall of Adam, and the entrance of sin thereby.

The consequent and effect τὸ ἄποπαύματα of the offence, the fall, is, that *many be dead*. No more is here intended by *many*,

many, but only that the effects of that one offence were not confined unto *one*: And if we inquire who, or *how many* those many are, the Apostle tells us, that they are *all Men* universally, that is, all the posterity of *Adam*. By this one offence, because they all sinned, therein they are all dead; that is, rendered obnoxious and liable unto death, as the punishment due unto that one offence. And hence also it appears, how vain it is to wrest those words of *Ver. 12. In as much as all have sinned*, unto any other sin, but the first sin in *Adam*; seeing it is given as the reason why death passed on them, it being here plainly affirmed, *That they are dead*, or that death passed on them by that one offence.

The efficacy *ἡ χάρις* of the free gift opposed hereunto, is expressed, as that *which abounded much more*. Besides the thing it self asserted, which is plain and evident, the Apostle seems to me to argue the *equity of our Justification* by Grace, through the obedience of Christ, by comparing it with the *condemnation* that beset us by the sin and disobedience of *Adam*. For if it were *just, meet, and equal* that *all Men* should be made subject unto *condemnation* for the sin of *Adam*; it is much more so, that those who *believe*, should be justified by the obedience of Christ, through the grace and free donation of God. But wherein, in particular the gift by Grace, *abounded unto many*, above the efficacy of the fall to condemn, he declares afterwards. And, *that whereby we are freed from condemnation, more eminently than we are made obnoxious unto it by the fall and sin of Adam, by that alone we are justified before God. But this is by the grace of God, and the gift by Grace, through Jesus Christ alone*; which we plead for *Ver. 16*. Another difference between the *comparates* is expressed, or rather the instance is given in particular of the *dissimilitude* asserted in general before.

# 474 The nature of Justification, as declared

And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift; for the judgment was by one to condemnation; but the free gift is of many offences unto Justification.

Δι' ἑνὸς ἀμαρτήσαντος, By one that sinned, is the same with ἑνὸς ἁμαρτήματος, by one sin, one offence, the one sin of that one Man. κριμα, we render judgment. Most Interpreters do it by reatus, guilt, or crimen, which is derived from it. So משפט Judicium, is used in the Hebrew for guilt, מוה משפט הזה איש Jer. 26. 11. The judgment of death is to this Man, this Man is guilty of death, hath deserved to die. First therefore there was ἁμαρτία the sin, the fall τὸ ἑνὸς ἀμαρτήσαντος of one Man that sinned; it was his actual sin alone. Thence followed κριμα, reatus, guilt; this was common unto all. In and by that one sin, guilt came upon all. And the end hereof, that which it rendered Men obnoxious unto, is κατάκριμα, condemnation; guilt unto condemnation; and this guilt unto condemnation which came upon all, was ἕξ ἑνὸς of one person, or sin. This is the order of things on the part of Adam, (1.) Παρέστωμα the one sin. (2.) Κριμα the guilt that thereon ensued unto all. (3.) Κατάκριμα the condemnation which that guilt deserved. And their Antitheta or Opposites in the Second Adam, are (1.) χάρισμα the free donation of God. (2.) Δώρημα the gift of Grace it self, or the Righteousness of Christ. (3.) Δικαίωμα or δικαιοσύνη ζωῆς, Justification of Life. But yet though the Apostle doth thus distinguish these things to illustrate his comparison and opposition, yet that which he intends by them all, is the Righteousness and Obedience of Christ, as he declares Ver. 18, 19. This in the matter of our Justification, he (1.) calleth χάρισμα with respect unto the free gratuitous grant of it by Grace of God, δωρεὰ τῆς χάριτος; and (2.) Δώρημα with respect unto us who receive it. A free gift it is unto us; and (3.) Δικαίωμα, with respect unto its effect of making us righteous.

Whereas

Whereas therefore, by the sin of *Adam* imputed unto them, *guilt came on all men unto condemnation*, we must inquire wherein the *free gift* was otherwise. *Not as by one that sinned, so was the gift.* And it was so in two things: For (1.) *Condemnation* came upon all by *one offence*. But being under the guilt of that one offence, we contract the guilt of many more innumerable. Wherefore if the *free gift* had respect only unto that *one offence*, and intended it self no further, we could not be delivered; wherefore it is said to be of *many offences*, that is, of all our sins and trespasses whatever. (2.) *Adam* and all his posterity in him, were in a state of acceptation with God, and placed in a way of obtaining eternal life and blessedness, wherein God himself would have been their reward. In this estate by the entrance of sin, they lost the favor of God, and incurred the guilt of death or condemnation, for they are the same. But they lost not an *immediate right and title unto life and blessedness*. For this they had not, nor could have before the course of obedience prescribed unto them was accomplished. That therefore, which came upon all by the one offence, was the loss of Gods favor in the approbation of their present state, and the judgment or guilt of death and condemnation. But an *immediate right* unto eternal life, by that one sin was not lost. The free gift is *not so*: For as by it we are freed, not only from *one sin*, but from *all our sins*, so also by it we have a right and title unto eternal life. For therein *Grace reigns through Righteousness unto eternal life*, *Ver. 22.*

The same truth is further explained and confirmed, *Ver. 17.* *For if by one Mans offence death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of Grace, and of the gift of Righteousness, shall reign in life by one Jesus Christ.* The design of the Apostle having been sufficiently manifested in our observations on the former *Verses*, I shall from this only observe those things which more immediately concern our present

## 476 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

subject. And ( 1. ) it is worth observation, with what *variety* of expressions the Apostle sets forth the *Grace of God* in the Justification of Believers. Δικαίωμα, δώρημα, χάρις, χάρισμα, περισσεία χάριτος, δωρεά τῆς δικαιοσύνης. Nothing is omitted that may any way express the *freedom, sufficiency, and efficacy* of Grace unto that end. And although these terms seem some of them to be coincident in their signification, and to be used by him promiscuously, yet do they every one include something that is peculiar, and all of them set forth the whole work of Grace. Δικαίωμα seems to me, to be used in this Argument for δικαιολόγημα, which is the foundation of a cause in tryal, the matter pleaded, whereon the person tried is to be acquitted and justified. And this is the Righteousness of Christ; of one. Δώρημα, or a *free donation* is exclusive of all desert and conditions on our part, who do receive it. And it is that whereby we are freed from condemnation, and have a right unto the Justification of life. χάρις is the *free grace and favor of God*, which is the original or efficient cause of our Justification, as was declared *Chap. 3. 24.* χάρισμα hath been explained before. Περισσεία χάριτος, *the abundance of grace*, is added to secure Believers of the certainty of the effect. It is that whereunto nothing is wanting unto our Justification. Δωρεά τῆς δικαιοσύνης expresseth the *free grant* of that Righteousness which is imputed unto us unto the Justification of life, afterwards called the obedience of Christ. Be Men as wise and learned as they please, it becomes us all to learn to think, and speak of those Divine Mysteries from this *Blessed Apostle*, who knew them better then we all, and besides, wrote by divine inspiration.

And it is marvellous unto me, how Men can break through the *fence* that he hath made about the *grace of God*, and obedience of Christ in the work of our Justification before God, to introduce their our own Works of Obedience, and to find a place for them therein. But the design of *Paul*  
and

and some Men in declaring this point of our Justification before God, seems to be very opposite and contrary. His whole discourse is concerning the *Grace of God*, the *Death, Blood*, and *Obedience of Christ*, as if he could never sufficiently satisfy himself in the setting out, and declaration of them, without the least mention of any works or duties of our own, or the least intimation of any *use* that they are of herein. But all their pleas are for their *own works* and *duties*; and they have *invented* as many terms to set them out by, as the Holy Ghost hath *used* for the expression and declaration of the *Grace of God*. Instead of the words of Wisdom before mentioned, which the Holy Ghost hath taught, wherewith he fills up his discourse, theirs are filled with *conditions*, *preparatory dispositions*, *merits*, *causes*, and I know not what trappings for our own works. For my part I shall chuse rather to learn of him, and accommodate my conceptions and expressions of Gospel Mysteries, and of this, in especial, concerning our Justification, unto his who cannot deceive me; than trust to any other conduct, how specious soever its pretences may be.

2. It is plain in this Verse, that no more is required of any one unto Justification, but that *he receive the abundance of Grace, and the gift of Righteousness*. For this is the description that the Apostle gives of those that are justified, as unto any thing that on their part is required. And as this excludes all Works of Righteousness which we do; for by none of them do we *receive the abundance of Grace, and the gift of Righteousness*; so it doth also the imputation of *Faith* it self unto our Justification, as it is an *act* and *duty* of our own: For *Faith is that whereby we receive the gift of Righteousness*, by which we are justified. For it will not be denied, but that we are justified by *the gift of Righteousness*. or the Righteousness which is given unto us; for by it have we right and title unto life. But our Faith is not this gift,  
for

## 478 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

for that which receiveth, and that which is received, are not the same.

3. Where there is *περισία χριετης*, and *χριετις υπεραβουουσι*; *abounding grace, superabounding grace*, exerted in our Justification, no more is required thereunto. For how can it be said to *abound*, yea, to *superabound*, not only to the freeing of us from condemnation; but the giving of us a title unto life, if in any thing it is to be *supplied*, and eeked out by works and duties of our own. The things intended do fill up these expressions, although to some they are but an empty noise.

4. There is a *gift of Righteousness* required unto our Justification, which all must receive, who are to be justified. And all are justified who do receive it; for they that receive it shall *reign in life by Jesus Christ*. And hence it follows, (1.) That the Righteousness whereby we are justified before God, can be nothing of our own, nothing inherent in us, nothing performed by us. For it is that which is *freely given us*, and this donation is by imputation: *Blessed is the Man unto whom the Lord imputeth Righteousness, Chap. 4. 6.* And by *Faith we receive* what is so given and imputed, and otherwise we contribute nothing unto our participation of it. This it is to be justified in the sense of the Apostle, (2.) It is such a *Righteousness* as gives *right and title unto eternal life*. For they that receive it, shall *reign in life*. Wherefore it cannot consist in the pardon of sin alone. For (1.) the *pardon of sin* can in no tolerable sense be called the *gift of Righteousness*. Pardon of sin is one thing, and Righteousness another. (2.) *Pardon of sin* doth not give right and title unto eternal life. It is true, he whose sins are pardoned shall inherit eternal life; but not meerly by vertue of that pardon, but through the imputation of Righteousness which doth inseparably accompany it, and is the ground of it.

The description which is here given of our *Justification* by *Grace*, in opposition unto the *condemnation*, that we were made liable unto, by the sin of *Adam*, and in exaltation above it, as to the efficacy of *Grace* above that of the first sin, in that thereby not *one* but *all sins* are forgiven, and not only so, but a right unto life eternal is communicated unto us, is this, *That we receive the Grace of God, and the gift of Righteousness*, which gives us a right unto life by *Jesus Christ*. But this is to be justified by the *Imputation* of the *Righteousness* of *Christ* received by *Faith* alone.

The conclusion of what hath been evinced in the management of the comparison insisted on is fully expressed and further confirmed *Ver. 18, 19*.

*Ver. 18.* Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all Men unto condemnation, even so by the Righteousness of one, the free gift came upon all Men unto the Justification of life. So we read the words. By the offence of one; the Greek Copies vary here. Some read τῷ ἐνὶ ᾧ ἁμαρτωλίῳ, whom *Beza* followeth, and our Translation in the Margin; by one offence; most by τῷ ᾧ ἐνὸς ᾧ ἁμαρτωλίῳ, by the offence of one; and so afterwards as unto Righteousness; but both are unto the same purpose. For the one offence intended, is the offence of one, that is, of *Adam*: And the one Righteousness is the Righteousness of one, *Jesus Christ*.

The Introduction of this Assertion by ἀλλ. ἔν, the note of a *Syllogistical inference*, declares what is here asserted to be the substance of the truth pleaded for. And the comparison is continued, ὡς, these things have themselves after the same manner.

That which is affirmed on the one side, is, δι' ἐνὸς ᾧ ἁμαρτωλίτου εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους εἰς κατάνειμα; by the sin or fall of one, on all Men unto condemnation, that is, Judgment, say we, repeating κείμα from the foregoing Verse. But κείμα εἰς κατάνειμα is *guilt*, and that only. By the sin of one, all Men became guilty,

guilty, and were made obnoxious unto condemnation. The guilt of it is imputed unto all Men. For no otherwise can it come upon them unto condemnation, no otherwise can they be rendered obnoxious unto death and judgment on the account thereof. For we have evinced that by death and condemnation in this disputation of the Apostle, the whole punishment due unto sin, is intended. This therefore is plain and evident on that hand.

In answer hereunto, the *δικαίωμα* of one as to the causality of Justification, is opposed unto the *ἐπίδοτωμα* of the other, as unto its causality unto, or of condemnation. *ὅτι ἐνδὲς δικαιοματιῶ* *μα* *Θ*, *By the Righteousness of one.* That is, the Righteousness that is pleadable *εἰς δικαιοσιν* unto Justification. For that is *δικαίωμα* a Righteousness pleaded for Justification. By this, say our Translators, *the free gift came upon all*; repeating *χάρισμα* from the foregoing Verse, as they had done *κεῖμα* before on the other hand. The Syriack Translation renders the words without the aid of any supplement: *Therefore as by the sin of one, condemnation was unto all men, so by the Righteousness of one, Justification unto life shall be unto all Men.* And the sense of the words is so made plain without the supply of any other word into the Text. But whereas in the original the words are not *χατάκειμα εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους*, but *εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους εἰς χατάκειμα*, and so in the later clause, somewhat from his own foregoing words, is to be supplied to answer the intention of the Apostle. And this is *χάρισμα gratiosa donatio*, the free grant of Righteousness; or *δωρημα* the free gift of Righteousness unto Justification. The Righteousness of one Christ Jesus, is freely granted unto all Believers, to the Justification of life. For the *all Men* here mentioned are described by, and limited unto them that receive the abundance of Grace, and the gift of Righteousness by Christ, *Ver. 17.*

Some vainly pretend from hence a *general grant of righteousness* and life unto all men, whereof the greatest part are never made partakers; then which nothing can be more opposite nor contradictory unto the Apostles design. Men are not made guilty of condemnation from the Sin of *Adam*, by such a Divine constitution, as that they *may*, or on some conditions *may not be* obnoxious thereunto. Every one so soon as he actually exists, and by vertue thereof is a descendant from the first *Adam*, is actually in his own person liable thereunto, and the wrath of God abideth on him. And no more are intended on the other side, but those only who by their relation through Faith unto the Lord Christ the second *Adam*, are actually interested in the Justification of life. Neither is the controversie about the *universality of Redemption* by the Death of Christ herein concerned. For those by whom it is asserted, do not affirm that it is thence necessary that the *free gift unto the Justification of life*, should come on all, for that they know it doth not do. And of a provision of Righteousness and life for men in case they do believe, although it be true, yet nothing is spoken in this place. Only the *certain Justification* of them that believe, and the way of it is declared. Nor will the *Analogy* of the Comparison here insisted on, admit of any such interpretation. For the *all* on the one hand, are *all and only* those who derive their being from *Adam* by natural propagation. If any man might be supposed not to do so, he would not be concerned in his Sin or Fall. And so really it was with the *man Christ Jesus*. And those on the other hand, are only those who *derive a spiritual life* from Christ. Suppose a man not to do so, and he is no way interested in the Righteousness of the *one* unto the Justification of life. Our Argument from the words is this; *As the Sin of one that came on all unto condemnation, was the Sin of the first Adam imputed unto them, so the Righteousness of the one unto the Justification of life that*

## 482 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

comes on all Believers, is the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto them. And what can be more clearly affirmed or more evidently confirmed than this is by the Apostle, I know not. Yet is it more plainly expressed, v. 19.

*For as by one mans Disobedience many were made Sinners; so by the Obedience of one shall many be made Righteous.*

This is well explained by *Cyrillus Alexandrinus* in *Joan. Lib. II. Cap. 25.* *Quemadmodum prævaricatione primi hominis ut in primitiis generis nostri, morti addicti fuimus; eodem modo per obedientiam & justitiam Christi, in quantum seipsum legi subjecit, quamvis legis author esset, benedictio & vivificatio quæ per spiritum est, ad totam nostram penetravit naturam.* And by *Leo. Epist. 12. ad Juvenalem.* *Ut autem reparet omnium vitam, recepit omnium causam; ut sicut per unius reatum omnes facti fuerunt peccatores, ita per unius innocentiam omnes fierent innocentes; inde in homines manaret justitia, ubi est humana suscepta natura.*

That which he before called *παράνομια & ὑπακομή* he now expresseth by *παρανομίαν* and *ὑπακομήν*, *Disobedience* and *Obedience*. The *παρανομίαν* of *Adam* or his *Disobedience* was his actual transgression of the Law of God. Hereby, saith the Apostle, *many were made Sinners*. Sinners in such a sense as to be obnoxious unto Death and Condemnation. For liable unto Death they could not be made, unless they were first made Sinners or guilty. And this they could not be, but that they are esteemed to have sinned in him, whereon the guilt of his Sin was imputed unto them. This therefore he affirms, namely that the *actual sin of Adam* was so the sin of all men, as that they were made sinners thereby, obnoxious unto Death and Condemnation.

That which he opposeth hereunto, is ἡ ὑπακομή the *Obedience of one*, that is, of *Jesus Christ*. And this was the *Actual Obedience* that he yielded unto the whole Law of God. For as the *Disobedience of Adam* was his actual Transgression of the whole Law; so the *Obedience of Christ* was his actual accom-

accomplishment or fulfilling of the whole Law. This the *Antithesis* doth require.

Hereby many are made Righteous. How? By the Imputation of that Obedience unto them. For so and no otherwise, are men made Sinners by the Imputation of the Disobedience of *Adam*. And this is that which gives us a right and title unto eternal life; as the Apostle declares, *vers.* 21. *That as Sin reigned unto death; so might Grace reign through Righteousness unto eternal life.* This Righteousness is no other but the Obedience of *one*, that is, of Christ, as it is called, *vers.* 18. And it is said to *come upon us*, that is, to be *imputed* unto us; For blessed is the man unto whom God imputeth Righteousness. And hereby we have not only deliverance from that Death and Condemnation whereunto we were liable by the Sin of *Adam*, but the Pardon of many Offences, that is, of *all our Personal Sins*, and a right unto life eternal through the Grace of God; for we are justified freely by his Grace through the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus.

And these things are thus plainly and fully delivered by the Apostle, unto whose sense and expressions also (so far as may be) it is our Duty to accommodate ours. What is offered in opposition hereunto, is so made up of *Exceptions* and *Evasions*, perplexed Disputes; and leadeth us so far off from the plain words of the Scripture, that the Conscience of a convinced Sinner knows not what to fix upon to give it rest and satisfaction, nor what it is that is to be believed unto Justification.

*Piscator* in his *Scholia* on this Chapter and elsewhere, insisteth much on a specious Argument against the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ unto our Justification. But it proceedeth evidently on an open mistake and false supposition, as well as it is contradictory unto the plain words of the Text. It is true which he observes and proves, that our Redemption, Reconciliation, Pardon of Sin, and Justification are

often ascribed unto the Death and Blood of Christ in a signal manner. The reasons of it have partly been intimated before, and a further account of them, shall be given immediately. But it doth not thence follow, that *the Obedience of his life* wherein he fulfilled the whole Law, being made under it for us, is excluded from any causality therein, or is not imputed unto us. But in opposition thereunto he thus argueth.

*Si obedientia vite Christi nobis ad justitiam imputaretur, non fuit opus Christum pro nobis mori; mori enim necesse fuit pro nobis injustis, 1 Pet. 3. 18. Quod si ergo justii effecti sumus per vitam illius, causa nulla relicta fuit cur pro nobis moreretur; quia justitia Dei non patitur ut puniat justos. At punivit nos in Christo, seu quod idem valet punivit Christum pro nobis, & loco nostri, posteaquam ille sancte vixisset, ut certum est à Scriptura. Ergo non sumus justii effecti per sanctam vitam Christi. Item, Christus mortuus est ut justitiam illam Dei nobis acquireret. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Non igitur illam acquisiverat ante mortem.*

But this whole Argument, I say, proceeds upon an evident mistake. For it supposeth such an order of things, as that the *Obedience of Christ* or his Righteousness in fulfilling the Law, is *first imputed* unto us, and then the *Righteousness of his death* is afterwards to take place, or to be imputed unto us, which on that supposition he says would be of no use. But no such order or Divine constitution is pleaded or pretended in our Justification. It is true, the *life of Christ*, and his *Obedience unto the Law* did precede his Sufferings, and undergoing the curse thereof; neither could it otherwise be. For this order of these things between themselves was made necessary from the Law of Nature; But it doth not thence follow that it must be observed in the Imputation or Application of them unto us. For this is an effect of Sovereign Wisdom and Grace, not respecting the *natural order* of Christs Obedience and Suffering, but the *moral order* of the things where-

whereunto they are appointed. And although we need not assert, nor do I so do, *different acts* of the Imputation of the Obedience of Christ unto the Justification of life, or a right and title unto life eternal, and of the suffering of Christ unto the pardon of our Sins and freedom from condemnation; but by both we have both according unto the Ordinance of God, that Christ may be all in all; Yet as unto the effects themselves, in the Method of Gods bringing Sinners unto the Justification of life, the application of the Death of Christ unto them unto the pardon of Sin and freedom from Condemnation, is in *order of Nature*, and in the exercise of Faith, antecedent unto the application of his Obedience unto us, for a right and title unto life eternal.

The state of the person to be justified, is a *state of Sin* and wrath, wherein he is liable unto Death and Condemnation. This is that which a *convinced sinner* is sensible of, and which alone in the first place he seeks for deliverance from. *What shall we do to be saved?* This in the first place is presented unto him in the Doctrine and Promise of the Gospel, which is the Rule and Instrument of its application. And this is the *death of Christ*. Without this no actual Righteousness imputed unto him, not the *Obedience of Christ himself*, will give him relief. For he is sensible that he hath sinned, and thereby come short of the glory of God, and under the Sentence condemnatory of the Law. Until he receives a deliverance from hence, it to no purpose to propose that unto him which should give him right unto life eternal. But upon a supposition hereof, he is no less concern'd in what shall yet further give him *title* thereunto, that he *may reign in life through Righteousness*. Herein I say in its order, Conscience is no less concern'd than in deliverance from Condemnation. And this order is expressed in the declaration of the Fruit and Effects of the Mediation of Christ. *Dan. 9. 24.*  
*To make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting*  
*ing.*

## 486 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

*ing Righteousness.* Neither is there any force in the Objection against it, that *actually the Obedience of Christ did precede his suffering.* For the Method of their application is not prescribed thereby; And the state of Sinners to be justified, with the nature of their Justification requires it should be otherwise, as God also hath ordained. But because the Obedience and Sufferings of Christ, were concomitant from first to last, both equally belonging unto his state of *Exinanition*, and cannot in any act or instance be separated, but only in notion or imagination, seeing he suffered in all his Obedience, and obeyed in all his Suffering, *Heb. 5. 8.* And neither part of our Justification, in freedom from Condemnation, and right unto life eternal, can be supposed to be or exist without the other according unto the Ordinance and constitution of God, the whole effect is jointly to be ascribed unto the whole Mediation of Christ, so far as he acted towards God in our behalf, wherein he fulfilled the whole Law both as to the penalty exacted of Sinners, and the Righteousness it requires unto life as an eternal reward. And there are many reasons why our Justification is in the Scripture by the way of Eminency ascribed unto the *death and blood-shedding of Christ.*

For, (1.) The Grace and Love of God, the principal efficient cause of our Justification, are therein made most eminent and conspicuous. For this is most frequently in the Scripture proposed unto us as the *highest instance*, and undeniable demonstration of Divine Love and Grace. And this is that which principally we are to consider in our Justification, the glory of them being the end of God therein. He *made us accepted in the Beloved to the praise of the glory of his Grace*, Ephes. 1. 6. Wherefore this being the fountain, spring and sole cause, both of the Obedience of Christ, and of the Imputation thereof unto us, with the pardon of Sin and Righteousness thereby, it is every where in the Scripture proposed

proposed as the *prime object* of our Faith in our Justification, and opposed directly unto all our own Works whatever. The whole of Gods design herein, is, that *Grace may reign through Righteousness unto eternal life*. Whereas therefore this is made most evident and conspicuous in the Death of Christ, our Justification is in a peculiar manner assigned thereunto.

2. The *love of Christ himself* and his Grace are peculiarly exalted in our Justification; that all men may *honour the Son, even as they honour the Father*. Frequently are they expressed unto this purpose, *2 Cor. 8. 9. Gal. 2. 20. Phil. 3. 6, 7. Rev. 1. 5, 6*. And those also are most eminently exalted in his *death*, so as that all the effects and fruits of them are ascribed thereunto in a peculiar manner. As nothing is more ordinary than, among many things that concur to the same effect, to ascribe it unto that which is most *eminent* among them, especially if it cannot be conceived as separated from the rest.

3. This is the clearest Testimony, that what the Lord Christ did and suffered was for us, and not for himself. For without the consideration hereof, all the Obedience which he yielded unto the Law, might be looked on as due only on his own account, and himself to have been such a Saviour as the *Socinians* imagine, who should *do all with us from God, and nothing with God for us*. But the suffering of the curse of the Law by him who was not only an innocent man, but also the Son of God, openly testifies that what he did and suffered was for us, and not for himself. It is no wonder therefore if our Faith as unto Justification be in the first place, and principally directed unto his Death and Bloodshedding.

4. All *the Obedience* of Christ had still respect unto the Sacrifice of himself, which was to ensue, wherein it received its accomplishment, and whereon its efficacy unto our Justification did depend. For as no Imputation of *actual Obedience* would justify *Sinners* from the condemnation that

was passed on them for the Sin of *Adam*; so although the Obedience of Christ was not a meer preparation or qualification of his person for his Suffering; yet its efficacy unto our Justification did depend on his Suffering that was to ensue, when his Soul was made an offering for Sin.

5. As was before observed, *Reconciliation and the Pardon of Sin* through the Blood of Christ, do directly in the first place respect our relief from the state and condition whereinto we were cast by the Sin of *Adam*, in the loss of the favour of God, and liableness unto Death; this therefore is that which principally and in the first place a lost convinced Sinner, such as Christ calls unto himself, doth look after. And therefore Justification is eminently and frequently proposed as the effect of the *Bloodshedding and Death* of Christ, which are the direct cause of our Reconciliation and Pardon of Sin. But yet from none of these considerations, doth it follow that the *Obedience of the one man* Christ Jesus is not imputed unto us, whereby Grace might reign through Righteousness unto eternal life.

The same Truth is fully asserted and confirmed *Chap. 8. v. 1, 2, 3, 4.* But this place hath been of late so explained and so vindicated by another in his learned and Judicious Exposition of it, (namely Dr. *Jacombe*) as that nothing remains of weight to be added unto what hath been pleaded and argued by him, *Part. I. vers. 4. pag. 587.* and onwards. And indeed the answers which he subjoyns (to the Arguments whereby he confirms the Truth) to the most usual and important objections against the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, are sufficient to give just Satisfaction unto the minds of unprejudiced, unengaged persons. I shall therefore pass over this Testimony, as that which hath been so lately pleaded and vindicated; and not press the same things, it may be (as is not unusual) unto their disadvantage.

## Chap. 10. Verſ. 3, 4.

For they (the Jews who had a zeal for God, but not according to knowledg) being ignorant of Gods Righteouſneſs, and going about to eſtabliſh their own Righteouſneſs, have not ſubmitted themſelves unto the Righteouſneſs of God. For Chriſt is the end of the Law for Righteouſneſs unto every one that believeth.

What is here determined, the Apoſtle enters upon the *Propoſition* and declaration of, *Chap. 9. verſ. 30.* And becauſe what he had to propoſe was ſomewhat ſtrange, and unſuited unto the common apprehenſions of men, he introduceth it with that prefatory Interrogation, *τι ἐν ἐρεῖται;* which he uſeth on the like occaſions, *Chap. 3. 5. Chap. 6. 1. Chap. 7. 7. Chap. 9. 14.* *What ſhall we then ſay?* that is, is there in this matter unrighteouſneſs with God? as *verſ. 14.* or what ſhall we ſay unto theſe things, or this is that which is to be ſaid herein? That which hereon he aſſerts is, that the *Gentiles* which followed not after Righteouſneſs have attained unto Righteouſneſs, even the Righteouſneſs which is of Faith; But *Israel* which followed after the *Law of Righteouſneſs* hath not attained unto the Law of Righteouſneſs, that is, unto Righteouſneſs it ſelf before God.

Nothing ſeems to be more contrary unto reaſon, than what is here made manifeſt by the event. The *Gentiles* who lived in Sin and Pleaſures, not once endeavouring to attain unto any Righteouſneſs before God, yet attained unto it upon the *Preaching of the Goſpel.* *Israel* on the other hand, which followed after Righteouſneſs, diligently in all the Works of the Law and Duties of Obedience unto God thereby, came ſhort of it, attained not unto it. All *Preparations*, all *Diſpoſitions*, all *merit* as unto Righteouſneſs and Juſtification are

excluded from the *Gentiles*. For in all of them there is more or less a *following after Righteousness* which is denied of them all. Only by Faith in him who justifieth the ungodly, they attain Righteousness, or they attained the Righteousness of Faith. For to attain Righteousness *by Faith*, and to attain the Righteousness *which is of Faith*, are the same. Wherefore all things that are comprized any way in *following after Righteousness*, such as are all our Duties and Works, are excluded from any influence into our Justification. And this is expressed to declare the Sovereignty and freedom of the Grace of God herein; Namely that we are justified freely by his Grace, and that on our part *all boasting is excluded*. Let men pretend what they will, and dispute what they please, those who attain unto *Righteousness* and *Justification* before God, when they *follow not after Righteousness*, they do it by the *gratuitous Imputation* of the Righteousness of another unto them.

It may be it will be said; it is true in the time of their *Heathenism* they did not at *all follow after Righteousness*, but when the Truth of the Gospel was revealed unto them, then they *followed after Righteousness* and did attain it. But (1.) This is directly to contradict the Apostle in that it says, that they *attain'd not Righteousness*, but only as they *followed after Righteousness*, whereas he affirms the direct contrary. (2.) It takes away the distinction which he puts between *them* and *Israel*; namely, that the one followed after Righteousness, and the other did not. (3.) *To follow after Righteousness* in this place, is to follow after a Righteousness of our own; To establish their own Righteousness, *Chap. 10. 3*. But this is so far from being a means of attaining Righteousness, as that it is the most effectual obstruction thereof.

If therefore those who have *no Righteousness* of their own, who are so far from it, that they never endeavoured to attain it, do yet *by Faith* receive that Righteousness wherewith they

justified before God, they do so by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto them, or let some other way be assigned.

In the other side of the instance concerning *Israel* some must hear whether they will or not, that wherewith they are not pleased.

Three things are expressed of them; 1. Their Attempt. 2. Their Success. 3. The Reason of it.

Their *Attempt* or Endeavour was in this, that they followed after the Law of Righteousness. *Δίωκον*, the word whereby their endeavour is expressed, signifies that which is earnest, diligent and sincere. By it doth the Apostle declare what his was, and what ours ought to be in the Duties and Exercise of Gospel Obedience, *Phil.* 3. 12. They were not *indifferent* in this matter, but *instantly served God day and night*. Nor were they *Hypocritical*; for the Apostle bears them record in this matter, that *they had a zeal of God*, *Chap.* 10. 2. And that which they thus endeavoured after was *the Law of Righteousness*. That Law which prescribed a perfect personal Righteousness before God; *the things which if a man do them, he shall live in them*, *Chap.* 10. 5. Wherefore the Apostle hath no other respect unto the *Ceremonial Law* in this place, but only as it was branched out from the Moral Law by the Will of God, and as the Obedience unto it belonged thereunto. When he speaks of it *separately* he calls it the *Law of Commandments contained in Ordinances*, but it is no where called *the Law of Righteousness*, the Law whose Righteousness is fulfilled in us, *Chap.* 8. 4. wherefore their following after this Law of Righteousness, was their diligence in the performance of all Duties of Obedience, according unto the Directions and Precepts of the Moral Law.

2. The *issue* of this attempt is, that they attained not unto the *Law of Righteousness*; *οὐκ ἔλαβον δικαιοσύνην ἐκ νόμου* that is, they attained not unto a Righteousness before God hereby.

## 492 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

Though this was *the end of the Law* namely a Righteousness before God, wherein a man might live, yet could they never attain it.

3. An account is given of the *Reason of their failing*, in attaining that which they so earnestly endeavoured after. And this was in a *double mistake* that they were under; first, in the *means of attaining it*; secondly, in the *righteousness it self*, that was to be sought after. The first is declared *Ver. 32. Because not by Faith, but as it were by the works of the Law.* Faith and Works are the two only ways whereby Righteousness may be attained, and they are opposite and inconsistent; so that none doth or can seek after Righteousness by them both. They will not be *mixed* and made one intire means of attaining Righteousness. They are opposed as *Grace and Works*; what is of the one, is not of the other, *Rom. II. 6.* Every composition of them in this matter, is, *Male facta gratia nequicquam coit & rescinditur.* And the reason is, because the *Righteousness* which Faith seeks after, or which is attainable by Faith, is that which is given to us, *imputed* unto us, which Faith doth only receive. *It receives the abundance of Grace, and the gift of Righteousness.* But that which is attainable by Works, is *our own, inherent in us*, wrought out by us, and not imputed unto us: For it is nothing but those works themselves, with respect unto the Law of God.

And if Righteousness before God, be to be obtained alone by Faith, and that in contradistinction unto all Works, which if a Man do them according unto the Law, he shall even live in them, then is it by Faith alone that we are justified before God, or nothing else, on our part, is required thereunto. And of what nature this Righteousness must be, is evident.

Again, if Faith and Works are opposed as *contrary and inconsistent*, when considered as the means of attaining Righteousness.

teousness or Justification before God, as plainly they are, then is it impossible we should be justified before God by them in the *same sense* way and manner. Wherefore when the Apostle *James* affirms, That a Man is justified by Works, and not by Faith only, he cannot intend our Justification before God, where it is impossible they should both concur. For not only are they declared inconsistent by the Apostle in this place, but it would introduce several sorts of Righteousness unto Justification, that are inconsistent and destructive of each other. This was the *first mistake* of the *Jews*, whence this miscarriage insued; they sought not after *Righteousness by Faith*, but as it were *by the Works of the Law*.

Their *second mistake* was as unto the *Righteousness* it self, whereon a Man might be justified before God. For this they judged was to be *their own Righteousness*. Chap. 10. 3. Their own *Personal Righteousness* consisting in their own Duties of Obedience, they looked on as the only Righteousness, whereon they might be justified before God. This therefore they went about to *establish* as the Pharisees did. Luke 18. 11, 12. And this mistake, with their design thereon, to *establish their own Righteousness*, was the principal cause that made them reject the Righteousness of God, as it is with many at this day.

What ever is done in us, or performed by us, as obedience unto God, is *our own Righteousness*. Though it be done in Faith, and by the aids of Gods Grace; yet is it *subjectively* ours, and so far as it is a Righteousness, it is our own. But all Righteousness which is our own whatever, is so far divers from the Righteousness, by which we are to be justified before God, as that the most earnest endeavor to *establish it*, that is, to render it such, as *by which we may be justified*, is an effectual means to cause us to refuse a *submission* unto, and an acceptance of that, whereby alone we may be so.

This

## 494 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

This ruined the *Jews*, and will be the ruine of all that shall follow their example in seeking after Justification; yet is it not easie for Men to take any other way, or to be taken off from this. So the Apostle intimates in that expression, *They submitted not themselves unto the Righteousness of God.* This Righteousness of God is of that nature, that the proud mind of Man is altogether unwilling to bow and *submit* it self unto; yet can it no otherwise be attained, but by such a *submission* or *subjection* of mind, as contains in it a total Renunciation of any Righteousness of our Men. And those who reproach others for affirming, That Men indeavoring after *Morality* or *Moral Righteousness*, and resting therein, are in no good way for the participation of the Grace of God by Jesus Christ, do expressly deride the Doctrine of the Apostle, that is, of the Holy Ghost himself.

Wherefore, the plain design of the Apostle is to declare, that not only *Faith*, and the Righteousness of it, and a Righteousness of our own by Works are inconsistent, that is, as unto our Justification before God; but also that the *intermixture* of our own Works, in seeking after Righteousness, as the *means* thereof doth wholly divert us from the acceptance of, or *submission* unto the Righteousness of God. For the Righteousness which is of Faith, is not our own, it is the Righteousness of God, that which he *imputes* unto us. But the Righteousness of Works is our own, that which is wrought in us, and by us. And as Works have no aptitude nor meetness in themselves to *attain* or *receive* a Righteousness, which because it is not our own is imputed unto us, but are repugnant unto it, as that which will cast them down from their legal dignity of being our Righteousness: So Faith hath no aptitude nor meetness in it self, to be an *Inherent Righteousness*, or so to be esteemed, or as such to be *imputed* unto us, seeing its principal faculty and efficacy consists in fixing all the trust, confidence, and expectation of  
the

the Soul, for Righteousness and acceptation with God, upon another.

Here was the ruine of those *Jews*; they judged it a better, a more probable, yea, a more *righteous* and holy way for them, constantly to endeavor after a Righteousness of their own by duties of obedience unto the Law of God, then to imagine that they could come to acceptance with God by Faith in another. For tell them, and such as they, what you please, if they have not a Righteousness of their own, that they can set upon its legs, and *make to stand* before God, the Law will not have its accomplishment, and so will condemn them.

To demolish this last fort of *unbelief*, the Apostle grants that the Law must have *its end*, and be compleatly fulfilled, or there is no appearing for us as righteous before God; and withal shews them how this is done, and where alone it is to be sought after. For *Christ* (saith he) *is the end of the Law for Righteousness to every one that believeth, Ver. 4.* We need not trouble our selves to inquire in what various sense Christ may be said to be *τέλος νόμου*, *the end, the complement, the perfection of the Law.* The Apostle sufficiently determineth his intention, in affirming not absolutely that he is *the end of the Law*, but he is so *εις δικαιοσυνην* for Righteousness unto every one that believeth. The matter in question, *Is a Righteousness unto Justification before God.* And this is acknowledged to be the Righteousness which the Law requires. God looks for no Righteousness from us, but what is prescribed in the Law. The Law is nothing but the Rule of Righteousness; Gods prescription of a Righteousness, and all the Duties of it unto us. That we should be righteous herewith before God, was the first original end of the Law. Its other ends at present of the *conviction of sin*, and *judging or condemning* for it, were accidental unto its primitive constitution. This Righteousness, which the Law requires

## 496 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

requires, which is all and only that Righteousness which God requires of us, the accomplishment of this end of the Law, the *Jews* sought after by their own *personal performance* of the Works and Duties of it. But hereby in the utmost of their endeavors they could never fulfil this Righteousness, nor attain this end of the Law, which yet if Men do not, they must perish for ever.

Wherefore the Apostle declares, That all this is done another way; that the *Righteousness of the Law* is fulfilled, and its end, as unto a Righteousness before God, attained, and that is in and by Christ. For what the Law required, that he accomplished which is accounted unto every one that believes.

Herein the Apostle issueth the whole disquisition about a *Righteousness* wherewith we may be justified before God, and in particular, how *satisfaction* is given unto the demands of the Law. That which we could not do, that which the Law could not effect in us, in that it was weak through the flesh, that which we could not attain by the Works and Duties of it, that Christ hath done for us, and so is the *end of the Law* for Righteousness unto every one that believeth.

The Law demandeth a Righteousness of us; the accomplishment of this Righteousness is the *end* which it aims at, and which is necessary unto our Justification before God. This is not to be *attained by any works of our own*, by any Righteousness of our own. But the Lord Christ is this for us, and unto us; which, how he is or can be but by the Imputation of his Obedience and Righteousness in the accomplishment of the Law, I cannot understand; I am sure the Apostle doth not declare.

The *Way* whereby we attain unto this *End* of the Law, which we cannot do by our utmost endeavors to establish our own Righteousness, is by *Faith* alone, for Christ is the  
end

end of the Law for Righteousness *unto every one that believeth*. To mix any thing with Faith herein, as it is repugnant unto the nature of Faith and Works, with respect unto their aptitude and meetness, for the attaining of a Righteousness, so it is as directly contradictory unto the express design and words of the Apostle, as any thing that can be invented.

Let Men please themselves with their distinctions which I understand not (and yet perhaps should be ashamed to say so, but that I am perswaded they understand them not themselves, by whom they are used) or with cavils, objections, feigned consequences, which I value not : Here I shall for ever desire to fix my Soul, and herein to acquiesce; namely, *That Christ is the end of the Law for Righteousness, to every one that doth believe*. And I do suppose, that all they who understand aright what it is that the Law of God doth require of them, how needful it is that it be complied withal, and that the *end* of it be accomplished, with the utter insufficiency of their own endeavors unto those ends, will, at least, when the time of disputing is over, betake themselves unto the same refuge and rest.

The next place I shall consider in the Epistle of this Apostle is

**I COR. I. 30.** *But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us Wisdom, and Righteousness, and Sanctification, and Redemption.*

The design of the Apostle in these words is to manifest, that whatever *is wanting* unto us on any account that we may please God, live unto him, and come to the enjoyment of him, that we have in and by Jesus Christ: And this on the part of God from meer, free, and sovereign Grace, as *Ver. 26, 27, 28, 29.* do declare. And we have all these things

## 498 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

by vertue of our *infition* or *implantation* in him;  $\xi$   $\alpha\upsilon\tau\acute{\omicron}\varsigma$ , *from of*, or *by him*. He by his Grace is the principal efficient cause hereof. And the effect is, that we in *Christ Jesus*; that is ingrafted in him, or united unto him, as Members of his Mystical Body, which is the constant sense of that expression in the Scripture. And the benefits which we receive hereby are enumerated in the following words. But first the way whereby we are made partakers of them, or they are communicated unto us, is declared; *who of God is made unto us*. It is so ordained of God, that he himself shall be made or become all this unto us. " $\text{Ὁς ἐγενήθη ἡμῖν ἀπὸ Θεοῦ}$ ", where  $\alpha\pi\omicron$ , denotes the *efficient cause*, as  $\xi$  did before. But how is Christ thus *made unto us of God*, or what act of God is it that is intended thereby. *Socinus* says it is a *General act of the providence of God, whence it is come to pass, or is so fallen out, that one way or other the Lord Christ should be said to be all this unto us*. But it is an especial Ordinance and Institution of Gods sovereign Grace and Wisdom, designing Christ to be all this unto us, and for us, with actual Imputation thereon, and nothing else, that is intended. Whatever interest therefore we have in Christ, and what ever benefit we have by him, it all depends on the *sovereign Grace and constitution of God*, and not on any thing in our selves. Whereas then we have no *Righteousness* of our own, he is appointed of God to be our *Righteousness*, and is *made so unto us*; which can be no otherwise, but that *his Righteousness is made ours*. For he is *made it unto us* (as he is likewise the other things mentioned) so as that all *boasting*, that is in our selves, should be utterly excluded, and that he that *glorieth, should glory in the Lord*, *Ver. 29, 31*. Now there is such a *Righteousness*, or such a way of being righteous whereon we may have somewhat to *Glory*, *Rom. 4. 2*. And which doth not exclude *boasting*, *Chap. 3. 27*. And this cannot possibly be but when our *Righteousness* is inherent in us. For that

how-

however it may be procured, or purchased, or wrought in us, is yet *our own*, so far as any thing can be our own, whilest we are Creatures. This kind of Righteousness therefore is here excluded. And the Lord Christ being *so made Righteousness* unto us of God, as that all *boasting and glorying* on our part, or in our selves, may be excluded, yea, being made so, *for this very end*, that so it should be, it can be no otherwise, but by the *Imputation of his Righteousness unto us*. For thereby is the Grace of God, the honor of his Person and Mediation exalted, and all occasion of *glorying* in our selves utterly rescinded. We desire no more from this testimony, but that whereas we are in our selves *destitute of all Righteousness in the sight of God*, Christ is by a gracious act of Divine Imputation made of God Righteousness unto us, in such a way, as that all *our glorying* ought to be in the Grace of God, and the Righteousness of Christ himself. *Bellarmino* attempts three Answers unto this Testimony, the two first whereof are *coincident*; and in the third, being on the rack of *Light and Truth*, he confesseth and grants all that we plead for. (1.) He says, *That Christ is said to be our Righteousness, because he is the efficient cause of it, as God is said to be our strength; and so there is in the words a Metonymy of the effect for the cause*. And I say it is true, That the Lord Christ, by his Spirit, is the *efficient cause* of our Personal, Inherent Righteousness. By his Grace it is effected and wrought in us; he renews our natures into the Image of God, and without him we can do nothing: So that our habitual and actual Righteousness is from him. But this *Personal Righteousness* is our Sanctification and nothing else. And although the same *internal habit* of Inherent Grace, with operations suitable thereunto, be sometimes called *our Sanctification*, and sometimes *our Righteousness*, with respect unto those operations; yet is it never distinguished into our *Sanctification*, and our *Righteousness*. But his being made *Righteousness* unto us in

## 500 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

this place, is absolutely distinct from his being made *Sanctification* unto us, which is that Inherent Righteousness which is wrought in us by the Spirit and Grace of Christ. And his working Personal Righteousness in us, which is our Sanctification, and the Imputation of his Righteousness unto us, whereby we are made righteous before God, are not only consistent, but the one of them cannot be without the other.

2. He pleads, *That Christ is said to be made Righteousness unto us, as he is made Redemption. Now he is our Redemption, because he hath redeemed us. So is he said to be made Righteousness unto us, because by him we become righteous; or as another speaks, Because by him alone we are justified.* This is the same plea with the former, namely, that there is a *metonymy of the effect* for the cause in all these expressions; yet what cause they intend it to be, who expound the words *By him alone we are justified*, I do not understand. But *Bellarmino* is approaching yet nearer the Truth, for as Christ is said to be made of God, *Redemption* unto us, because by his *Blood* we are redeemed, or freed from Sin, Death, and Hell, by the ransom he paid for us, or have redemption through his Blood, even the forgiveness of sins: So he is said to be made *Righteousness* unto us, because through his *Righteousness* granted unto us of God (as Gods making him to be Righteousness unto us, and our becoming the Righteousness of God in him; and the Imputation of his Righteousness unto us, that we may be righteous before God, are the same) we are justified.

His third answer, as was before observed, grants the whole of what we plead. For it is the same which he gives unto *Jere. 23. 6.* which place he conjoyns with this, as of the same sense and importance, giving up his whole cause in Satisfaction unto them, in the words before transcribed. *Lib. 2. cap. 10.*

*Socinus* Prefaceth his Answer unto this Testimony with an *Admiration*, That any should make use of it, or plead it in this cause, it is so impertinent unto the purpose. And indeed, a pretended contempt of the Arguments of his Adversaries is, the *Principle Artifice* he makes use of in all his Replies and Evasions; wherein I am sorry to see that he is followed by most of them, who together with him, do oppose the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. And so of late the use of this Testimony which reduced *Bellarmino* to so great a strait, is *admired* at, on the only ground and reason wherewith it is opposed by *Socinus*. Yet are his exceptions unto it such, as that I cannot also but a little on the other hand *wonder*, that any learned Man should be troubled with them, or seduced by them. For he only pleads, *That if Christ be said to be made Righteousness unto us, because his Righteousness is imputed unto us; then is he said to be made Wisdom unto us, because his Wisdom is so imputed, and so of his Sanctification which none will allow; yea, he must be redeemed for us, and his Redemption be imputed unto us.* But there is nothing of force, nor truth in this pretence. For it is built only on this Supposition, That Christ must be made unto us of God, all these things, in the *same way and manner*; whereas they are of such different natures, that it is utterly *impossible* he should so be. For instance, he is made *Sanctification* unto us, in that by his Spirit and Grace we are *freely sanctified*. But he cannot be said to be made *Redemption* unto us, in that by his Spirit and Grace we are *freely redeemed*. And, if he is said to be made *Righteousness* unto us, because by his Spirit and Grace he works inherent Righteousness in us, then is it plainly the same with his being made *Sanctification* unto us. Neither doth he himself believe that Christ is made all these things unto us in the *same way and manner*. And therefore doth he not assign any *special way* whereby he is so made them all; but clouds it in an ambig-  
ous

ous expression, that he becomes all these things unto us in *the Providence of God*. But ask him in particular, how Christ is *made Sanctification unto us*, and he will tell you that it was by *his Doctrine and Example* alone, with some such general assistance of the Spirit of God as he will allow. But now, this is no way at all whereby Christ was made *Redemption* unto us; which being a thing external, and not wrought in us, Christ can be no otherwise made *Redemption* unto us, then by the *Imputation* unto us of what he did, that we might be redeemed, or reckoning it on our account. Not that he was *redeemed* for us, as he *childishly* cavils, but that he did that whereby we are redeemed. Wherefore Christ is made of God *Righteousness* unto us in *such a way and manner*, as the nature of the thing doth require. Say some, it is *because by him we are justified*. Howbeit the Text says not, *That by him we are justified*, but he is of God *made Righteousness unto us*, which is not our *Justification*, but the ground cause and reason whereon we are justified. Righteousness is one thing, and Justification is another. Wherefore we must inquire how we come to have that *Righteousness* whereby we are justified. And this the same Apostle tells us plainly is by *Imputation*. *Blessed is the Man unto whom the Lord imputeth Righteousness. Rom. 4. 6.* It follows then, that Christ being made unto us of God *Righteousness*, can have no other sense, but that *his Righteousness is imputed unto us*, which is what this Text doth undeniably confirm.

2 Cor. 5. 21.

The Truth pleaded for, is yet more emphatically expressed. *For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him.* The Paraphrase of *Austine* on these words gives the sense of them. *Ipse peccatum ut nos justitia, non nostra sed Dei, non in nobis*  
*sed*

sed in ipso; sicut ipse peccatum non suum sed nostrum, non in se, sed in nobis constitutum. Enchirid. ad Laurent. cap. 4. And the words of Chrysostome upon this place, unto the same purpose, have been cited before at large.

To set out the greatness of the Grace of God in our Reconciliation by Christ, he describes him by that Paraphrasis ἢ μὴ γνόντα ἁμαρτίαν, who knew no sin, or who knew not sin. He knew sin in the notion or understanding of its nature; and he knew it experimentally in the effects which he underwent and suffered; but he knew it not, that is, was most remote from it, as to its commission or guilt. So that he knew no sin, is absolutely no more; but he did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth, as it is expressed 1 Pet. 2. 22. Or, that he was holy harmless undefiled separate from sinners. Heb. 7. 26. Howbeit, there is an Emphasis in the expression which is not to be neglected. For as it is observed by Chrysostome, as containing an auxesis (ἔχῃ ἢ μὴ ἁμαρτάνοντα μόνον (λέγει) ἀλλὰ ἢ μὴ δε γνόντα ἁμαρτίαν,) and by sundry learned persons after him. So those who desire to learn the excellency of the Grace of God herein, will have an impression of a sense of it on their minds, from this emphatical expression, which the Holy Ghost chose to make use of unto that end, and the observation of it is not to be despised.

He hath made him to be sin; that is, say many Expositors, A Sacrifice for sin. Quemadmodum oblatus est pro peccatis, non immerito peccatum factus dicitur, quia & bestia in lege quæ pro peccatis offerebatur, peccatum nuncupatur. Ambros. in locum. So the Sin and Trespas offering are often expressed by ἥμισυ and ἄμισυ, the sin and trespas or guilt. And I shall not contend about this Exposition, because that signified in it, is according unto the truth. But there is another more proper signification of the word; ἁμαρτία being put for ἁμαρτωλός, sin for a sinner; that is, Passively not Actively, not by Inhesion but Imputation. For this the phrase of speech, and:

and force of the *Antithesis* seem to require. Speaking of another sense, *Estius* himself on the place adds, as that which he approves. *Hic intellectus explicandus est per Commentarium Græcorum Chrysostomi & cæterorum; quia peccatum emphaticôs interpretantur magnum peccatorem; ac si dicat Apostolus, nostri causa tractavit eum tanquam ipsum peccatum, ipsum scelus, id est, tanquam hominem insigniter sceleratum, ut in quo posuerit iniquitates omnium nostrum.* And if this be the interpretation of the Greek Scholiasts, as indeed it is, *Luther* was not the first, who affirmed, That *Christ* was made the greatest sinner, namely, by Imputation. But we shall allow the former Exposition, provided, that the true notion of a *sin offering*, or *expiatory sacrifice* be admitted. For although this neither was, nor could consist in the transfusion of the inherent sin of the person unto the Sacrifice; yet did it so in the translation of the guilt of the sinner unto it, as is fully declared *Levit. 16. 20, 21.* Only I must say, that I grant this signification of the word to avoid contention. For whereas some say, that *ἁμαρτία* signifies *sin*, and a sacrifice for sin, it cannot be allowed. *חָטָא* in *Kal*, signifies to err, to sin, to transgress the Law of God: In *Piel* it hath a contrary signification, namely, to cleanse from sin, or to make expiation of sin. Hence *חָטָא* is most frequently used with respect unto its derivation from the first conjugation, and signifies *sin*, *transgression*, and *guilt*. But sometimes with respect unto the second, and then it signifies a *sacrifice for sin*, to make expiation of it. And so it is rendered by the LXX, sometimes by *ἱλασμός*, *Ezek. 44. 27.* sometimes *ἑξίλασμός*, *Exod. 30. 10. Ezek. 43. 23.* A *Propitiation*, a *Propitiatory Sacrifice*. Sometimes by *ἄγνισμα*, *Num. 19. 19.* and *ἀγνισμός*, *Purification* or *Cleaving*. But *ἁμαρτία* absolutely doth no where in any good Author, nor in the Scripture signify a *sacrifice for sin*, unless it may be allowed to do so in this one place alone. For whereas the LXX do render *חָטָא* constantly by *ἁμαρτία*,  
where

where it signifies sin ; where it denotes an Offering for sin, and they retain that word, they do it by *περὶ ἁμαρτίας*, an *Elliptical expression* which they invented for that which they knew *ἁμαρτία* of its self neither did, nor could signifie, *Lev.* 4. 3, 14, 32, 35. *Chap.* 5. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11. *Chap.* 6. 30. *Chap.* 8. 2. And they never omit the preposition, unless they name the Sacrifice, as *μὲρος τῆς ἁμαρτίας*. This is observed also by the Apostle the new Testament. For *twice* expressing the Sin-offering by this word, he useth that phrase *περὶ ἁμαρτίας* *Rom.* 8. 3. *Heb.* 10. 6. But no where useth *ἁμαρτία* to that purpose. If it be therefore of that signification in this place, it is so here alone. And whereas some think, that it answers *Piaculum* in the Latine, it is also a mistake, for the first signification of *ἁμαρτία* is confessed to be sin, and they would have it supposed that thence it is abused to signifie a *Sacrifice for sin*. But *Piaculum* is properly a Sacrifice, or any thing whereby sin is expiated or satisfaction is made for it. And very rarely it is abused to denote such a sin or crime as deserves publick expiation, and is not otherwise to be pardoned, so *Virgil*

*Distulit in seram commissa Piacula mortem.*

But we shall not contend about words, whilest we can agree about what is intended.

The only enquiry is, *how God did make him to be sin*. He hath made him to be sin ; so that an act of God is intended. And this is elsewhere expressed, by his *laying all our Iniquities upon him*, or causing them to meet on him, *Isa.* 53. 6. And this was by the Imputation of our sins unto him, as the sins of the people were put on *the Head of the Goat* that they should be no more theirs but his, so as that he was to carry them away from them. Take sin in either sense before mentioned, either of a Sacrifice for sin, or a Sinner, and the Im-

## 506 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

putation of the guilt of sin, antecedently unto the punishment of it, and in order thereunto, must be understood. For in every Sacrifice for sin there was an *imposition of sin* on the Beast to be offered antecedent unto the Sacrificing of it, and therein its suffering by death. Therefore in every offering for sin, he that brought it was to put his *hand on the head of it*, Lev. 1. 4. And that the transferring of the guilt of sin unto the offering, was thereby signified, is expressly declared, Lev. 16. 21. Wherefore if God made the Lord Christ a *Sin Offering* for us, it was by the Imputation of the *guilt of sin* unto him antecedently unto his suffering. Nor could any Offering be made for sin, without a *Typical translation* of the guilt of sin unto it. And therefore when an Offering was made for the expiation of the *guilt of an uncertain Murther*, those who were to make it by the Law, namely, the Elders of the City that were next unto the place where the man was slain, were not to offer a Sacrifice, because there was none to *confess guilt over it*, or to lay guilt upon it; But whereas the *neck of an Heifer* was to be stricken off, to declare the punishment due unto Blood, they were to *wash their hands* over it to testify their own Innocency, Deut. 21. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8. But a Sacrifice for sin without the *Imputation of guilt* there could not be. And if the word be taken in the *second sense*, namely, for a *sinner*, that is, by imputation, and in Gods esteem, it must be by the imputation of guilt. For none can in any sense be *denominated* a sinner from mere suffering. None indeed do say, that Christ was made sin, by the imputation of punishment unto him, which hath no proper sense; But they say, *sin was imputed unto him as unto punishment*, which is indeed to say, that the *guilt of sin* was imputed unto him. For the guilt of sin, is its respect unto punishment, or the obligation unto punishment which attends it. And that any one should be *punished for sin* without the *imputation of the guilt of it* unto him, is impossible; and were it possible would be unjust.

unjust. For it is not possible that any one should be punished for sin properly, and yet that sin be none of his. And if it be not his by *inhabitation*, it can be his no other way but by imputation. One may suffer on the occasion of the sin of another, that is no way made his, but he cannot be punished for it; for punishment is the recompence of sin on the account of its guilt. And were it possible, where is the Righteousness of punishing any one for that which no way belongs unto him? Besides, imputation of sin and punishing are distinct acts, the one preceding the other, and therefore the former is only of the *guilt of sin*; Wherefore the Lord Christ was made sin for us by the imputation of the guilt of our sins unto him.

But it is said, that if the *guilt of sin were imputed unto Christ, he is excluded from all possibility of merit, for he suffered but what was his due*; And so the whole work of Christ's satisfaction is subverted. This must be so, if God in judgment did reckon him guilty and a sinner. But there is an ambiguity in these expressions. If it be meant that God in judgment did reckon him guilty and a sinner *inherently* in his own person, no such thing is intended. But God laid *all our sins on him*, and in judgment spared him not, as unto what was due unto them. And so he suffered not what was *his due* upon his own account, but what was due unto our sin, which is impiety to deny; For if it were not so, he *died in vain*, and we are still in our sins. And as his *satisfaction* consists herein, nor could be without it, so doth it not in the least derogate from his *merit*. For supposing the infinite dignity of his person, and his voluntary susception of our sin to answer for it, which altered not his state and condition, his Obedience therein was highly meritorious.

In answer hereunto, and by vertue hereof, we are *made the Righteousness of God in him*. This was the end of his being made sin for us. And by whom are we so made: It is by

## 508 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

God himself, for it is *God that justifieth*, Rom. 8. 33. It is God who imputeth Righteousness; *Chap. 4. 6.* Wherefore it is the *Act of God* in our Justification that is intended. And to be made the *Righteousness of God*, is to be made *Righteous before God*, though emphatically expressed by the *abstract* for the *concrete*, to answer what was said before of Christ being made sin for us. To be made the Righteousness of God, is to be justified; and to be made it so *in him*, as he was made *sin for us*, is to be justified by the imputation of his Righteousness unto us, as our sin was imputed unto him.

No man can assign any other way whereby he was *made sin*, especially his being made so by God, but by Gods *laying all our Iniquities upon him*, that is, imputing our sin unto him. How then are we *made the Righteousness of God in him*? By the *infusion of an habit of Grace* say the Papists generally; Then by the Rule of the *Antithesis*, he must be *made sin for us*, by the infusion of an habit of sin, which would be a blasphemous imagination. By his *meriting, procuring, and purchasing Righteousness* for us say others: so possibly we might be made Righteous by him; but so we cannot be *made Righteous in him*. This can only be by his Righteousness, as we are in him, or united unto him. To be Righteous in him is to be Righteous with his Righteousness, as we are one mystical person with him. Wherefore

To be *made the Righteousness of God in Christ* as he was made sin for us, and because he was so, can be no other but to be *made Righteous by the imputation of his Righteousness unto us*, as we are in him or united unto him. All other expositions of these words are both *jejune* and forced, leading the mind from the *first, plain, obvious* sense of them.

Bellarmino excepts unto this interpretation, and it is his first argument against the *imputation* of the Righteousness of Christ. *lib. 2. cap. 7. de justificatione. Quinto resellitur, quoniam si vere nobis imputetur justitia Christi ut per eam justi habeamur*

*beamur ac censeremur, ac si proprie nostra esset intrinseca formalisq; justitia, profecto non minus justi haberi & censerì deberemus quam ipse Christus: proinde deberemus dici atq; haberi Redemptores, & salvatores mundi quod est absurdissimum.* So full an answer hath been returned hereunto, and that so frequently, by Protestant Divines, as that I would not have mentioned it, but that diverse among our selves are pleased to borrow it from him, and make use of it. For, say they, if the Righteousness of Christ be imputed unto us so as thereby to be made ours, then are we as Righteous as Christ himself, because we are Righteous with his Righteousness. *Ans. 1.* These things are plainly affirmed in the Scripture, that as unto our selves, and in our selves, we are all as an unclean thing, and all our Righteousness is as filthy Rags, Isa. 64. 6. on the one hand; And that in the Lord we have Righteousness and strength, in the Lord we are justified and do glory, Isa. 45. 24, 25. on the other: That if we say we have no sin, we deceive our selves; and yet that we are the Righteousness of God in Christ. Wherefore these things are consistent what ever cavils the wit of men can raise against them; And so they must be esteemed, unless we will comply with Socinus his rule of interpretation; namely, that where any thing seems repugnant unto our Reason, though it be never so expressly affirmed in the Scripture, we are not to admit of it, but find out some interpretation though never so forced, to bring the sense of the words unto our Reason. Wherefore ( 2 ) notwithstanding the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us, and our being made Righteous therewith, we are sinners in our selves, ( the Lord knows greatly so, the best of us ) and so cannot be said to be as Righteous as Christ, but only to be made Righteous in him who are sinners in our selves. ( 3 ) To say, that we are as Righteous as Christ, is to make a comparison between the personal Righteousness of Christ, and our personal Righteousness, if the comparison be of things of the same kind. But this is foolish

## 510 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

foolish and impious; For notwithstanding all our *personal Righteousness*, we are *sinful, he knew no sin*. And if the comparison be between Christs personal inherent Righteousness, and Righteousness imputed unto us, *inhabitation* and *imputation* being things of diverse kinds, it is fond and of no consequence. Christ was actively Righteous, we are passively so. When our sin was imputed unto him, he did not thereby become a *sinner* as we are, *actively* and inherently a sinner, but *passively* only, and in Gods estimation. As he was made *sin*, yet *knew no sin*, so we are made *Righteous*, yet are *sinful* in our selves. ( 4 ) The Righteousness of Christ as it was his *personally* was the Righteousness of the Son of God; in which respect it had in it self an *infinite perfection* and value; But it is *imputed unto us* only with respect unto our personal want, not as it was *satisfactory* for all; but as our Souls stand in need of it, and are made partakers of it. There is therefore no ground for any such comparison. ( 5 ) As unto what is added by *Bellarmino* that we may hereon be said to be *Redeemers and Saviours* of the World, the absurdity of the assertion falls upon himself, we are not concerned in it. For he affirms directly, *lib. I. de purgator. cap. 14.* That a *man may be rightly called his own Redeemer and Saviour*, which he endeavours to prove from *Dan. 4.* And some of his Church affirms that the Saints may be called the *Redeemers* of others, though improperly. But we are not concerned in these things; seeing from the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, it follows only that those unto whom it is imputed are *Redeemed and Saved*, not at all that they are *Redeemers and Saviours*. It belongs also unto the vindication of this Testimony to shew the vanity of his *Seventh Argument* in the same case, because that also is made use of by some among our selves, and it is this. *If by the Righteousness of Christ imputed unto us, we may be truly said to be Righteous and the Sons of God, then may Christ by the imputation of our unrighteousness*

ousness be said to be a sinner and a child of the Devil. Ans. (1) That which the Scripture affirms concerning the imputation of our sins unto Christ is, that *he was made sin for us*. This the Greek Expositors, *Chrysofome*, *Theophylact* and *Oecumenius* with many others take for a sinner. But all affirm, that denomination to be taken from *imputation* only; he had *sin imputed unto him*, and underwent the punishment due unto it, as we have Righteousness imputed unto us, and enjoy the benefit of it. (2) The imputation of sin unto Christ, did not carry along with it any thing of the *pollution* or filth of sin to be communicated unto him by *transfusion*, a thing impossible; so that no denomination can thence arise which should include in it, any respect unto them; A thought hereof is *impious* and dishonourable unto the Son of God. But his being *made sin* through the imputation of the guilt of sin, is his honour and glory. (3) The imputation of the sin of Fornicators, Idolaters, Adulterers, &c. such as the *Corinthians* were before their Conversion unto Christ, doth not on any ground bring him under a denomination from those sins. For they were so in themselves *actively, inherently, subjectively*, and thence were so called. But that he who *knew no sin*, voluntarily taking on him to answer for the *guilt of those sins*, which in him was an act of Righteousness and the highest Obedience unto God, should be said to be an *Idolater*, &c. is a *fond imagination*. The denomination of a sinner from sin inherent, actually committed, defiling the Soul, is a reproach, and significative of the utmost unworthiness; But even the *denomination of a sinner*, by the imputation of sin, without the least personal guilt or defilement, being undergone by him unto whom it is imputed, in an act of the highest Obedience, and tending unto the greatest glory of God, is highly honourable and glorious. But (4) The imputation of sin unto Christ, was *antecedent* unto any real union between him and sinners, whereon he took their sin

## 512 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

on him, as he would, and for what ends he would. But the *imputation* of his Righteousness unto Believers, is consequential in order of nature unto their union with him, whereby it becomes theirs in a *peculiar manner*; so as that there is not a parity of reason that he should be esteemed a sinner, as that they should be accounted Righteous. And ( 5 ) we acquiesce in this, that on *the imputation of sin* unto Christ, it is said that *God made him to be sin for us*, which he could not be, but thereby; and he was so by an act transient in its effects for a time only, that time wherein he underwent the punishment due unto it. But on the imputation of his Righteousness unto us, we are made the *Righteousness of God with an everlasting Righteousness* that abides ours always. ( 6 ) To be *a child of the Devil* by sin, is to do the *works of the Devil*, Joh. 8. 44. But the Lord Christ in taking our sins upon him, when imputed unto him, did the *work of God* in the highest act of holy Obedience, evidencing himself to be the *Son of God* thereby, and destroying the work of the Devil. So foolish and impious is it, to conceive that any absolute change of state or relation in him did ensue thereon.

That by the *Righteousness of God* in this place, our own Faith and Obedience according to the Gospel, as some would have it, are intended, is so *alien* from the scope of the place, and sense of the words, as that I shall not particularly examine it. The Righteousness of God is *revealed to Faith*, and received *by Faith*, and is not therefore Faith it self. And the force of the *Antithesis* is quite perverted by this conceit. For where is it in this, that he was made sin by the imputation of our sin unto him, and we are made Righteousness, by the imputation of our own Faith and Obedience unto our selves. But as Christ had no concern in sin, but as *God made him sin*, it was never in him inherently; so have we *no interest in this Righteousness*, it is not in us inherently, but only

is imputed unto us. Besides the act of God, in making us righteous, is his justifying of us. But this is not by the infusion of the habit of Faith and Obedience, as we have proved. And what act of God is intended by them, who affirm, That the Righteousness of God which we are made, is our own Righteousness, I know not. The *constitution of the Gospel Law* it cannot be; for that makes no Man righteous. And the *Persons of Believers* are the object of this act of God, and that as they are considered in Christ.

*Gal. 2. 16.*

The *Epistle* of the same Apostle unto the *Galatians*, is wholly designed unto the vindication of the Doctrine of Justification by Christ, without the Works of the Law, with the use and means of its improvement. The sum of his whole design is laid down in the repetition of his words unto the Apostle *Peter*, on the occasion of his failure, there related *Chap. 2. 86.* *Knowing that a Man is not justified by the Works of the Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed on Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law; for by the Works of the Law, shall no flesh be justified.*

That which he doth here assert, was such a known, such a fundamental principle of Truth among all Believers, that their conviction and knowledge of it, was the ground and occasion of their *transition*, and *passing over* from *Judaism* unto the *Gospel* and *Faith* in *Jesus Christ* thereby.

And in the words the Apostle determines that great inquiry, how, or by what means a Man is, or may be *justified* before God. The subject spoken of is expressed indefinitely; *A Man*, that is, *any Man*, a *Jew*, or a *Gentile*, a *Believer*, or an *Unbeliever*. The Apostle that spake, and they to whom he spake; the *Galatians* to whom he wrote, who also for

some time had believed and made Profession of the Gospel.

The answer given unto the question, is both *Negative* and *Positive*, both asserted with the highest assurance, and as the common faith of all Christians, but only those who had been carried aside from it by Seducers. He asserts, that *this is not, this cannot be* by the Works of the Law. What is intended by the *Law* in these disputations of the Apostle, hath been before declared and evinced. The Law of *Moses* is sometimes signally intended; not absolutely, but as it was the present instance of Mens cleaving unto the Law of Righteousness, and not submitting themselves thereon unto the Righteousness of God. But that the consideration of the *Moral Law*, and the duties of it, is in this Argument any where excepted by him, is a weak imagination; yea, it would except the *Ceremonial Law* it self; for the observation of it, whilest it was in force, was a duty of the Moral Law.

And the Works of the Law, are the Works and Duties of Obedience which this Law of God requires, performed in the manner that it prescribes, namely, in *Faith*, and out of love unto God above all, as hath been proved. To say, that the Apostle excludeth *only Works absolutely perfect*, which none ever did, or could perform since the entrance of sin, is to suppose him to dispute with great earnestness, and many Arguments against that which no Man asserted, and which he doth not once mention in all his discourse. Nor can he be said to exclude *only Works* that are looked on as *meritorious*, seeing he excludeth all Works that there may be no place for merit in our Justification, as hath also been proved. Nor did these *Galatians*, whom he writes unto, and convinceth them of their error, look for Justification from any Works, but such as they performed *then*, when they were Believers. So that all sorts of Works are excluded  
from

from any interest in our Justification. And so much weight doth the Apostle lay on this *exclusion of Works* from our Justification, as that he affirms, That the admittance of it overthrows the whole Gospel, *Ver. 21.* For, saith he, if *Righteousness be by the Law, then is Christ dead in vain*; and it is dangerous venturing on so sharp a fence.

Not this, or that sort of Works; not this, or that manner of the performance of them; not this, or that kind of interest in our Justification, but *all Works* of what sort soever, and however performed, are excluded from any *kind* of consideration in our Justification, as our Works or Duties of Obedience. For these *Galatians* whom the Apostle reproves, desired no more, but that in the Justification of a Believer, *Works of the Law, or Duties of Obedience*, might be admitted into a conjunction or copartnership with Faith in *Christ Jesus*. For that they would exclude *Faith in him*, and assign Justification unto Works without it, nothing is intimated, and it is a foolish imagination. In opposition hereunto he *positively* ascribes our Justification unto *Faith in Christ alone*: Not by Works but by Faith, is by Faith alone. That the Particles *ἐὰν μὴ* are not *exceptive*, but *adversative*, hath not only been undeniably proved by *Protestant Divines*, but is acknowledged by those of the *Roman Church*, who pretend unto any modesty in this Controversie. The words of *Estius* on this place deserve to be transcribed, *Nisi per fidem Jesu Christi sententiam reddit obscuram particula Nisi* (so the vulgar *Latin* renders *ἐὰν μὴ*, instead of *sed* or *sed tantum*) *quæ si proprie ut Latinis auribus sonat accipiatur, exceptionem facit ab eo quod præcedit, ut sensus sit hominem non justificari ex operibus Legis, nisi fides in Christum ad ea opera accedat, quæ si accesserit justificari eum per legis opera. Sed cum hic sensus Justificationem dividat, partim eam tribuens operibus legis, partim fidei Christi, quod est contra definitam & absolutam Apostoli sententiam, manifestum est,*

## 516 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

*interpretationem illam tanquam Apostolico sensui & scopo contrariam omnino repudiandam esse. Verum constat voculam (nisi) frequenter in Scripturis adversative sumi, ut idem valeat quod Sed tantum.* So he according to his usual candor and ingenuity.

It is not probable that we shall have an end of contending in this World, when Men will not acquiesce in such plain Determinations of Controversies given by the Holy Ghost himself.

The Interpretation of this place given, as the meaning of the Apostle, That Men *cannot be justified* by those Works which they *cannot perform*, that is, Works absolutely perfect; but may be so, and are so, by those which they can, and do perform, if not in their own strength, yet by the aid of Grace: And that Faith in *Christ Jesus* which the Apostle opposeth *absolutely unto all Works whatever*, doth include in it *all those Works* which he excludes, and that with respect unto that *end or effect* with respect whereunto they are excluded, cannot well be supposed to be suitable unto the mind of the Holy Ghost.

Ephes. 2. 8, 9, 10.

*For by Grace ye are saved through Faith, and that not of your selves, it is the gift of God; not of Works, lest any Man should boast. For we are his Workmanship created in Christ Jesus unto good Works, which God hath fore-ordained that we should walk in them.*

Unless it had seemed good unto the Holy Ghost to have expressed before hand all the *evasions* and *subterfuges*, which the wit of Man in after ages could invent, to pervert the Doctrine of our Justification before God, and to have rejected them, it is impossible they could have been more  
plainly

plainly prevented then they are in this context. If we may take a little unprejudiced consideration of it, I suppose what is affirmed will be evident.

It cannot be denied, but that the *design* of the Apostle from the beginning of this Chapter, unto the end of *Ver. 11*. is to declare the way whereby lost and condemned sinners come to be delivered, and translated out of that condition into an estate of *acceptance with God*, and eternal Salvation thereon: And therefore in the first place, he fully describeth their *natural state*, with their being obnoxious unto the wrath of God thereby. For such was the method of this Apostle, unto the Declaration of the Grace of God in any kind, he did usually, yea, constantly premise the consideration of our sin, misery, and ruine. Others now like not this method so well. Howbeit this hinders not, but that it was his. Unto this purpose he declares unto the *Ephessians*, *That they were dead in trespasses and sins*, expressing the power that sin had on their Souls, as unto *spiritual life*, and all the actions of it; but withal that they *lived and walked in sin*, and on all accounts were the *children of wrath*, or subject and liable unto eternal condemnation, *Ver. 1, 2, 3*. What such persons can do towards their own deliverance, there are many terms found out to express, all passing my understanding, seeing the intire design of the Apostle is to prove, that they can do *nothing at all*. But another cause, or other causes of it, he finds out, and that in direct express opposition unto any thing that may be done by our selves unto that end. ὁ ὁ θεὸς πλείστον ὧν ἐν ἐλέει *Ver. 4*. It is not a work for us to undertake; it is not what we can contribute any thing unto: *But God, who is rich in mercy*. The *adversative* includes an opposition, unto every thing on our part, and incloseth the whole work to God. Would Men have rested on this Divine Revelation, the Church of God had been free from many of those perverse opinions and wrangling disputes, which it hath been

## 518 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

been pestered withal. But they will not so easily part with thoughts of some kind of interest in being the Authors of their own happiness. Wherefore two things we may observe in the Apostles assignation of the causes of our deliverance from a state of sin, and acceptance with God.

1. That he assigns the whole of this work absolutely unto *Grace, Love, and Mercy*, and that with an exclusion of the consideration of any thing on our part, as we shall see immediately, *Ver. 5, 8.*

2. He *magnifies this Grace* in a marvellous manner. For (1.) He expresseth it by all names and titles whereby it is signified as ἔλεος, ἀγάπη, χάρις, χριστός, *Mercy, Love, Grace, and Kindness*. For he would have us to look only unto *Grace* herein. (2.) He ascribes such Adjuncts, and gives such *Epithets*, unto that Divine Mercy and Grace which is the sole cause of our deliverance in and by Jesus Christ, as render it singular, and herein solely to be adored. Πλάσιον ἐν ἐλέει, διὰ τὴν πολλὴν ἀγάπην--- ὑπερβάλλον πλεονεξίας τῆς χάριτος. *Rich in Mercy. Great Love* wherewith he loved us. The *exceeding riches of his grace, in his kindness, Ver. 4, 5, 6, 7.* It cannot reasonably be denied, but that the Apostle doth design deeply to affect the Mind and Heart of Believers with a sense of the *Grace and Love* of God in Christ, as the only cause of their Justification before God. I think no words can express those conceptions of the Mind, which this Representation of *Grace* doth suggest. Whether they think it any part of their duty to be like minded, and comply with the Apostle in this design, who scarce ever mention the *Grace of God*, unless it be in a way of diminution from its efficacy, and unto whom such Ascriptions unto it as are here made by him, are a matter of contempt, is not hard to judge.

But it will be said these are good words indeed, but they are only general; there is nothing of *Argument* in all this adoring of the *Grace of God* in the work of our Salvation.

It

It may be so it seems to many. But yet to speak plainly, there is to me more Argument in this *one consideration*, namely, of the Ascription made in this cause unto the Grace of God in this place, then in an hundred *sophisms*, suited neither unto the expressions of the Scripture, nor the experience of them that do believe. He that is possessed with a due apprehension of the Grace of God, as here represented, and under a sense that it was therein, the design of the Holy Ghost, to render it glorious, and alone to be trusted unto, will not easily be induced to concern himself in those *additional supplies* unto it from our own works and obedience, which some would suggest unto him. But we may yet look further into the words.

The *case* which the Apostle states, the inquiry which he hath in hand, whereon he determineth as to the Truth, wherein he instructs the *Ephesians*, and in them the whole Church of God, is, *How a lost condemned sinner may come to be accepted with God*, and thereon saved. And this is the sole inquiry wherein we are, or intend in this controversie to be concerned. Further we will not proceed, either upon the invitation or provocation of any. Concerning this, his position and determination is, *That we are saved by Grace*.

This first he occasionally interposeth in his enumeration of the benefits we receive by Christ, *Ver. 5*. But not content therewith, he again directly asserts it, *Ver. 8*. in the same words; for he seems to have considered how slow Men would be in the admittance of this Truth, which at once deprives them of all boastings in themselves.

What it is that he intends by our *being saved*, must be inquired into. It would not be prejudicial unto, but rather advance the truth we plead for, if by our *being saved*, eternal Salvation were intended. But that cannot be the sense of it in this place, otherwise than as that Salvation is included in the causes of it, which are effectual in this life.

520 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

Nor do I think that in that expression, *By Grace ye are saved*, our Justification only is intended, although it be so principally. *Conversion* unto God and *Sanctification*, are also included therein, as is evident from *Ver. 5, 6*. And they are no less of sovereign Grace, than is our Justification it self. But the Apostle speaks of what the *Ephesians* being now Believers, and by vertue of their being so, were made partakers of in this life. This is manifest in the whole context. For having in the beginning of the Chapter described their condition, what it was in common with all the Posterity of *Adam* by nature, *Ver. 1, 2, 3*. He moreover declares their condition in particular, in opposition to that of the *Jews*, as they were *Gentiles, Idolaters, Atheists*, *Ver. 11, 12*. Their present delivery by *Jesus Christ* from this whole miserable state and condition, that which they were under in common with all mankind, and that which was a peculiar aggravation of its misery in themselves, is that which he intends by their being *saved*. That which was principally designed in the description of this state is, That therein and thereby they were liable unto the wrath of God, guilty before him, and obnoxious unto his judgment. This he expresseth in the declaration of it. *Ver. 3*. Answerable unto that method, and those grounds, he every where proceeds on in declaring the Doctrine of Justification.

*Rom. 3. 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24. Tit. 3. 3, 4, 5*. From this state they had deliverance by *Faith in Christ Jesus*. For unto as many as received him, power is given to be the sons of God. *Joh. 1. 12*. He that believeth on him, is not condemned, that is, he is saved, in the sense of the Apostle in this place. *Joh. 3. 15*. He that believeth on the Son of God hath everlasting life, (is saved) but he that believeth not, the wrath of God abideth on him. *Ver. 36*. And in this sense, *saved*, and *salvation*, are frequently used in the Scripture. Besides he gives us so full a description of the Salvation, which he intends from *Ver. 13*.  
unto

unto the end of the Chapter, that there can be no doubt of it. It is our being *made nigh* by the Blood of Christ, *Ver.* 13. Our *Peace with God* by his death, *Ver.* 14, 15. Our *Reconciliation* by the Blood of the Cross, *Ver.* 16. Our *access unto God*, and all Spiritual priviledges thereon depending, *Ver.* 18, 19, 20, &c.

Wherefore the inquiry of the Apostle and his determination thereon, is concerning the *causes of our Justification* before God. This he declares and fixeth both *Positively* and *Negatively*. *Positively* (1.) In the supream moving Cause on the part of God. This is that free sovereign *Grace* and *Love* of his, which he illustrates by its adjuncts and properties before mentioned. (2.) In the *meritorious procuring cause* of it, which is Jesus Christ in the Work of his Mediation, as the Ordinance of God for the rendring this Grace effectual unto his Glory, *Ver.* 7, 13, 16. (3.) In the only means or *instrumental cause* on our part, which is *Faith*. *By Grace are ye saved through Faith*, *Ver.* 8. And lest he should seem to derogate any thing from the Grace of God, in asserting the necessity and use of Faith, he adds, That *Epanorthosis*, and *that not of our selves, it is the gift of God*. The communication of this Faith unto us is no less of Grace then is the Justification which we obtain thereby. So hath he secured the whole Work unto the Grace of God through Christ, wherein we are interested by Faith alone.

But not content herewith, he describes this work *Negatively*, or adds an exclusion of what might be pretended to have a concernment therein. And therein three things are stated distinctly. (1.) *What* it is he so excludes. (2.) The *Reason* whereon he doth so. (3.) The *confirmation* of that *Reason*, wherein he obviates an objection that might arise thereon.

1. That which he excludes is *Works, not of Works*, *Ver.* 9. And what works he intends at least principally, himself

## 522 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

declares. *Works*, say some, *of the Law*, the Law of *Moses*. But what concernment had these *Ephesians* therein, that the Apostle should inform them, that they were not justified by those works. They were never *under* that Law, never sought for Righteousness by it, nor had any respect unto it, but only, that they were delivered from it. But it may be he intends only *Works wrought in the strength of our own natural abilities*, without the aids of Grace, and before believing. But what were the Works of these *Ephesians* antecedent unto believing, he before and afterwards declares. For *being dead in trespasses and sins, they walked according to the course of this World in the lusts of the flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh, and of the mind, Ver. 1, 2, 3.* It is certain enough that these works have no influence into our Justification; and no less certain, that the Apostle had no reason to exclude them from it, as though any could pretend to be *advantaged by them*, in that which consisteth in a *deliverance from them*. Wherefore the Works here excluded by the Apostle, are those works which the *Ephesians* now performed, when they were Believers, *quickned with Christ*; even the Works which God hath fore-ordained, that we should walk in them, as he expressly declared, *Ver. 10.* And these Works he *excludeth* not only in opposition unto *Grace*, but in opposition unto *Faith* also. *Through Faith not of Works.* Wherefore he doth not only reject their *merit*, as inconsistent with *Grace*, but their *cointerest* on our part with, or subsequent interest unto *Faith*, in the Work of Justification before God.

*If we are saved by Grace through Faith in Christ exclusively unto all works of Obedience whatever, then cannot such works be the whole or any part of our Righteousness unto the Justification of life. Wherefore another Righteousness we must have or perish for ever. Many things I know are here offered, and many distinctions coined to retain some interest of Works in our*  
 Justi-

Justification before God ; But whether it be the safest way to trust unto them, or unto this plain, express, Divine Testimony, will not be hard for any to determine when they make the case their own.

2. The Apostle adds a Reason of this *exclusion of Works, not of Works lest any one should boast*. God hath ordained the order and method of our Justification by Christ in the way expressed, that no man might have ground, reason, or occasion to glory or *boast* in or of himself. So it is expressed, *I Cor. 1. 21, 30, 31. Rom. 3. 32*. To exclude all *glorying or boasting* on our part, is the design of God. And this consists in an *ascription* of something unto our selves, that is not in others, in order unto Justification. And it is Works alone that can administer any occasion of this boasting ; *For if Abraham were justified by Works, he had whereof to glory, Rom. 4. 2*. And it is excluded alone by the *Law of Faith, Rom. 3. 27*. For the nature and use of Faith, is to find Righteousness in another. And this *boasting*, all Works are apt to beget in the minds of men, if applied unto Justification. And where there is any boasting of this nature, the design of God towards us in this Work of his Grace, is frustrated what lieth in us.

That which I principally insist on from hence, is, that there are no *boundaries* fixed in Scripture unto the interest of Works in Justification, so as *no boasting* should be included in them. The *Papists* make them *meritorious* of it, at least of our second Justification as they call it. This, say some, ought not to be admitted ; for it includeth *boasting*. *Merit* and *boasting* are inseparable. Wherefore say others, they are only *causa sine qua non*, they are the condition of it ; or they are our *Evangelical Righteousness* before God whereon we are *Evangelically* justified, or they are a *subordinate Righteousness*, whereon we obtain an interest in the Righteousness of Christ ; or are comprized in the *condition* of the new Co-

venant whereby we are justified, or are *included in Faith*, being the form of it, or of the *essence* of it, one way or other: For herein men express themselves in great variety. But so long as our Works are hereby asserted in order unto our Justification; how shall a man be certain that they do not include *boasting*; or, that they do express the true sense of these words, *not of works lest any man should boast*. There is *some kind of Ascription* unto our selves in this matter, which is *boasting*. If any shall say, that they know well enough what they do, and know that they do not *boast* in what they ascribe unto Works, I must say that in general I cannot admit it. For the *Papists* affirm of themselves, that they are most remote from *boasting*; yet I am very well satisfied that *boasting and merit* are inseparable. The question is not what men think they do, but what Judgment the Scripture passeth on what they do. And if it be said, that what is in us, is also of the Grace and Gift of God, and is so acknowledged; which excludes all *boasting* in our selves, I say it was so by the *Pharisee*, and yet was he an horrible boaster. Let them therefore be supposed to be wrought *in us* in what way men please, if they be also wrought *by us*, and so *be the Works of Righteousness, which we have done*, I fear their Introduction into our Justification, doth include *boasting* in it, because of this assertion of the Apostle, *not of Works lest any man should boast*. Wherefore because this is a dangerous point, unless men can give us the direct, plain indisputable bounds of the Introduction of our Works into our Justification, which cannot include *boasting* in it, it is the safest course utterly to exclude them, wherein I see no danger of any mistake in these words of the Holy Ghost, *not of Works lest any man should boast*. For if we should be unadvisedly seduced into this *boasting*, we should lose all the benefit which we might otherwise expect by the Grace of God.

3. The Apostle gives another reason why it cannot be of Works, and withal *obviates an Objection*, which might arise from what he had declared, v. 10. *For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good Works, which God hath before ordained, that we should walk in them.* And the force of his Reason, which the *causal Conjunction* intimates the Introduction of, consists in this: That all *good Works*, those concerning which he treats, Evangelical Works, are the *Effects of the Grace of God* in them that are in Christ Jesus, and so are truly justified antecedently in order of nature unto them: But that which he principally designed in these words, was that which he is still mindful of, wherever he treats of this Doctrine, namely to *obviate an Objection* that he foresaw some would make against it, and that is this; *If good Works be thus excluded from our Justification before God, then of what use are they? we may live as we list, utterly neglect them, and yet be justified.* And this very Objection do some men continue to manage, with great vehemency against the same Doctrine. We meet with nothing in this cause more frequently than that if our Justification before God be not of Works some way or other, if they be not *antecedaneously* required thereunto, if they are not a *previous condition* of it, then there is no need of them: Men may safely live in an utter neglect of all Obedience unto God. And on this *Theme* men are very apt to enlarge themselves, who otherwise give no great evidences of their own Evangelical Obedience. To me it is marvellous, that they heed not unto what party they make an Accession in the management of this Objection; namely unto that of them, who were the *Adversaries of the Doctrine of Grace* taught by the Apostle. It must be elsewhere considered. For the present I shall say no more, but that if the answer here given by the Apostle be not satisfactory unto them, if the Grounds and Reasons of the necessity and use of good Works here declared, be not judged by them sufficient

526 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

cient to establish them in their proper place and order, I shall not esteem my self obliged to attempt their further satisfaction.

Phil. 3. 8, 9.

*Yea doubtless, and I account all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledg of Christ Jesus my Lord, for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ, and be found in him not having mine own Righteousness which is of the Law, but that which is through the Faith of Christ, the Righteousness which is of God by Faith.*

This is the last Testimony which I shall insist upon, and although it be of great importance, I shall be the more brief in the consideration of it, because it hath been lately pleaded and vindicated by another, whereunto I do not expect any tolerable reply. For what hath since been attempted by one, it is of no weight. He is in this matter οὐτε τιμιον οὐτε τεταρον. And the things that I would observe from and concerning this Testimony, may be reduced into the ensuing heads.

1. That which the Apostle designs from the beginning of this Chapter, and in these Verses, in an especial manner to declare what it is on the account whereof we are accepted with God, and have thereon cause to rejoyce. This he fixeth in general in an interest in and participation of Christ by Faith in opposition unto all *Legal Privileges* and advantages, wherein the Jews whom he reflected upon did boast and rejoyce, *Rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh*, Vers. 3.

2. He supposeth that unto that *Acceptance* before God wherein we are to Rejoyce, there is a *Righteousness* necessary; And to whatever it be is the sole ground of that acceptance. And to give evidence hereunto,

3. He

3. He declares that there is a *twofold Righteousness* that may be pleaded and trusted unto to this purpose. (1.) *Our own Righteousness which is of the Law.* (2.) *That which is through the Faith of Christ*; the Righteousness which is of God by Faith. These he asserts to be *opposite* and inconsistent as unto the end of our Justification and acceptance with God; *Not having mine own Righteousness, but that which is, &c.* And an intermediate Righteousness between these he acknowledgeth not.

4. Placing the instance in himself, he declares emphatically (so as there is scarce a greater *μήτος*, or vehemency of Speech, in all his Writings,) which of those it was that he adhered unto, and placed his confidence in. And in the handling of this Subject, there were some things which engaged his *holy mind* into an *earnestness* of expression in the exaltation of one of these, namely of the Righteousness which is of God by Faith, and the depression of the other, or his own Righteousness. As,

1. This was the *turning point*, whereon he and others had forsaken their *Judaism* and betaken themselves unto the Gospel. This therefore was to be secured as the main instance, wherein the greatest controversy that ever was in the world was debated. So he expresseth it, *Gal. 2. 15. 16. We who are Jews by nature and not Sinners of the Gentiles, knowing that a man is not justified by the Works of the Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law.* (2.) Hereon there was great *opposition* made unto this Doctrine by the *Jews* in all places and in many of them the minds of multitudes were *turned off from the Truth* (which the most are generally prone unto in this case) and perverted from the simplicity of the Gospel. This greatly affected his *holy Soul*, and he takes notice of it in most of his Epistles. (3.) The *weight* of the Doctrine it self, with that *unwil-*  
lingness,

*lingness* which is in the minds of men by nature to embrace it, as that which lays the axe to the root of all Spiritual Pride, elation of Mind, and Self-pleasing whatever, whence innumerable *Subterfuges* have been, and are sought out to avoid the efficacy of it, and to keep the Souls of men from that universal resignation of themselves unto sovereign Grace in Christ, which they have naturally such an averſation unto, did also affect him. (4.) He had himself been a *great Sinner* in the days of his ignorance by a *peculiar opposition unto Christ* and the Gospel; This he was deeply sensible of; and therewithal of the excellency of the Grace of God and the Righteousness of Christ, whereby he was delivered. And men must have some experience of what *he felt in himself* as unto Sin and Grace, before they can well understand his expressions about them.

5. Hence it was, that in many other places of his Writings, but in this especially, he treats of these things with a greater earnestness and vehemency of Spirit than ordinary. Thus (1.) On the part of *Christ* whom he would *exalt* he mentioneth not only the *knowledg of him*, but τὸ ὑπερέχον τῆς γνώσεως, *The excellency of the knowledg of Christ Jesus my Lord*, with an Emphasis in every word; And those other redoubled expressions, *all loss for him*, that *I may win him*, that *I may be found in him*, that *I may know him*, all argue the working of his affections under the Conduct of Faith and Truth unto an acquiescency in Christ alone, as all and in all. Somewhat of this frame of mind is necessary unto them that would believe his Doctrine. Those who are utter strangers unto the one, will never receive the other. (2.) In his expression of all other other things that are *our own*, that are not Christ, whether *Priviledges* or *Duties*, however good, useful, excellent, they may be in themselves, yet in Comparison of *Christ* and his Righteousness, and with respect unto the end of our standing before God, and acceptance with him, with the  
same

same vehemency of Spirit he casts *contempt upon*, calling them *σκύβαλα*, *Dogs meat* to be left for them whom he calleth *Dogs*, that is, *evil Workers, of the Concision*; or the wicked Jews who adhered pertinaciously unto the Righteousness of the *Law*, v. 2. This account of the earnestness of the Apostle in this Argument, and the warmth of his Expressions, I thought meet to give as that which gives light into the whole of his design.

6. The question being thus stated, the enquiry is what any person who *desires acceptance with God*, or a Righteousness whereon he may be justified before him, ought to betake himself unto. One of the ways proposed he must close with all. Either he must *comply with the Apostle* in his Resolution to reject all his *own Righteousness*, and to betake himself unto the *Righteousness of God*, which is by Faith in Christ Jesus alone, or find out for himself, or get some to find out for him, some *exceptions* unto the *Apostles conclusion*, or some distinctions that may prepare a reserve for his own works, one way or other in his justification before God. Here every one must chuse for himself. In the mean time, we thus argue. If *our own Righteousness*, and the *Righteousness which is of God by Faith*; or that which is through the Faith of Christ Jesus (namely, the Righteousness which God imputeth unto us, *Rom. 4. 6.* Or the abundance of Grace and the gift of Righteousness thereby, which we receive, *Rom. 5. 17.*) are *opposite*, and *inconsistent* in the Work of Justification before God, then are we justified by Faith alone through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto us. The consequence is plain from the removal of all other ways, causes, means, and conditions of it, as inconsistent with it. But the antecedent is expressly the Apostles; *Not my own, but that of God.* Again,

That whereby, and wherewith we are *found in Christ*, is that whereby alone we are justified before God; for to be

530 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

*found in Christ*, expresseth the state of the person that is to be justified before God: Whereunto is opposed to be *found in our selves*. And according unto these different states doth the judgment of God pass concerning us. And as for those who are found in themselves, we know what will be their portion. But in Christ we are found by Faith alone.

All manner of evasions are made use of by some, to escape the force of this Testimony. It is said in general, That no sober minded Man can imagine the Apostle did not desire to be found in Gospel Righteousness, or, *That by his own Righteousness he meant that*. For it is that alone can intitle us unto the Benefits of Christs Righteousness. *Nollem Dicitum*. (1.) The censure is too severe to be cast on *all Protestant Writers* without exception, who have expounded this place of the Apostle; and all others, except some few of late, influenced by the heat of the Controversie wherein they are engaged. (2.) If the *Gospel Righteousness* intended be his own *Personal Righteousness* and *Obedience*, there is some want of consideration in affirming, That he did not desire *to be found in it*. That wherein *we are found*, thereon are we to be judged; to be found *in our own Evangelical Righteousness* before God, is to enter into judgment with God thereon, which those who understand any thing aright of God and themselves, will not be free unto. And to make this to be the meaning of his words, I desire not to be found in my own Righteousness which is after the Law, but I desire to be found in mine own Righteousness which is according to the Gospel; whereas, as they are *his own inherent Righteousness*, they are both the same, doth not seem a proper interpretation of his words, and it shall be immediately disproved. (3.) That our *Personal Gospel Righteousness*, doth intitle us unto the Benefits of Christs Righteousness, that is, as unto our Justification before God, is *gratis dicitum*, not one Testimony of Scripture can be produced that gives the least countenance unto such

an assertion. That it is contrary unto many express Testimonies, and inconsistent with the *freedom of the Grace of God in our Justification*, as proposed in the Scripture, hath been proved before. Nor do any of the places which assert the necessity of obedience and good Works in Believers, that is, Justified Persons unto Salvation, any way belong unto the Proof of this Assertion; or, in the least express, or intimate any such thing. And in particular, the Assertion of it is expressly contradictory unto that of the Apostle, *Tit. 3. 4, 5*. But I forbear, and proceed to the consideration of the *special answers*, that are given unto this testimony, especially those of *Bellarmino*, whereunto I have as yet, seen nothing added with any pretence of Reason in it.

1. Some say, that by his *own Righteousness* which the Apostle rejects, he intends only his Righteousness *en vóux*, or by the Works of the Law. But this was only an outward external Righteousness, consisting in the observation of Rites and Ceremonies, without respect unto the inward frame or obedience of the heart. But this is an *impious imagination*. The Righteousness which is by the Law, is the Righteousness which the Law requires, and those works of it, which if a Man do, he shall live in them; for the doers of the Law shall be justified, *Rom. 2. 16*. Neither did God ever give any Law of Obedience unto Man, but what obliged him to love the Lord his God with all his heart, and all his soul. And it is so far from being true, That God by the Law required an external Righteousness only, that he frequently condemns it as an abomination to him, where it is alone.

2. Others say, that it is the Righteousness whatever it be, which he had during his *Pharisaism*. And although he should be allowed in that state, to have lived in all good Conscience, instantly to have served God day and night, and to have had respect as well unto the internal, as the external Works of the Law; yet all these Works being before Faith, before

## 532 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

Conversion to God, may be, and are to be rejected as unto any concurrence unto our Justification. But Works wrought in Faith, by the aid of Grace, *Evangelical Works* are of another consideration, and together with Faith, are the condition of Justification.

*Ans. 1.* That in the matter of our *Justification* the Apostle opposeth *Evangelical Works*, not only unto the Grace of God, but also unto the Faith of Believers, was proved in the consideration of the foregoing Testimony.

2. He makes no such distinction, as that pretended, namely, *That Works are of two sorts*; whereof *one* is to be excluded from any interest in our Justification, but not the *other*; neither doth he any where else, treating of the same subject, intimate any such distinction; but on the contrary, declares that use of all Works of Obedience in them that believe, which is exclusive of the supposition of any such distinction. but he directly expresth, in this rejection, *his own Righteousness*, that is, *his Personal Inherent Righteousness* whatever it be, and however it be wrought.

3. He makes a plain distinction of his own *twofold estate*, namely, that of his *Judaism* which he was in before his Conversion, and that which he had by Faith in Christ Jesus. In the first state, he considers the *priviledges* of it, and declares what judgment he made concerning them upon the Revelation of Jesus Christ unto him, ἠγνοῦσαι, saith he, referring unto the time past, namely, at his first conversion. I considered them with all the advantages, gain, and reputation, which I had by them, but rejected them all for Christ, because the esteem of them and continuance in them as *priviledges*, was inconsistent with Faith in Christ Jesus. Secondly, he proceeds to give an account of himself and his thoughts, as unto his present condition. For it might be supposed, that although he had parted with all *his legal priviledges* for Christ; yet now being united unto him by Faith, he had something  
of

of his *own*, wherein he might rejoyce, and on the account whereof he might be accepted with God (the thing inquired after) or else he had parted with all for nothing. Wherefore he who had no design to make any reserves of what he *might glory in*, plainly declares what his judgment is concerning all his *present Righteousness*, and the ways of obedience which he was now engaged in, with respect unto the ends inquired after, *Ver. 8.* Ἀλλὰ μενῶν γε καὶ ἡγῶμαι. The bringing over of what was affirmed before concerning his *Judaical priviledges* into this Verse, is an effect of a very superficial consideration of the context. For (1.) there is a plain ἀνξισις in these words Ἀλλὰ μενῶν γε καὶ. He could not more plainly express the heightning of what he had affirmed by a Proceed unto other things, or the consideration of himself *in another state*. But moreover, beyond what I have already asserted. (2.) The change of the time expressed by ἡγῶμαι respects what was past, into ἡγῶμαι wherein he hath respect only unto what was present, not what he had before rejected and forsaken, makes evident his progress unto the consideration of things of another nature. Wherefore unto the rejection of all his former *Judaical priviledges*, he adds his judgment concerning *his own present Personal Righteousness*. But whereas it might be objected, That rejecting all both before and after conversion, he had nothing left to *rejoyce in*, to *glory in*, to give him acceptance with God; he assures us of the contrary, namely, that he found all these things in Christ, and the Righteousness of God which is by Faith. He is therefore in these words, *Not having mine own Righteousness, which is by the Law;* so far from intending only the Righteousness which he had before his Conversion, as that he intends it not at all.

The words of *Davenant* on this passage of the Apostle, being in my judgment not only *sober*, but *weighty* also, I shall transcribe them. *Hic docet Apostolus quenam illa justitia*

## 534 *The nature of Justification, as declared*

*fit qua nitendum coram Deo, nimirum quæ per fidem apprehenditur, at hæc imputata est : Causam etiam ostendit cur jure nostra fiat, nimirum quia nos Christi sumus & in Christo comperimur ; quia igitur insiti sumus in corpus ejus & coalescimus cum illo in unam personam, ideo ejus justitia nostra reputatur.* De Justif. Habit. cap.38. For whereas some begin to interpret our being in Christ, and being found in him ; so as to intend no more but our profession of the Faith of the Gospel, *The Faith of the Catholick Church* in all ages concerning the Mystical Union of Christ and Believers, is not to be blown away with a few empty words and unproved Assertions.

The Answer therefore is full and clear unto the general Exception, namely, that the Apostle rejects our Legal, but not our Evangelical Righteousness. For (1.) the Apostle rejects, disclaims, disowns nothing at all, not the one, nor the other *absolutely*, but in comparison of Christ, and with respect unto the especial end of Justification before God, or a Righteousness in his sight: (2.) In that sense he rejects all our own Righteousness, but our Evangelical Righteousness, in the sense pleaded for, is our own, inherent in us, performed by us. (3.) Our Legal Righteousness, and our Evangelical, so far as an Inherent Righteousness is intended, are the same, and the different ends and use of the same Righteousness, is alone intended in that distinction, so far as it hath sense in it. That which in respect of Motives unto it, the ends of it, with the especial causes of its acceptance with God, is Evangelical, in respect of its original Prescription, Rule, and Measure, is Legal. When any can instance in any Act or Duty, in any habit or effect of it, which are not required by that Law which injoyns us to love the Lord our God, with all our heart, soul, and mind, and our neighbor as our selves ; they shall be attended unto. (4.) The Apostle in this case rejects all the Works of Righteousness which we have done, Tit. 3. 5. But our Evangelical Righteousness consisteth in  
the

the Works of Righteousness which we do. (5.) He disclaims all that is *our own*. And if the *Evangelical Righteousness* intended be our own, he sets up another in opposition unto it; and which therefore is not *our own*, but as it is imputed unto us. And I shall yet add some other reasons which render this pretence useles, or shew the falseness of it.

1. Where the Apostle doth not distinguish or limit what he speaks of, what ground have we to distinguish or limit his Assertions. *Not by Works*, saith he, sometimes *absolutely*, sometimes *the Works of Righteousness which we have done*; that is, not by *some sort of Works* say those who plead the contrary: But by what warrant? (2.) The Works which they pretend to be excluded, as wherein our *own Righteousness* that is rejected doth consist, are Works wrought without Faith, without the aid of Grace: But these are not *good Works*, nor can any be denominated *righteous* from them, nor is it any Righteousness that consists in them alone. For without Faith it is impossible to please God: And to what purpose should the Apostle exclude *evil works* and *hypocritical*, from our Justification? Who ever imagined, that any could be justified with respect unto them. There might have been some pretence for this gloss, had the Apostle said his own Works; but whereas he rejects his own Righteousness, to restrain it unto such Works as are not righteous, as will denominate none righteous, as are no Righteousness at all, is most absurd. (3.) *Works wrought in Faith*, if applied unto our Justification, do give occasion unto, or include *boasting*, more then any others, as being better and more praise worthy then they. (4.) The Apostle elsewhere excludes from Justification the Works that *Abraham* had done when he had been a Believer many years; and the Works of *David* when he described the Blessedness of a Man by the forgiveness of sins. (5.) The state of the Question which he handles



Apostle, *Rom. 9. 31. Chap. 10. 5.* In both places he declares the Righteousness of the Law to be the Righteousness that the Law requires. (2.) The Works which he excludes, he calls *the Works of Righteousness that we have done, Tit. 3. 5.* which are the Works that the Law requires. Unto the second, I say (1.) That the substance of it, is, That the Apostle should profess that *I desire to be found in Christ, not having my own Righteousness, but having my own Righteousness*; for Evangelical Inherent Righteousness was properly his own. And I am sorry that some should apprehend that the Apostle in these words did desire to be found in his own Righteousness in the presence of God, in order unto his Justification. For nothing can be more contrary, not only unto the perpetual tenor and design of all his discourses, on this subject, but also unto the Testimony of all other holy Men in the Scripture, to the same purpose, as we have proved before. And I suppose there are very few true Believers at present, whom they will find to comply and joyn with them in this desire of *being found in their own Personal Evangelical Righteousness*, or the Works of Righteousness which they have done, in their tryal before God, as unto their Justification. We should do well to read our own hearts, as well as the Books of others in this matter. (2.) The Righteousness which is of God by Faith, is not our own Obedience or Righteousness, but that which is *opposed* unto it: That which God imputes unto us, *Rom. 4. 6.* That which we receive by way of gift, *Rom. 5. 17.* (3.) That by the Righteousness which is by the Faith of Christ Jesus our own *Inherent Righteousness* is not intended, is evident from hence, That the Apostle excludes all his own Righteousness, as, and when he was found in Christ, that is, what ever he had done as a Believer. And if there be not an opposition in these words, between a Righteousness that is our own, and that which is not our own, I know not in

## 538 The nature of Justification, as, &c.

what words it can be expressed. Unto the third I say, (1.) The Apostle doth not, nor do we say, that he doth, call our Inherent Righteousness *dung*, but only that he *accounts* it so. (2.) He doth not *account it so absolutely*, which he is most remote from, but only in comparison with Christ. (3.) He doth not esteem it so in it self, but only as unto his trust in it, with respect unto one especial end, namely, our Justification before God. (4.) The Prophet *Isaiah* in the same respect, terms all our Righteousness *filthy rags*, Chap. 64. 6. And בוגר עריו is an expression of as much contempt, as σωβαρα.

5. Some say all Works are excluded as *meritorious* of *Grace, Life, and salvation*, but not as the condition of our Justification before God. But (1.) what ever the Apostle excludes, he doth it *absolutely*, and with all respects, because he sets up something else in opposition unto it. (2.) There is no ground left for any such distinction in this place: For all that the Apostle requires unto our Justification is, (1.) That we be *found in Christ*, not in our selves. (2.) That we *have the Righteousness of God*, not our own. (3.) That we be made partakers of this Righteousness by Faith, which is the substance of what we plead for.

## CHAP. XIX.

*Objections against the Doctrine of Justification, by the imputation of the Righteousness of Christ. Personal Holiness and Obedience not obstructed, but furthered by it.*

THAT which remaineth to put an issue to this Discourse, is the consideration of some things, that in *general* are laid in objection against the truth pleaded for. Many things of that nature we have occasionally met withal, and already removed. Yea, the principal of those which at present are most insisted on. The Testimonies of Scripture urged by those of the *Roman Church* for Justification by works, have all of them so fully and frequently been answered by *Protestant Divines*, that it is altogether needless to insist again upon them, unless they had received some new inforcement, which of late they have not done. That which for the most part we have now to do withal; are rather *Sophistical* cavils from supposed absurd consequences, then real *Theological* arguments. And some of those who would walk with most wariness between the imputation of the Righteousness of Christ and Justification by our own works, either are in such a slippery place, that they seem sometimes to be on the one side, sometimes on the other, or else to express themselves with so much *caution* as it is very difficult to apprehend their minds. I shall not therefore for the future dare to say, that this or that is any mans opinion, though it appear unto me so to be as clear and evident as words can express it, but

540 *Objections against Justification by the*

that this or that *opinion*, let it be maintained by whom it will, I approve or disapprove, this I shall dare to say. And I will say also, that the declination that hath been from the common Doctrine of Justification before God, on the imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, doth daily proceed towards a direct assertion of *justification by works*. Nor indeed hath it where to rest, until it comes unto that bottome. And this is more clearly seen in the objections which they make against the truth, then in what they plead in defence of their own opinions. For herein they speak as yet *warily*, and with a pretence of accuracy in avoiding extremes: But in the other, or their objections they make use of none but what are easily resolved into a supposition of *Justification by Works* in the grossest sense of it. To insist on all particulars were endless, and as was said, most of those of any importance have already occasionally been spoken unto. There are therefore only two things which are generally pleaded by all sorts of persons, *Papists*, *Socinians*, and others, with whom here we have to do, that I shall take notice of. The first and fountain of all other is, that the Doctrine of Justification by the imputation of the Righteousness of Christ doth render *our personal Righteousness needless*, and overthrows all necessity of an Holy life. The other is, that the Apostle *James* in his Epistle, doth plainly ascribe our Justification unto Works, and what he affirms there, is inconsistent with that sense of those many other Testimonies of Scripture which we plead for.

For the first of these, although those who oppose the truth we contend for, do proceed on various different and contradictory principles among themselves as to what they exalt in opposition unto it, yet do they all agree in a vehement urging of it. For those of the *Church of Rome* who renewed this charge, invented of old by others, it must be acknowledged by all sober men, that as managed by them, it

is an open calumny. For the wisest of them and those of whom it is hard to conceive, but that they knew the contrary, as *Bellarmino*, *Vasquez*, *Suarez*, do openly aver that Protestant Writers deny all inherent Righteousness; (*Bellarmino* excepts *Bucer* and *Chemnitius*) that they maintain that men may be saved, although they live in all manner of sin, that there is no more required of them, but that they believe that their sins are forgiven, and that whilst they do so, although they give themselves up unto the most sensual Vices and Abominations, they may be assured of their Salvation.

*Tantum Religio potuit suadere malorum.*

So will men out of a perverse zeal to promote their own interest in the Religion they profess, wilfully give up themselves unto the worst of evils, such as false accusation and open calumny, and of no other nature are these assertions, which none of the Writings or Preachings of those who are so charged, did ever give the least countenance unto. Whether the forging and promulgation of such impudent falsehoods, be an expedient to obtain Justification by Works in the sight of God, they who continue in them had best to consider. For my part I say again, as I suppose I have said already, that it is all one to me what Religion men are of; who can justify themselves in such courses and proceedings. And for those among our selves who are pleased to make use of this Objection, they either know what the Doctrine is which they would oppose, or they do not. If they do not, the wise man tells them, *that he who answereth a matter before he hear it, it is folly and shame unto him.* If they do understand it, it is evident that they use not sincerity, but artifices, and false pretenses for advantage, in their handling of Sacred things, which is scandalous to Religion. *Socinus* fiercely

manageth this charge against the Doctrine of the Reformed Churches; *De servat. par. 4. cap. 1.* And he made it the foundation whereon, and the reason why he opposeth the Doctrine of the imputation of *the satisfaction of Christ*, if any such satisfaction should be allowed, which yet he peremptorily denies. And he hath written a Treatise unto the same purpose defended by *Schlictingius* against *Meisnerus*. And he takes the same honest course herein, that others did before him. For he chargeth it on the Divines of the *Protestant Churches*, that they taught that God *justifieth the ungodly*, not only those *that are so*, and whilest they are so, but although they *continue so*; that they required no *inherent Righteousness* or Holiness in any, nor could do so on their principles, seeing the *imputed Righteousness* of Christ is sufficient for them, although they *live in sin*, are not washed nor cleansed, nor do give up themselves unto the wayes of Duty and Obedience unto God whereby he may be pleased, and so bring in *Libertinisme* and *Antinomianisme* into the Church. And he thinks it a sufficient confutation of this Doctrine to alledge against it that *neither Fornicators, nor Idolaters, nor Adulterers, &c. shall inherit the Kingdom of God*. And these are some of those ways which have rendred the management of controversies in Religion *scandalous* and abominable, such as no *wise* or good man will meddle withal, unless compelled for the necessary service of the Church. For these things are openly false, and made use of with a shameful dishonesty to promote a corrupt design and end. When I find men at this *kind of work* I have very little concernment in what they say afterwards, be it true or false. Their rule and measure is what serves their own end, or what may promote the design and interest wherein they are engaged, be it right or wrong. And as for this man there is not any Article in Religion (the principal whereof are rejected by him) on whose account he doth with more confidence adjudge us

unto *eternal ruine*, than he doth on this of the satisfaction of Christ and the imputation of it unto them that do believe. So much *darkness* is their remaining on the minds of the most of men: so many *inveterate prejudices* on various occasions are they pester'd withal, especially if not under the conduct of the same inlightning spirit, that some will *confidently condemn* others unto eternal flames, for those things whereon they place on infallible grounds, their hopes of eternal blessedness, and know that they love God and live unto him on their account. But this wretched advantage of *condemning all them to Hell* who dissent from them, is greedily laid hold of, by all sorts of persons. For they thereby secretly secure their own whole party in persuasion of eternal Salvation be they otherwise what they will. For if the want of that Faith which they profess, will certainly damn men whatever else they be, and how good soever their lives be, many will easily suffer themselves to be deceived with a foolish *Sophisme*, that then that Faith which they profess will assuredly save them, be their lives what they please, considering how it falls in with their inclinations. And hereby they may happen also to *frighten* poor simple people into a compliance with them, whilst they peremptorily denounce *Damnation* against them unless they do so. And none for the most part are more fierce in the denunciation of the condemnatory sentence against others for not believing as they do, then those who so live as that if there be any truth in the Scripture, it is not possible they should be saved themselves. For my part I believe that as to Christians in outward profession, all *unregenerate unbelievers*, who obey not the Gospel shall be damned, be they of what Religion they will, and none else; for all that are *born again*, do *truly believe* and obey the Gospel, shall be saved, be they of what Religion they will, as unto the differences that are at this day among Christians. That way wherein these things are

most effectually promoted, is in the first place to be embraced by every one that takes care of his own Salvation. If they are in any way or Church obstructed, that Church or way is so far as it doth obstruct them to be *forsaken*. And if there be any way of profession or any visible Church state where-in any thing or things absolutely destructive of or inconsistent with these things are made necessary unto the professors of it, in that way, and by vertue of it, no Salvation is to be obtained. In other things every man is to walk according unto the light of his own mind, for whatever is not of Faith is sin. But I return from this digression occasioned by the fierceness of him with whom we have to do.

For the Objection it self, that hath fallen under so perverse a management, so far as it hath any pretense of sobriety in it is this and no other. *If God justify the ungodly merely by his Grace through Faith in Christ Jesus, so as that works of Obedience are not antecedently necessary unto Justification before God, nor are any part of that Righteousness whereon any are so justified, then are they no way necessary, but men may be justified and saved without them.* For it is said that there is no connexion between Faith unto Justification as by us asserted, and the necessity of Holiness, Righteousness or Obedience, but that we are by Grace set at liberty to live as we list, yea in all manner of sin, and yet be secured of Salvation. For if we are made Righteous with the Righteousness of another, we have no need of any Righteousness of our own. And it were well if many of those who make use of this Plea, would endeavour by some other way also to evidence their esteem of these things; for to dispute for the necessity of Holiness, and live in the neglect of it, is uncomely.

I shall be brief in the answer that here shall be returned unto this Objection, for indeed it is sufficiently answered or obviated in what hath been before discoursed concerning the nature of that Faith whereby we are justified, and the *conti-*

*uation of the moral Law* in its force, as a rule of Obedience unto all believers. An unprejudiced consideration of what hath been proposed on these heads will evidently manifest the Iniquity of this charge, and how not the least countenance is given unto it by the Doctrine pleaded for. Besides, I must acquaint the Reader that some while since I have published an entire Discourse concerning the nature and necessity of Gospel Holiness, with the Grounds and Reasons thereof in compliance with the Doctrine of Justification that hath now been declared. Nor do I see it necessary to add any thing thereunto, nor do I doubt, but that the perusal of it will abundantly detect the vanity of this charge (*Dispensat. of the Holy Spirit, Book 5.*) Some few things may be spoken on the present occasion.

I. It is not pleaded that all who do profess or have in former ages professed this Doctrine, have *exemplified* it in an holy and fruitful conversation. Many it is to be feared have been found amongst them who have lived and dyed in sin. Neither do I know but that some have *abused* this Doctrine to countenance themselves in their sins, and neglect of duty. The best of holy things or truths cannot be secured from *abuse*, so long as the *Sophistry* of the old Serpent hath an influence on the lusts and depraved minds of men. So was it with them of old who *turned the grace of God into lasciviousness*; or from the Doctrine of it countenanced themselves in their ungodly deeds. Even from the beginning the whole Doctrine of the Gospel with the grace of God declared therein, was so *abused*. Neither were all that made profession of it, immediately rendered *Holy* and Righteous thereby. Many from the first, so walked as to make it evident that their *Belly was their God, and their end destruction*. It is one thing to have only the *conviction* of truth in our minds, another to have the *power of it* in our hearts. The former will produce an outward profession, the later only effect an in-

## 546 *Objections against Justification by the*

ward Renovation of our Souls. However I must add three things unto this concession.

1. I am not *satisfied* that any of those who at present oppose this Doctrine, do in Holiness or Righteousness, in the exercise of Faith, Love, Zeal, Self-denial, and all other Christian Graces, surpass those who in the last ages, both in this and other Nations firmly adhered unto it, and who constantly testified unto that effectual influence which it had into their walking before God: Nor do I know that any can be named amongst us in the former ages, who were eminent in Holiness, and many such there were, who did not cordially assent unto that imputation of the Righteousness of Christ which we plead for. I doubt not in the least, but that many who greatly differ from others in the explication of this Doctrine may be and are *eminently* holy, at least *sincerely* so, which is as much as the best can pretend unto. But it is not comely to find some others who give very little evidence of their *diligent following after that Holiness, without which no man shall see God*, vehemently declaiming against that Doctrine as destructive of Holiness, which was so fruitful in it in former days.

2. It doth not appear as yet in general, that an attempt to introduce a *Doctrine contrary unto it* hath had any great success in the *Reformation* of the lives of men. Nor hath personal Righteousness or Holiness as yet much thrived under the conduct of it, as to what may be observed. It will be time enough to seek countenance unto it by declaiming against that which hath formerly had better effects, when it hath a little more commended it self by its fruits.

3. It were not amiss, if this part of the controversy might amongst us all, be issued in the advise of the Apostle *James Chap. 2. 18. Shew me thy Faith by thy works, and I will shew thee my Faith by my works.* Let us all labour that *fruits* may thus far determine of Doctrines, as unto their use, unto  
the

the interest of Righteousness and Holiness. For that Faith which doth not evidence it self by works, that hath not this *Index* which *James* calls for, whereby it may be found out and examined, is of no use nor consideration herein. Secondly, The same Objection was from the beginning laid against the Doctrine of the Apostle *Paul*, the same charge was managed against it, which sufficiently argues, that it is the same Doctrine which is now assaulted with it. This himself more than once takes notice of, Rom. 3. 31. *Do we make void the Law through Faith?* It is an objection that he anticipates against his Doctrine of the free Justification of sinners, through Faith in the blood of Christ. And the substance of the charge included in these words is, that *he destroyed the Law*, took off all Obligation unto Obedience, and brought in *Antinomianism*. So again, Chap. 6. 1. *What shall we say then, shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?* Some thought this the natural and genuine consequence of what he had largely discoursed concerning *Justification* which he had now fully closed, and some think so still. If what he taught concerning the *grace of God* in our Justification be true, it will not only follow, that there will be no need of any relinquishment of sin on our part, but also a *continuance* in it must needs tend unto the exaltation of that grace, which he had so extolled. The same objection he repeats again. v. 15. *What then, shall we sin because we are not under the Law but under Grace.* And in sundry other places doth he obviate the same objection, where he doth not absolutely suppose it, especially, *Ephes.* 2. 9, 10. we have therefore no Reason to be surprized with, nor much to be moved at this objection and charge, for it is no other but what was insinuated or managed against the Doctrine of the Apostle himself, whatever inforcements are now given it by *subtily* of arguing or Rhetorical exaggerations. However, evident it is, that there are naturally in the minds of men *efficacious pre-*

## 548. *Objections against Justification by the*

*judices* against this part of the Mystery of the Gospel which began betimes to manifest themselves, and ceased not until they had corrupted the whole Doctrine of the Church herein. And it were no hard matter to discover the principal of them, were that our present business; However it hath in part been done before.

3. It is granted that this Doctrine both singly by it self, or in conjunction with whatever else concerns the grace of God by Christ Jesus, is liable unto *abuse* by them in whom darkness and the love of sin is predominant. For hence from the very beginning of our Religion, some fancied unto themselves that a bare assent unto the Gospel, was that Faith whereby they should be saved, and that they might be so, however they continued to live in sin, and a neglect of all Duties of Obedience. This is evident from the Epistles of *John*, *James* and *Jude*, in an especial manner. Against this pernicious evil we can give no relief, whilst men will love darkness more than light, because their deeds are evil. And it would be a fond imagination in any to think, that their modellings of this Doctrine after this manner, will prevent *future abuse*. If they will, it is by rendring it no part of the Gospel: for that which is so was ever liable to be abused by such persons as we speak of.

These general observations being premised which are sufficient of themselves, to discard this Objection from any place in the minds of sober men, I shall only add the consideration of what answers the Apostle *Paul* returns unto it, with a brief application of them unto our purpose.

The objection made unto the Apostle was, that he *made void the Law*, that he *rendred good works needless*, and that on the supposition of his Doctrine, men *might live in sin*, unto the advancement of Grace. And as unto his sense hereof, we may observe,

1. That

1. That he never returns that answer unto it, no not once, which some think is the only answer, whereby it may be satisfied and removed: namely, *the necessity of our own personal Righteousness and Obedience or Works in order unto our Justification before God.* For that by Faith without Works, he understandeth Faith and Works, is an unreasonable supposition. If any do yet pretend, that he hath given any such answer, let them produce it; as yet it hath not been made to appear. And is it not strange that if this indeed were his Doctrine, and the contrary a mistake of it, namely, that our personal Righteousness, Holiness, and Works had an influence into our justification, and were in any sort our Righteousness before God therein, that he who in an eminent manner every where presseth the *necessity* of them, sheweth their true nature and use, both in general and in particular Duties of all sorts, above any of the Writers of the new Testament, should not make use of this truth in answer unto an objection wherein he was charged to render them all needless and useles? His Doctrine was urged with this objection as himself acknowledged, and on the account of it rejected by many, *Rom.* 10: 3, 4. *Gal.* 2. 3. He did see and know that the corrupt lusts and depraved affections of the minds of many would supply them with subtile arguings against it. Yea he did foresee by the Holy Spirit, as appeareth in many places of his Writings, that it would be perverted and abused. And surely it was highly incumbent on him to obviate what in him lay, these evils, and so state his Doctrine upon this objection, that no countenance might ever be given unto it. And is it not strange that he should not on this occasion, once at least, somewhere or other, give an intimation, that although he rejected the *works of the Law*, yet he maintained the *necessity of Evangelical Works, in order unto our Justification before God* as the condition of it, or that whereby we are justified according unto the Gospel.

550 *Objections against Justification by the*

If this were indeed his Doctrine, and that which would so easily solve this difficulty, and answer this objection, as both of them are by some pretended, certainly neither his wisdom nor his care of the Church under the conduct of the infallible Spirit would have suffered him to omit this reply, were it consistent with the truth which he had delivered. But he is so far from any such Plea, that when the most unavoidable occasion was administered unto it, he not only waves any mention of it, but in its stead affirms that which plainly evidenceth that he allowed not of it. See *Eph. 2. 9, 10.* Having positively excluded Works from our Justification, *not of Works least any man should boast*, it being natural thereon to enquire, to what end do Works serve, or is there any necessity of them? instead of a distinction of Works *legal* and *Evangelical* in order unto our Justification, he asserts the necessity of the *later* on other Grounds, Reasons and Motives, manifesting that they were *those in particular* which he excluded, as we have seen in the consideration of the place; Wherefore that we may not forsake his pattern and example in the same cause, seeing he was Wiser and Holier, knew more of the mind of God, and had more zeal for personal Righteousness and Holiness in the Church than we all, if we are pressed a Thousand times with this objection we shall never seek to deliver our selves from it, by answering that we allow these things to be the condition, or causes of our Justification, or the matter of our Righteousness before God, seeing he would not so do.

Secondly, we may observe, that in his answer unto this objection, whether expressly mentioned or tacitly obviated, he insisteth not any where upon the common principle of moral Duties, but on those motives and reasons of Holiness, Obedience, good works alone, which are peculiar unto Believers. For the question was not, whether all mankind were obliged unto *Obedience unto God* and the Duties there-  
of

of by the moral Law. But whether there were an *Obligation from the Gospel* upon Believers unto Righteousness, Holiness and good Works, such as was suited to affect and constrain their minds unto them. Nor will we admit of any other state of the question but this only; whether upon the supposition of our *gratuitous justification* through the imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, there are in the Gospel grounds, reasons and motives making necessary, and efficaciously influencing the minds of Believers unto Obedience and good Works; for those who are not Believers, we have nothing to do with them in this matter, nor do plead that *Evangelical grounds* and motives are suited or effectual to work them unto Obedience; yea we know the contrary, and that they are apt both to despise them and abuse them. See *1 Cor.* 1. 23, 24. *2 Cor.* 4. 4. such persons are under the Law, and there we leave them unto the Authority of God in the moral Law. But that the Apostle doth confine his enquiry unto *Believers*, is evident in every place wherein he maketh mention of it, *Rom.* 6. 2, 3. *How shall we that are dead unto sin, live any longer therein? Know ye not that so many of us as were Baptized into Jesus Christ, &c.* *Eph.* 2. 10. *For we are the workmanship of God created in Christ Jesus unto good Works.* Wherefore we shall not at all contend what cogency unto duties of Holiness, there is in Gospel motives and reasons unto the minds of *Unbelievers*, whatever may be the truth in that case; But what is their power force and efficacy towards them that truly believe.

Thirdly, The answers which the Apostle returns positively unto this objection wherein he declares the necessity, nature, ends and use of Evangelical Righteousness, and good Works, are large, and many comprehensive of a great part of the Doctrine of the Gospel. I shall only mention the heads of some of them which are the same that we plead in the vindication of the same truth.

## 552 *Objections against Justification by the*

1. He pleads the *Ordination* of God; *God hath before ordained that we should walk in them*; Eph. 2. 10. God hath designed, in the disposal of the order of the causes of Salvation, that those who believe in Christ should *live in, walk in, abound in*, good Works and all Duties of Obedience unto God. To this end are Precepts, Directions, Motives and Encouragements every where multiplied in the Scripture. Wherefore we say that *good Works*, and that as they include the gradual progressive Renovation of our natures, our growth and increase in grace, with fruitfulness in our lives, are necessary from the *Ordination of God*, from his will and command. And what need there any further dispute about the necessity of *good Works* among them that know what it is to believe, or what respect there is in the Souls and Consciences of Believers unto the commands of God?

But what force, say some, is in this *Command or Ordination of God*, when notwithstanding it, and if we do not apply our selves unto Obedience, we shall be justified by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, and so may be saved without them. I say ( 1 ) As was before observed, that it is *Believers* alone concerning whom this enquiry is made, and there is none of them but will judge this a most unreasonable and senseless objection, as that which ariseth from an utter ignorance of their state and relation unto God. To suppose that the *minds of Believers* are not as much and as effectually influenced with the Authority and Commands of God unto Duty and Obedience, as if they were all given in order unto their Justification, is to consider neither what Faith is, nor what it is to be a Believer, nor what is the Relation that we stand in unto God by Faith in Christ Jesus, nor what are the Arguments or motives wherewith the minds of such persons are principally affected and constrained. This is the Answer which the Apostle gives at large unto this Exception, *Rom. 6. 2, 3.* ( 2 ) The whole *fallacy* of this Exception is  
 ( 1 ) In

( 1 ) In separating the things that God hath made inseparable, These are our Justification and our Sanctification. To suppose that the one of these may be without the other, is to overthrow the whole Gospel, ( 2 ) In compounding those things that are distinct, namely, Justification and eternal actual Salvation ; the respect of Works and Obedience being not the same unto them both, as hath been declared. Wherefore this Imagination that the commands of God unto Duty ; However given, and unto what ends soever, are not equally obligatory unto the Consciences of Believers, as if they were all given in order unto their Justification before God, is an absurd figment, and which all of them who are truly so, despise. Yea they have a greater power upon them, than they could have, if the Duties required in them were in order unto their Justification, and so were antecedent thereunto. For thereby they must be supposed to have their *efficacy* upon them before they truly believe. For to say, that a man may be a true Believer, or truly believe, in answer unto the commands of the Gospel, and not to be thereon, in the same instant of time absolutely justified, is not to dispute about any point of Religion, but plainly to deny the whole truth of the Gospel. But it is Faith alone that gives power and efficacy unto Gospel Commands, effectually to influence the Soul unto Obedience. Wherefore this Obligation is more powerfully constraining, as they are given unto those that are justified, then if they were given them in order unto their Justification.

Secondly, The Apostle answers, as we do also, *Do we then make void the Law through Faith ? God forbid ; yea we establish the Law.* For although the Law is principally established in and by the Obedience and Sufferings of Christ, *Rom. 8. 3, 4. Chap. 10. 3, 4.* Yet is it not, by the Doctrine of Faith and the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ unto the Justification of life, made *void* as unto Believers.

554 *Objections against Justification by the*

Neither of these do exempt them from that *Obligation* unto universal Obedience, which is prescribed in the Law. They are still obliged by vertue thereof to *love the Lord their God with all their Hearts, and their Neighbours as themselves*. They are indeed freed from the Law, and all its commands unto Duty as it abides in its first consideration, *Do this and live*, the opposite whereunto, is *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things written in the Law to do them*. For he that is under the Obligation of the Law in order unto Justification and Life, falls inevitably under the Curse of it, upon the supposition of any one Transgression. But we are made free to give Obedience unto it, on Gospel motives, and for Gospel ends, as the Apostle declares at large, *Rom. 6*. And the Obligation of it is such unto all Believers, as that the *least Transgression of it* hath the nature of sin. But are they hereon bound over by the Law unto everlasting punishment, or, as some phrase it, *will God damn them that Transgress the Law*, without which all this is nothing? I ask again what they think hereof; And upon a supposition that he will do so, what they further think will become of themselves? For my part I say no; even as the Apostle saith, *There is no condemnation unto them that are in Christ Jesus*. Where then, they will say, is the necessity of Obedience from the Obligation of the Law, if God will not damn them that Transgress it? And I say, it were well if some men did understand what they say in these things, or would learn, *for a while at least*, to hold their peace. The Law equally requires Obedience in all instances of Duty, if it require any at all. As unto its Obligatory power, it is capable neither of Dispensation nor Relaxation, so long as the essential differences of good and evil do remain. If then none can be obliged unto Duty by vertue of its commands, but that they must on every Transgression fall under its curse, either it obligeth no one at all, or no one can be saved. But al-

although we are freed from the Curse and condemning power of the Law by him who hath made an end of sin and brought in everlasting Righteousness, yet whilest we are *viatores* in order unto the accomplishment of Gods design for the Restauration of his Image in us, we are obliged to endeavour after all that Holiness and Righteousness which the Law requires of us.

Thirdly, The Apostle answereth this Objection, by discovering the necessary Relation that Faith hath, unto the Death of Christ, the grace of God, with the nature of Sanctification, excellency, use, and advantage of Gospel Holiness, and the end of it in Gods appointment. This he doth at large in the whole Sixth Chapter of the Epistle to the *Romans*, and that with this immediate design, to shew the consistency of Justification by Faith alone, with the necessity of personal Righteousness and Holiness. The due pleading of these things would require a just and full *Exposition of that Chapter* wherein the Apostle hath comprized the chief springs and reasons of Evangelical Obedience. I shall only say, that those unto whom the reasons of it and motives unto it, therein expressed, which are all of them compliant with the Doctrine of Justification by the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ are not effectual unto their own personal Obedience, and do not demonstrate an indispensable necessity of it, are so unacquainted with the *Gospel*, the nature of Faith, the genius and inclination of the new Creature ( for, let men scoff on whilest they please, *he that is in Christ Jesus is a new Creature* ) the constraining efficacy of the grace of God, and love of Christ, of the Oeconomy of God in the disposition of the causes and means of our Salvation, as I shall never trouble my self to contend with them about these things.

Sundry other considerations I thought to have added unto the same purpose; And to have shewed ( 1 ) That to prove the necessity of *inherent Righteousness* and Holiness, we make use of the *Arguments* which are suggested unto us in the Scripture. ( 2 ) That we make use of all of them in the sense wherein and unto the ends for which they are urged therein, in perfect compliance with what we teach concerning Justification. ( 3 ) That all the *pretended Arguments* or motives for and unto Evangelical Holiness which are inconsistent with the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ, do indeed obstruct it and evert it. ( 4 ) That the Holiness which we make *necessary* unto the Salvation of them that believe is of a more *excellent sublime and Heavenly nature* in its causes, essence, operations, and effects, than what is allowed or believed by the most of those by whom the Doctrine of Justification is opposed. ( 5 ) That the Holiness and Righteousness which is pleaded for by the *Socinians* and those that follow them, doth in nothing exceed the *Righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees*, nor upon their principles can any man go beyond them. But whereas this Discourse hath already much exceeded my first intention, and that as I said before, I have already at large treated on the Doctrine of the nature and necessity of *Evangelical Holiness*, I shall at present omit the further handling of these things and acquiesce in the answers given by the *Apostle* unto this Objection.

## CHAP. XX.

*The Doctrine of the Apostle James, concerning Faith and Works. Its agreement with that of St. Paul.*

**T**He seeming difference that is between the Apostles *Paul* and *James* in what they teach concerning *Faith*, *Works*, and *Justification*, requires our consideration of it. For many do take advantage from some words and expressions used by the *later*, directly to oppose the Doctrine fully and plainly declared by the *former*. But whatever is of that nature pretended hath been so satisfactorily already answered and removed by others, as that there is no great need to treat of it again. And although I suppose that there will not be an end of contending and writing in these causes, whilest we *know but in part* and *Prophesie but in part*, yet I must say, that in my Judgment the *usual solution* of this appearing difficulty securing the Doctrine of Justification by Faith through the Imputation of the Righteousness of Christ from any concernment or contradiction in the Discourse of St. *James*, *Chap. 2. v. 14.* to the end, hath not been in the least impeached, nor hath had any new difficulty put upon it in some late Discourses to that purpose. I should therefore utterly forbear to speak any thing hereof, but that I suppose it will be expected in a Discourse of this nature, and do hope that I also may contribute some light unto the clearing and vindication of the Truth. To this purpose it may be observed, That 1. It is taken for granted on all hands, that there is no

real repugnancy or contradiction between what is delivered by these two Apostles. For if that were so, the writings of one of them must be *Pseudepigrapha*, or falsely ascribed unto them whose names they bear, and uncanonical, as the Authority of the Epistle of *James* hath been by some both of old and of late highly, but rashly questioned. Wherefore their words are certainly capable of a just Reconciliation. That we cannot any of us attain thereunto, or that we do not agree therein is from the darkness of our own minds, the weakness of our understandings, and with too many, from the power of prejudices.

2. It is taken also for granted on all other occasions, that when there is an appearance of Repugnancy or contradiction in any places of Scripture, if some, or any of them, do treat directly, designedly, and largely about the matter concerning which there is a seeming repugnancy or contradiction, and others, or any other speak of the same things only *Obiter* occasionally, transiently, in order unto other ends, the truth is to be learned, stated and fixed from the former places. Or the interpretation of those places where any truth is mentioned only *occasionally* with reference unto other things or ends, is, as unto that truth, to be taken from and accommodated unto those other places wherein it is the design and purpose of the Holy Penman to declare it *for its own sake*, and to guide the Faith of the Church therein. And there is not a more rational and natural *Rule* of the *interpretation* of Scripture among all them which are by common consent agreed upon.

3. According unto this Rule, it is unquestionable that the Doctrine of *Justification before God* is to be learned from the writings of the Apostle *Paul*, and from them is light to be taken into all other places of Scripture where it is occasionally mentioned. Especially it is so, considering how exactly this Doctrine represents the whole *Scope* of the Scripture, and

and is witnessed unto by particular Testimonies occasionally given unto the same truth, without number. For it must be acknowledged that he wrote of this subject of our *Justification before God*, on purpose to declare it for its own sake, and its use in the Church, and that he doth it fully, largely, and frequently in a constant Harmony of expressions. And he owns those Reasons that pressed him unto fulness, and accuracy herein. (1) The *importance of the Doctrine* it self. This he declares to be such, as that thereon our Salvation doth immediately depend; and that it was the hinge whereon the whole Doctrine of the Gospel did turn, *Articulus stantis aut cadentis Ecclesie*, Gal. 2. 16, 21. Chap. 5. 4, 5. (2) The *plausible and dangerous opposition*, that was then made unto it. This was so managed, and that with such specious pretences as that very many were prevailed on, and turned from the truth by it, as it was with the *Galatians*, and many detained from the Faith of the Gospel out of a dislike unto it, *Rom.* 10. 3, 4. What care and diligence this requireth in the Declaration of any truth is sufficiently known unto them, who are acquainted with these things, What zeal, care and circumspection it stirred up the Apostle unto, is manifest in all his writings. (3) The *Abuse* which the corrupt nature of man is apt to put upon this Doctrine of Grace, and which some did actually pervert it unto. This also himself takes notice of, and throughly vindicates it from giving the least countenance unto such wrestings and impositions. Certainly; never was there a greater necessity incumbent on any person fully and plainly to teach and declare a Doctrine of truth, than was on him at that time in his circumstances, considering the place and duty that he was called unto. And no reason can be imagined, why we should not principally and in the first place learn the truth herein from his declaration and vindication of it, if withal we do indeed believe that he was *Divinely*

vinely inspired, and Divinely guided to reveal the truth for the information of the Church.

As unto what is delivered by the Apostle *James*, so far as our Justification is included therein, things are quite otherwise. He doth not undertake to declare the *Doctrine of our Justification before God*, but having another design in hand as we shall see immediately, he vindicates it from the abuse that some in those days had put it unto, as other Doctrines of the Grace of God which they turn'd into licentiousness. Wherefore it is from the writings of the Apostle *Paul*, that we are principally to learn the truth in this matter, and unto what is by him plainly declared is the interpretation of other places to be accommodatéd.

4. Some of late are not of this mind : They contend earnestly that *Paul* is to be interpreted by *James*, and not on the contrary. And unto this end they tell us that the Writings of *Paul* are obscure, that sundry of the antients take notice thereof, that many take occasion of errors from them, with sundry things of an alike nature, indeed scandalous to Christian Religion. And that *James* writing after him, is presumed to give an interpretation unto his sayings, which are therefore to be expounded and understood according unto that interpretation. *Ans.* ( 1 ) As to the vindication of the Writings of St. *Paul*, which begin now to be frequently reflected on with much severity ( which is one effect of the secret prevalency of the Atheism of these days ) as there is no need of it, so it is designed for a more proper place. Only I know not how any person that can pretend the least acquaintance with *Antiquity* can plead a passage out of *Irenæus* wherein he was evidently himself mistaken, or a rash word of *Origen*, or the like in derogation from the perspicuity of the Writings of this Apostle, when they cannot but know how easie it were to overwhelm them with Testimonies unto the contrary from all the famous Writers of the Church

Church in several ages. And ( as for instance in one ) *Chrystostome* in forty places gives an account why some men understood not his Writings which in themselves were so gloriously evident and perspicuous ; so for their satisfaction I shall refer them only unto the Preface unto his *Exposition of his Epistles*, of which kind they will be directed unto more in due season. But he needs not the Testimony of men, nor of the whole Church together, whose safety and security it is to be built on that Doctrine which he taught. In the mean time it would not be unpleasant to consider ( but that the perverseness of the minds of men is rather a real occasion of sorrow ) how those who have the same design do agree in their conceptions about his Writings, for some will have it, that if not all, yet the most of his Epistles were Written against the *Gnosticks* and in the confutation of their error; others, that the *Gnosticks* took the occasion of their errors from his Writings. So bold will men make with things Divine to satisfy a present interest.

Secondly, This was not the judgment of the *ancient Church* for three or four hundred years. For whereas the Epistles of *Paul* were always esteemed the principal treasure of the Church, the great guide and rule of the Christian Faith, this of *James* was scarce received as *Canonical* by many, and doubted of by the most, as both *Eusebius* and *Hierome* do testify.

Thirdly, The design of the Apostle *James* is not at all to explain the meaning of *Paul* in his Epistles as is pretended, but only to vindicate the *Doctrine of the Gospel* from the abuse of such as used their *liberty for a cloak of Maliciousness*, and turning the Grace of God into lasciviousness, continued in sin under a pretence that Grace had abounded unto that end.

Fourthly, The Apostle *Paul* doth himself as we have declared, vindicate his own Doctrine from such *exceptions* and

*abuses* as men either made at it, or turned it unto. Nor have we any other Doctrine in his Epistles than what he Preached all the World over, and whereby he laid the foundation of Christian Religion especially among the *Gentiles*.

These things being premised, I shall briefly evidence that there is not the least *Repugnancy or contradiction* between what is declared by these two Apostles, as unto our Justification with the causes of it. And this I shall do, 1. By some general considerations of the nature and tendency of both their discourses. ( 2 ) By a particular explication of the context in that of St. *James*. And under the first head I shall manifest. ( 1 ) That they have not the same scope, design or end in their discourses; That they do not consider the same *question*, nor *state the same case*, nor determine on the same enquiry, and therefore not speaking *ad idem* unto the same thing do not contradict one another. ( 2 ) That as *Faith* is a word of various signification in the Scripture, and doth as we have proved before, denote that which is of divers kinds, they speak not of the same Faith, or Faith of the same kind, and therefore there can be no contradiction in what the one ascribes unto it, and the other derogates from it, seeing they speak not of the same Faith. ( 3 ) That they do not speak of *Justification* in the same sense, nor with respect unto the same ends. ( 4 ) That as unto *Works* they both intend the same, namely, the Works of Obedience unto the moral Law.

I. As to the scope and design of the Apostle *Paul*, the question which he answereth, the case which he proposeth and determines upon, are manifest in all his Writings, especially his Epistles unto the *Romans* and *Galatians*. The whole of his purpose is to declare, how a *guilty convicted sinner comes through Faith* in the blood of Christ to have all his sins pardoned, to be accepted with God, and obtain a right unto the Heavenly inheritance, that is, be acquitted and justified

in the sight of God. And as the Doctrine hereof belonged eminently unto the Gospel, whose Revelation and Declaration unto the *Gentiles* was in a peculiar manner committed unto him, so as we have newly observed, he had an especial reason to insist much upon it from the opposition that was made unto it by the *Jews* and Judaizing Christians, who ascribed this priviledge unto the Law, and our own Works of Obedience in compliance therewithal. This is the case he states, this the question he determines in all his Discourses about Justification; and in the explication thereof declares the nature and causes of it, as also vindicates it from all exceptions. For whereas men of corrupt minds and willing to indulge unto their lusts (as all men naturally desire nothing but what God hath made eternally inconsistent, namely, that they may live in sin here, and come to blessedness hereafter) might conclude that if it were so as he declared, that we are justified freely through the Grace of God by the Imputation of a Righteousness that Originally and inherently is not our own, then was there no more required of us, no relinquishment of sin, no attendance unto the duties of Righteousness and Holiness, he obviates such impious suggestions, and shews the inconsequence of them on the Doctrine that he taught. But this he doth not do in any place by intimating or granting that our own Works of Obedience or Righteousness are necessary unto, or have any *causal influence* into our Justification before God. Had there been a Truth herein, were not a supposition thereof really inconsistent with the whole of his Doctrine and destructive of it, he would not have omitted the Plea of it, nor ought so to have done, as we have shewed. And to suppose that there was need that any other should explain and vindicate his Doctrine from the same exceptions which he takes notice of by such a Plea, as he himself would not make use of but rejects, is foolish and impious.

The Apostle *James* on the other hand had no such scope or design, or any such occasion for what he wrote in this matter. He doth not enquire, or give intimation of any such enquiry, he doth not state the *Case* how a guilty convinced Sinner whose mouth is stopped as unto any plea or excuse for himself, may come to be justified in the sight of God, that is, receive *the Pardon of Sins, and the gift of Righteousness unto life*. To resolve this question into our own Works, is to overthrow the whole Gospel. But he had in hand a business quite of another nature. For as we have said, there were many in those days who professed the *Christian Religion* or Faith in the Gospel, whereon they presumed that as they were already justified, so that there was nothing more needful unto them that they might be saved. A desirable estate they thought they had attained, suited unto all the interest of the Flesh, whereby they might live in Sin, and neglect of all Duty of Obedience, and yet be eternally saved. Some suppose that this pernicious conceit was imbibed by them from the poysonous Opinions that some had then divulged, according as the Apostle *Paul* foretold that it would come to pass, *2 Tim. 4. 1, 2, 3*. For it is generally conceived that *Simon Magus* and his followers had by this time infected the minds of many with their abominations, and amongst them this was one, and not the least pernicious, *that by Faith was intended a Liberty from the Law, and unto Sin*, or unto them that had it, *the taking away of all difference between good and evil*, which was afterwards improved by *Basilides Valentinus*, and the rest of the *Gnosticks*. Or it may be it was only the corruption of mens hearts and lives, that prompted them to seek after such a countenance unto Sin. And this latter I judg it was. There were then among professed Christians, such as the world now swarms withal, who suppose that their Faith, or the Religion which they profess, be it what it will, shall save them, although they live in flagitious wickedness, and are  
utterly

utterly barren as unto any good Works or Duties of Obedience. Nor is there any other occasion of what he writes intimated in the Epistle; For he makes no mention of Seducers, as *John* doth expressly and frequently, some while after: Against this sort of persons, or for their conviction he designs two things. (1.) In general to prove the necessity of Works unto all that profess the Gospel or Faith in Christ thereby. (2.) To evidence the vanity and folly of their pretence unto Justification, or that they were justified and should be saved, by that Faith that was indeed so far from being fruitful in good Works, as that it was pretended by them only to countenance themselves in Sin. Unto these ends are all his arguings designed and no other. He proves effectually that the Faith which is wholly barren and fruitless as unto Obedience; and which men pretended to countenance themselves in their sins, is not that Faith whereby we are justified, and whereby we may be saved, but a *dead carcass*, of no use nor benefit, as he declares by the Conclusion of his whole Dispute, in the last Verse of the Chapter. He doth not direct any how they may be justified before God, but convinceth some that they are not justified by trusting unto such a *dead Faith*, and declares the only way whereby any man may really evidence and manifest that he is so justified indeed. This design of his is so plain, as nothing can be more evident, and they miss the whole scope of the Apostle, who observe it not in their Expositions of the Context. Wherefore the principal design of the Apostles being so distant, there is no repugnancy in their Assertions, though their words make an appearance thereof. For they do not speak *ad idem*, nor of things *eodem respectu*. *James* doth not once enquire how a guilty convinced Sinner, cast and condemned by the Law, may come to be justified before God; and *Paul* speaks to nothing else. Wherefore apply the Expressions of each of them unto their proper design and scope, as we must do; or

we depart from all sober Rules of Interpretation, and render it impossible to understand either of them aright, and there is no disagreement or appearance of it between them.

Secondly, they speak not of the *same Faith*. Wherefore there can be no discrepancy in what one ascribes unto Faith, and the other denies concerning it, seeing they understand not the same thing thereby, for they speak not of the same Faith. As if one affirms that *fire will burn*, and another denyeth it, there is no contradiction between them, whilst one intends real fire, and the other only that which is *painted*, and both declare themselves accordingly. For we have proved before that there are *two sorts of Faith* wherewith men are said to believe the Gospel, and make profession thereof, as also that which belongs unto the one, doth not belong unto the other; None I suppose will deny but that by *Faith* in the matter of our Justification, *St. Paul* intends that which is *weiros* or properly so called. The *Faith of Gods Elect*, *precious Faith*, more *precious then Gold*, the *Faith that purifieth the heart*, and *works by love*, the *Faith whereby Christ dwelleth in us*, and *we abide in him*, whereby *we live to God*, a *living Faith*, is that alone which he intendeth. For all these things, and other Spiritual effects without number doth he ascribe unto that Faith which he insisteth on, to be on our part the only means of our *Justification* before God. But as unto the *Faith* intended by the Apostle *James*, he assigns nothing of all this unto it; yea, the only Argument whereby he proves that men cannot be saved by that Faith which he treats of, is that nothing of all this is found in it. That which he intends is, what he calls it, a *dead Faith*, a *Carcass* without breath, the *Faith of Devils*, a *wordy Faith*, that is no more truly what it is called, than it is *true Charity* to send away naked and hungry persons without relief, but not without derision. Well may he deny Justification in any sense un-

to this Faith however *boasted of*, when yet it may be justly ascribed unto that Faith which *Paul* speaks of.

*Bellarmino* useth several Arguments to prove that the Faith here intended by *James*, is *justifying Faith* considered in its self; but they are all weak to contempt, as being built on this supposition, that *true justifying Faith is nothing but a real assent unto the Catholick Doctrine or Divine Revelation. De Justificat. lib. 1. cap. 15.* His first is, that *James* calleth it *Faith absolutely, whereby always in the Scripture true Faith is intended.* Ans. 1. *James* calls it a *Dead Faith*, the *Faith of Devils*, and casteth all manner of reproach upon it, which he would not have done on any *Duty or Grace* truly *Evangelical.* (2.) Every Faith that is true as unto the reality of assent which is given by it unto the *Truth*, is neither *living, justifying, nor saving*, as hath been proved. (3.) They are said to *have Faith absolutely* or *absolutely to believe*, who never had that Faith which is true and saving, *Joh. 2. 23. Act. 8. 13.* He urgeth that in the same place and Chapter he treats of the *Faith of Abraham*, and affirms that it wrought with his works, *Vers. 22, 23.* But this a *vain shadow of Faith* doth not do; It was therefore *true Faith*, and that which is most properly called so, that the *Apostle* intendeth. Ans. This pretence is indeed ridiculous: For the *Apostle* doth not give the *Faith of Abraham* as an instance of that Faith which he had treated with so much severity, but of that which is directly contrary unto it, and whereby he designed to prove that the other Faith which he had reflected on, was of no use nor advantage unto them that had it. For this *Faith of Abraham* produced good Works, which the other was wholly without. Thirdly, He urgeth, *v. 24* *You see then how that by Works a man is justified, and not by Faith only: For the Faith that James speaks of justifieth with works, but a false Faith, the shadow of a Faith doth not so; it is therefore true saving Faith, whereof the Apostle speaks.* Ans. He is utterly  
mistaken

mistaken ; for the Apostle doth not ascribe Justification *partly* to Works, and *partly* to Faith ; but he ascribes Justification in the sense by him intended, *wholly* to Works in opposition to *that Faith* concerning which he treats. For there is a plain *Antithesis* in the Words between Works and Faith as unto Justification in the sense by him intended. A dead Faith, a Faith without Works, the Faith of Devils is excluded from having any influence into Justification. Fourthly, He *adds* that the Apostle compares *this Faith without Works* unto a rich man that gives nothing unto the poor, ver. 16. and a Body without a Spirit, ver. 26. wherefore, as that knowledg whereby a rich man knows the wants of the poor is true and real, and a dead body is a body ; so is Faith without Works true Faith also, and as such is considered by Saint James. *Ans.* These things do evidently destroy what they are produced in the confirmation of, only the *Cardinal* helps them out with a little Sophistry. For whereas the Apostle compares *this Faith* unto the *charity* of a man that gives nothing to the poor, he suggests in the room thereof his *knowledge* of their poverty. And his knowledge may be true, and the more true and certain it is, the more false and feigned is the charity which he pretends in these words, *Go and be fed or cloathed*. Such is the Faith the Apostle speaks of. And although a *dead body* is a *true body*, that is, as unto the matter or substance of it, a Carcass ; yet is it not an *essential part* of a living man. A Carcass is not of the same nature or kind as is the body of a living man. And we assert no other difference between the Faith spoken of by the Apostle, and that which is justifying, than what is between a *dead breathless Carcass* and a living animated body, prepared and fitted for all vital acts. Wherefore it is evident beyond all contradiction, if we have not a mind to be contentious, that what the Apostle *James* here derogates from Faith as unto our Justification it respects only a *dead barren lifeless Faith*, such as is usually pretended by ungodly

godly men to countenance themselves in their sins. And herein the Faith asserted by *Paul* hath no concern. The consideration of the present condition of the profession of Faith in the World, will direct us unto the best exposition of this place.

Thirdly, They speak not of *Justification* in the same sense nor unto the same end. It is of our absolute Justification before God, the Justification of our persons, our acceptance with him and the grant of a right unto the Heavenly inheritance, that the Apostle *Paul* doth treat and thereof alone. This he declares in all the causes of it, all that on the part of God, or on our part concurrerth thereunto. The evidence, the knowledge, the sense, the fruit, the manifestation of it in our own Consciences, in the Church, unto others that profess the Faith, he treats not of, but speaks of them separately as they occur on other occasions. The Justification he treats of, is but one and at once accomplished before God, changing the relative state of the person justified, and is capable of being evidenced various ways unto the glory of God and the consolation of them that truly believe. Hereof the Apostle *James* doth not treat at all; for his whole enquiry is after the nature of that Faith whereby we are justified, and the only way whereby it may be evidenced to be of the right kind, such as a man may safely trust unto. Wherefore he treats of *Justification* only as to the evidence and manifestation of it, nor had he any occasion to do otherwise. And this is apparent from both the instances, whereby he confirms his purpose. The first, is that of *Abraham*, ver. 21. 22, 23. For he says, that by *Abrahams* being justified by Works in the way and manner wherein he asserts him so to have been, the Scripture was fulfilled, which says that Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness. And if his intention were to prove that we are justified be-

fore God by Works and not by Faith, because *Abraham* was so, the Testimony produced is contrary, yea directly contradictory unto what should be proved by it, and accordingly is alledged by *Paul* to prove that *Abraham* was justified by Faith without Works, as the words do plainly import. Nor can any man declare, how the Truth of this proposition, *Abraham was justified by Works*, intending absolute Justification before God, was that wherein that Scripture was fulfilled; *Abraham believed God and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness*; especially, considering the opposition that is made both here and elsewhere between Faith and Works in this matter. Besides, he asserts that *Abraham* was justified by Works *then* when he had offered his Son on the Altar; the same we believe also, but only enquire in what sense he was so justified. For it was Thirty years or thereabout after it was testified concerning him, that he *believed God and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness*; and when Righteousness was imputed unto him he was justified. And twice justified in the same sense, in the same way, with the same kind of Justification he was not. How then was he Justified by Works when he offered his Son on the Altar? He that can conceive it to be any otherwise, but that he was by his Work in the offering of his Son *evidenced and declared* in the sight of God and man to be justified, apprehends what I cannot attain unto, seeing that he was really justified long before, as is unquestionable and confessed by all. He was I say then justified in the sight of God, in the way declared, *Gen. 22. 12.* And gave a signal Testimony unto the sincerity of his Faith and trust in God, manifesting the truth of that Scripture, he believed God and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness. And in the quotation of this Testimony the Apostle openly acknowledgeth that he was really accounted Righteous, had Righteousness imputed unto him and was justified before

before God ( the reasons and causes whereof, he therefore considereth not ) long before that Justification which he ascribes unto his Works, which therefore can be nothing but the evidencing proving and manifestation of it : whence also it appears of what nature that Faith is whereby we are justified, the Declaration whereof is the principal design of the Apostle. In brief the Scripture alledged that *Abraham* believed and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness, was fulfilled when he was justified by Works on the offering of his Son on the Altar, either by the *Imputation of Righteousness* unto him, or by a *real efficiency* or working Righteousness in him, or by the *manifestation* and evidence of his former Justification, or some other way must be found out. ( 1 ) That it was not by Imputation, or that Righteousness unto the Justification of life, was not then first imputed unto him is plain in the Text, for it was so imputed unto him long before, and that in such a way as the Apostle proves thereby, that Righteousness is imputed without Works. ( 2 ) That he was not justified by a *real efficiency* of an habit of Righteousness in him, or by any way of making him inherently Righteous, who was before unrighteous is plain also, because he was Righteous in that sense *long before*, and had abounded in the Works of Righteousness unto the praise of God. It remains therefore that then, and by the Work mentioned, he was justified as unto the evidencing and manifestation of his Faith and Justification thereon. His other instance is of *Rahab* concerning whom he asserts that she was justified by Works when she had received the Messengers and sent them away. But she received the *Spies* by *Faith*, as the Holy Ghost witnesseth, *Heb. 11. 31*. And therefore had true Faith before their coming ; and if so, was really justified. For that any one should be a true believer, and yet not be justified is destructive unto the foundation of the Gospel. In

this condition she received the Messengers, and made unto them a full Declaration of her Faith, *Josh. 2. 10, 11.* After her believing and Justification thereon, and after the confession she had made of her Faith, she exposed her life by concealing and sending of them away. Hereby did she justify the sincerity of her Faith and Confession, and in that sense alone is said to be justified by Works: And in no other sense doth the Apostle *James* in this place make mention of Justification, which he doth also only occasionally.

Fourthly, As unto Works mentioned by both Apostles, the same Works are intended, and there is no disagreement in the least about them. For as the Apostle *James* intends by Works, Duties of Obedience unto God according to the Law, as is evident from the whole first part of the Chapter, which gives occasion unto the Discourse of Faith and Works; So the same are intended by the Apostle *Paul* also, as we have proved before. And as unto the necessity of them in all believers, as unto other ends, so as evidences of their Faith and Justification, it is no less pressed by the one than the other as hath been declared.

These things being in general premised, we may observe some things in particular from the Discourse of the Apostle *James*, sufficiently evidencing that there is no contradiction therein, unto what is delivered by the Apostle *Paul* concerning our Justification by Faith and the Imputation of Righteousness without Works, nor to the Doctrine which from him we have learned and declared; as ( 1 ) He makes no *composition or conjunction* between Faith and Works in our Justification, but opposeth them the one to the other, asserting the one and rejecting the other in order unto our Justification. ( 2 ) He makes no *distinction* of a first and second Justification, of the beginning and continuation of Justification, but speaks of one Justification only which is our first personal.

personal Justification before God. Neither are we concerned in any other Justification in this cause whatever. ( 3 ) That he ascribes this Justification *wholly unto Works* in contradistinction unto Faith, as unto that sense of Justification which he intended, and the Faith whereof he treated Wherefore ( 4 ) He doth not at all enquire or determine how a sinner is justified before God, but how Professors of the Gospel can prove or demonstrate that they are so, and that they do not deceive themselves by trusting unto a lifeless and barren Faith. All these things will be further evidenced in a brief consideration of the context it self, wherewith I shall close this Discourse.

In the beginning of the Chapter unto v. 14. He reproves those unto whom he wrote for many sins committed against the Law the rule of their sins and Obedience; or at least warneth them of them; and having shewed the danger they were in hereby, he discovers the Root and principal occasion of it, v. 14. which was no other but a vain surmise and deceiving presumption that the Faith required in the Gospel was nothing but a bare assent unto the Doctrine of it, whereon they were delivered from all obligation unto moral Obedience or good Works, and might without any danger unto their eternal state live in whatever sins their lusts inclined them unto, *Chap. 4. v. 2, 3, 4. Chap. 5. v. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.* The state of such persons which contains the whole cause which he speaks unto, and which gives rule and measure unto the interpretation of all his future arguings is laid down, v. 14. *What doth it profit my Brethren though a man say he hath Faith and have not Works, can Faith save him?* suppose a man, any one of those who are guilty of the sins charged on them in the foregoing verses, do yet say, or *boast* of himself, that he hath Faith, that he makes profession of the Gospel, that he hath left either *Judaism* or *Paganism*, and betaken himself

to the Faith of the Gospel, and therefore although he be destitute of good Works, and live in sin, he is accepted with God and shall be saved? will indeed this Faith save him? this therefore is the question proposed: whereas the Gospel faith plainly, that *he who believeth shall be saved*; whether that Faith which may and doth consist with an indulgence unto sin, and a neglect of Duties of Obedience, is that Faith whereunto the promise of life and Salvation is annexed? And thereon, the enquiry proceeds, how any man, in particular *he who says he hath Faith*, may prove and evidence himself to have that Faith which will secure his Salvation. And the Apostle denies that this is such a Faith as can consist without Works, or that any man can evidence himself to have true Faith any otherwise but by *Works of Obedience only*. And in the proof hereof doth his whole ensuing Discourse consist. Not once doth he propose unto consideration the means and causes of the Justification of a convinced sinner before God, nor had he any occasion so to do. So that his words are openly wrested when they are applied unto any such intention.

That the *Faith* which he intends and describes, is altogether useles unto the end pretended to be attainable by it; namely, Salvation, he proves in an instance of, and by comparing it with the *love or charity* of an alike nature, v. 15. 16. *If a Brother or Sister be naked and destitute of daily food, and one of you say unto him, depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled, notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body, what doth it profit?* This love or charity is not that Gospel Grace which is required of us under that name; For he who behaveth himself thus towards the poor, *the love of God dwelleth not in him*, 1 Joh. 3. 17. whatever name it may have, whatever it may pretend unto, whatever it may be professed or accepted for, love it is not, nor hath any of the effects

effects of love ; is neither useful nor profitable. Hence the Apostle infers, v. 17. *Even so Faith, if it hath not Works, is dead being alone.* For this was that which he undertook to prove, not that we are not justified by Faith alone without Works before God, but that the Faith which is alone without Works, is dead useles and unprofitable.

Having given this first evidence unto the conclusion which in *Thesi* he designed to prove, he reassumes the question and states it in *Hypothesi*, so as to give it a more full demonstration, v. 15. *Yea a man may say thou hast Faith, and I have Works, shew me thy Faith without thy Works,* ( that is, which is without Works, or by thy Works ) *and I will shew thee my Faith by my Works.* It is plain beyond denial, that the Apostle doth here again propose his main question only on a supposition that there is a dead useles Faith which he had proved before. For now all the enquiry remaining is how true Faith, or that which is of the right Gospel kind, may be shewed, evidenced or demonstrated, so, as that their folly may appear, who trust unto any other Faith whatever *δείξιν μοι τὴν πίστιν σου*, Evidence or *demonstrate thy Faith to be true* by the only means thereof, which is works. And therefore although he say, *thou hast Faith*, that is, thou professest and boastest that thou hast that Faith whereby thou mayest be saved, *and I have Works*, he doth not say, *shew me thy Faith by thy Works*, and I will shew thee my Works by my Faith, which the *Antithesis* would require, but I will shew thee my Faith by my Works, because the whole question was concerning the evidencing of Faith and not of Works.

That this Faith which cannot be evidenced by Works, which is not fruitful in them, but consists only in a bare assent unto the Truth of Divine Revelation, is not the Faith that doth justifie or will save us, he further proves in that it is no other but what *the Devils themselves have*, and no man

can think or hope to be saved by that which is common unto them with Devils, and wherein they do much exceed them, v. 11. *Thou believest there is one God, thou dost well, the Devils also believe and tremble.* The belief of one God is not the whole of what the Devils believe, but is singled out as the principal fundamental Truth, and on the concession whereof an assent unto all Divine Revelation doth necessarily ensue. And this is the second Argument, whereby he proves an empty barren Faith to be dead and useles.

The second Confirmation being given unto his principal assertion, He restates it in that way, and under those terms wherein he designed it unto its last Confirmation. *But wilt thou know O vain man. that Faith without Works is dead?* ver. 20. And we may consider in the words. ( 1 ) The person with whom he deals whose conviction he endeavoured him, he calls a *vain man*, not in general, as every man living is altogether vanity, but as one who in an especial manner is *vainly puffed* up in his own fleshly mind, one that hath entertained vain Imaginations of being saved by an empty profession of the Gospel, without any fruit of Obedience. ( 2 ) That which he designs with respect unto this *vain man* is his conviction, a *conviction* of that foolish and pernicious error that he had imbibed; *wilt thou know O vain man.* ( 3 ) That which alone he designed to convince him of is, *that Faith without Works is dead*; that is, the Faith which is without Works, which is barren and unfruitful, is dead and useles. This is that *alone*, and this is *all* that he undertakes to prove by his following Instances and Arguings, neither do they prove any more. To wrest his words to any other purpose when they are all proper and suited unto what he expresseth as his only design, is to offer violence unto them.

This therefore he proves by the consideration of the Faith

Faith of *Abraham*. ver. 21. *Was not Abraham our Father justified by Works, when he had offered Isaac his Son upon the Altar?* Some things must be observed to clear the mind of the Apostle herein: As ( 1 ) It is certain that *Abraham* was justified many years before the Work instanced in was performed: For long before was that Testimony given concerning him, *he believed in the Lord, and he counted it unto him for Righteousness*, and the imputation of Righteousness upon believing is all the Justification we enquire after or will contend about. ( 2 ) It is certain that in the Relation of the Story here repeated by the Apostle, there is not any one word spoken of *Abrahams* being *then justified before God*, by that or any other Work whatever. But ( 3 ) It is plain and evident that in the place related unto, *Abraham was declared to be justified* by an open attestation unto his Faith and fear of God as sincere, and that they had evidenced themselves so to be, in the sight of God himself, which God condescends to express by an assumption of humane affections, Gen. 22. 12. *Now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy Son, thine only Son from me.* That this is the Justification which the Apostle intends cannot be denied, but out of love to strife. And this was the manifestation and declaration of the Truth and Sincerity of his Faith whereby he was justified before God. And hereby the Apostle directly and undeniably proves what he produceth this instance for; namely, that Faith without Works is dead. ( 4 ) It is no less evident that the Apostle had not spoken any thing before, as unto our Justification before God, and the means thereof. And is therefore absurdly imagined here to introduce it in the proof of what he had before asserted, which it doth not prove at all. ( 5 ) The only safe rule of interpreting the meaning of the Apostle next unto the scope and design of his present Discourse,

which he makes manifest in the reiterated proposition of it, and the scope of the places, matter of fact, with its circumstances which he refers unto, and takes his proof from; and they were plainly these and no other. *Abraham* had been long a justified believer, for there were *Thirty years* or thereabout, between the Testimony given thereunto, *Gen. 15.* and the story of Sacrificing his Son related, *Gen. 22.* All this while *he walked with God, and was upright* in a course of holy fruitful Obedience. Yet it pleased God to put his Faith after many others, unto a new, his greatest, his last Trial. And it is the way of God in the Covenant of Grace, to try the Faith of them that believe by such ways as seem meet unto him. Hereby he manifests how *precious* it is (the trial of Faith making it appear to be more *precious than Gold*, *1 Pet. 1. 7.*) and raiseth up Glory unto himself, which is in the nature of Faith to give unto him, *Rom. 4. 20.* And this is the state of the case as proposed by the Apostle; namely, how it may be tried whether the Faith which men profess be genuine precious, more *precious than Gold*, of the right nature with that whereunto the Gospel promise of Salvation is annexed. 2. This trial was made by Works or by *one signal Duty* of Obedience prescribed unto him for that very end and purpose. For *Abraham* was to be proposed as a Pattern unto all that should afterwards believe. And God provided a *signal way* for the trial of his Faith; namely, by an act of Obedience, which was so far from being enjoined by the *moral Law* that it seemed contrary unto it. And if he be proposed unto us as a Pattern of Justification by Works in the sight of God, it must be by such Works as God hath not required in the moral Law, but such as seem to be contrary thereunto. Nor can any man receive any encouragement to expect Justification by Works, by telling him that *Abraham was justified by Works, when he offered up his only Son to God,*  
for

for it will be easie for him to say, that as no such Work was ever performed by him, so none such was ever required of him. But ( 3 ) upon *Abrahams* compliance with the command of God given him in the way of Trial, God himself *ἐπερωτηθῆς* declares *the sincerity of his Faith* and his Justification thereon, or his gracious acceptance of him. This is the whole design of the place which the Apostle traduceth unto his purpose; And it contains the whole of what he was to prove and no more. Plainly it is granted in it that we are not justified by our Works before God, seeing he instances only in a Work performed by a justified believer many years after he was absolutely justified before God. But this is evidently proved hereby; namely, that Faith without Works is *dead*; seeing justifying Faith as is evident in the case of *Abraham* is that, and that alone which brings forth Works of Obedience; For on such a Faith alone, is a man evidenced declared and pronounced to be justified or accepted with God. *Abraham* was not then first justified; He was not then said to be justified, he was declared to be justified, and that by and upon his Works, which contains the whole of what the Apostle intends to prove.

There is therefore no appearance of the least contradiction between this Apostle and *Paul* who professedly asserts, that *Abraham was not justified before God by Works*. For *James* only declares that by the Works which he performed after he was justified, he was manifested and declared so to be. And that this was the whole of his design, he manifests in the next verses, where he declares what he had proved by this instance, ver. 22. *Seeft thou how Faith wrought with his Works, and by Works was Faith made perfect*. Two things he inforceth as proved unto the *conviction* of him, with whom he had to do. ( 1 ) That true Faith will operate by Works, so did *Abrahams*, it was effective in Obedience. ( 2 ) That

it was made perfect by Works, that is evidenced so to be. For *τέλειος, τελειομαι* doth no where in the Scripture signifie the internal, formal perfecting of any thing, but only the external complement or perfection of it, or the manifestation of it. It was compleat as unto its proper effect, when he was first justified; and it was now manifested so to be. See *Mat. 5. 48. Col. 4. 12. 2 Cor. 12. 9.* This faith the Apostle, I have proved in the instance of *Abraham*; namely, that it is Works of Obedience alone that can evince a man to be justified, or to have that Faith whereby he may be so. ( 3 ) He adds in the confirmation of what he had affirmed, ver. 23. *And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness, and he was called the friend of God.*

Two things the Apostle affirms herein. ( 1 ) That the Scripture mentioned was fulfilled. It was so in that Justification by Works which he ascribes unto *Abraham*. But how this Scripture was herein fulfilled, either as unto the time wherein it was spoken, or as unto the thing it self, any otherwise but as that, which is therein asserted, was evidenced and declared, no man can explain, what the Scripture affirmed so long before of *Abraham* was then evidenced to be most true, by the Works which his Faith produced, and so that Scripture was accomplished. For otherwise supposing the distinctions made between *Faith and Works* by himself, and the opposition that he puts between them; adding thereunto the sense given of this place by the Apostle *Paul*, with the direct importance of the words, and nothing can be more contradictory unto his design; ( namely, if he intended to prove *our Justification before God by Works* ) than the quotation of this Testimony. Wherefore this Scripture neither was nor can be otherwise fulfilled by *Abrahams* Justification by Works, but only that by and upon them he was manifested so to be.

( 2 ) He

( 2 ) He adds that hereon he was called the friend of God: So he is, *Iſa.* 41. 8. as also 2 *Chron.* 20. 7. This is of the ſame importance with his being juſtified by Works: For he was not thus called merely as a *juſtified perſon*, but as one who had received ſingular priviledges from God, and answered them by an holy walking before him. Wherefore his being called the *friend of God* was Gods approbation of his Faith and Obedience, which is the Juſtification by Works that the Apoſtle aſſerts.

Hereon he makes a double concluſion ( for the inſtance of *Rahab* being of the ſame nature and ſpoken unto before, I ſhall not inſiſt again upon it ) ( 1 ) As unto his preſent argument, *ver.* 24. ( 2 ) As unto the whole of his deſign, *v.* 26. The firſt is, *that by works a man is juſtified, and not by Faith only*; Ye ſee then; you whom I deſign to convince of the vanity of that imagination, that you are juſtified by a dead Faith, a breathleſs Carcaſs of Faith, a mere aſſent unto the Truth of the Goſpel and profeſſion of it, conſiſtent with all manner of impiety, and wholly deſtitute of good fruits, you may ſee what Faith it is that is required unto Juſtification and Salvation. For *Abraham* was declared to be Righteous, to be juſtified on that Faith which *wrought by Works*, and not at all by ſuch a Faith as you pretend unto. A man is *juſtified by Works* as *Abraham* was when he had offered up his Son to God. That is, what he really was by Faith long before, as the Scripture teſtifieth, was then and thereby evidenced and declared. And therefore let no man ſuppoſe that by the Faith which they boated of, any one is or can be juſtified, ſeeing that whereon *Abraham* was declared to be ſo, was that which evidenced it ſelf by its fruits. ( 2 ) He lays down that great concluſion which he had evinced by his whole Diſputation, and which at firſt he deſigned to confirm, *v.* 26. *For as the body without the ſpirit is dead, ſo Faith without*

*without Works is dead also.* A breathless Carcass and an un-working Faith are alike, as unto all the ends of natural or spiritual life. This was that which the Apostle designed from the beginning to convince vain and barren professors of, which accordingly he hath given sufficient Reason and Testimony for.

---

*F I N I S.*







